65 E 439.

Národní knihovna ČR
Historické fondy
60 E 439/vol.8

Národní knihovna
1003298642

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE

WORKS

OF

HENRY FIELDING.

VOLUME EIGHTH.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE

WORKS

OF

HENRY FIELDING, Esq;

IN

TWELVE VOLUMES.

WITH

The LIFE of the AUTHOR.

VOLUME the EIGHTH.

LONDON:
Printed for JOHN BELL, No 132. Strand
M. DCC. LXXV.

Digitized by Google

THE HISTORY OF TOM JONES. A FOUNDLING.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

OF THE

EIGHTH VOLUME.

BOOK VIII.

Containing about two days.

CHAP. I.

A wonderful long chapter concerning the marvellous; being much the longeſt of all our introductory chapters. Page 1

CHAP. II.

In which the landlady pays a viſit to Mr Jones. 9

CHAP. III.

In which the Surgeon makes his ſecond appearance. 13

CHAP. IV.

In which is introduced one of the pleaſanteſt barbers that was ever recorded in hiſtory, the barber of Bagdad, or he in Don Quixote not excepted. 15

CHAP. V.

A dialogue between Mr Jones and the barber. 20

CHAP. VI.

In which more of the talents of Mr Benjamin will appear, as well as who this extraordinary perſon was. 24

CHAP. VII.

Containing better reaſons than any which have yet appeared for the conduct of Partridge; an apology for the weakneſs of Jones; and ſome farther anecdotes concerning my landlady. 29

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

Jones arrives at Glouceſter, and goes to the Bell; the character of that houſe, and of a pettyſogger, which he there meets with. Page 33

CHAP. IX.

Containing ſeveral dialogues between Jones and Partridge, concerning love, cold, hunger, and other matters; with the lucky and narrow eſcape of Partridge as he was on the very brink of making a fatal diſcovery to his friend. 38

CHAP. X.

In which our travellers meet with a very extraordinary adventure. 44

CHAP. XI.

In which the Man of the Hill begins to relate his hiſtory. 53

CHAP. XII.

In which the Man of the Hill continues his hiſtory. 63

CHAP. XIII.

In which the foregoing ſtory is farther continued. 69

CHAP. XIV.

In which the Man of the Hill concludes his hiſtory. 77

CHAP. XV.

A brief hiſtory of Europe. And a curious diſcourſe between Mr Jones and the Man of the Hill. 84

BOOK IX.

Containing twelve hours.

CHAP. I.

Of thoſe who lawfully may, and of thoſe who may not write ſuch hiſtories as this. 91

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

Containing a very surprising adventure indeed, which Mr Jones met with in his walk with the Man of the Hill. Page 97

CHAP. III.

The arrival of Mr Jones, with his lady, at the inn, with a very full description of the battle of Upton. 101

CHAP. IV.

In which the arrival of a man of war puts a final end to hostilities, and causes the conclusion of a firm and lasting peace between all parties. 107

CHAP. V.

An apology for all heroes who have good stomachs, with a description of a battle of the amorous kind. 112

CHAP. VI.

A friendly conversation in the kitchen, which had a very common, though not very friendly conclusion. 117

CHAP. VII.

Containing a fuller account of Mrs Waters, and by what means she came into that distressful situation from which she was rescued by Jones. 122

BOOK X.

In which the history goes forward about twelve hours.

CHAP. I.

Containing instructions very necessary to be perused by modern critics. 128

CHAP. II.

Containing the arrival of an Irish gentleman, with very extraordinary adventures which ensued at the inn. 131

CHAP

Digitized by Google

CHAP. III.

A dialogue between the landlady and Susan the chamber-maid, proper to be read by all innkeepers and their servants with the arrival, and affable behaviour of a beautiful young lady; which may teach persons of condition how they may acquire the love of the whole world. Page 137

CHAP. IV.

Containing infallible nostrums for procuring universal diseteem and hatred. 143

CHAP. V.

Shewing who the amiable lady, and her unamiable maid were. 146

CHAP. VI.

Containing, among other things, the ingenuity of Partridge, the madness of Jones, and the folly of Fitzpatrick. 151

CHAP. VII.

In which are concluded the adventures that happened at the inn at Upton. 156

CHAP. VIII.

In which the history goes backward. 160

CHAP. IX.

The escape of Sophia. 165

BOOK XI.

Containing about three days.

CHAP. I.

A crust for the critics. 173

CHAP. II.

The adventures which Sophia met with after her leaving Upton. 178

CHAP. III.

A very short chapter, in which however is a sun, a moon, a star, and an angel. 186

CHAP. IV.

The history of Mrs Fitzpatrick. 188

CHAP. V.

In which the history of Mrs Fitzpatrick is continued. 194

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VI.

In which the mistake of the landlord throws Sophia into a dreadful consternation. Page 199

CHAP. VII.

In which Mrs Fitzpatrick concludes her history. 203

CHAP. VIII.

A dreadful alarm in the inn, with the arrival of an unexpected friend of Mrs Fitzpatrick. 212

CHAP. IX.

The morning introduced in some pretty writing. A stage-coach. The civility of chambermaids. The heroic temper of Sophia. Her generosity. The return to it. The departure of the company, and their arrival at London; with some remarks for the use of travellers. 219

CHAP. X.

Containing a hint or two concerning virtue, and a few more concerning suspicion. 223

BOOK XII.

Containing the same individual time with the former.

CHAP. I.

Shewing what is to be deemed plagiarism in a modern Author, and what is to be considered as a lawful prize. 229

CHAP. II.

In which, though the 'squire doth not find his daughter, something is found, which puts an end to his pursuit. 232

CHAP. III.

The departure of Jones from Upton, with what past between him and Partridge on the road. 236

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IV.

The adventure of a beggar man. Page 241

CHAP. V.

Containing more adventures which Mr Jones and his companion met on the road. 245

CHAP. VI.

From which it may be inferred, that the beſt things are liable to be miſunderſtood and miſinterpreted. 250

CHAP. VII.

Containing a remark or two of our own, and many more of the good company aſſembled in the kitchen. 253

CHAP. VIII.

In which Fortune ſeems to have been in a better humour with Jones than we have hitherto ſeen her. 259

CHAP. IX.

Containing little more than a few odd obſervations. 263

CHAP. X.

In which Mr Jones and Mr Dowling drink a bottle together. 267

CHAP. XI.

The diſaſters which befel Jones on his departure for Coventry; with the ſage remarks of Partridge. 273

CHAP. XII.

Relates that Mr Jones continued his journey contrary to the advice of Partridge, with what happened on that occaſion. 275

CHAP. XIII.

A dialogue between Jones and Partridge. 284

CHAP. XIV.

What happened to Mr Jones in his journey from St Albans. 290

BOOK

Digitized by Google

BOOK XIII.

Containing the space of twelve days.

CHAP. I.

An invocation. Page 294

CHAP. II.

What befel Mr Jones on his arrival in London. 297

CHAP. III.

A project of Mrs Fitzpatrick, and her visit to Lady Bellaston. 303

CHAP. IV.

Which consists of visiting. 306

CHAP. V.

An adventure which happened to Mr Jones at his lodgings, with some account of a young gentleman who lodged there, and of the mistress of the house, and her two daughters. 309

CHAP. VI.

What arrived while the company were at breakfast, with some hints concerning the government of daughters. 315

CHAP. VII.

Containing the whole humours of a masquerade. 322

CHAP. VIII.

Containing a scene of distress, which will appear very extraordinary to most of our readers. 328

CHAP. IX.

Which treats of matters of a very different kind from those in the preceding chapter. 333

CHAP. X.

A chapter, which though short may draw tears from some eyes. 337

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XI.

In which the reader will be surprised. Page 340

CHAP. XII.

In which the thirteenth book is concluded. 347

BOOK XIV.

Containing two days.

CHAP. I.

An Essay to prove that an Author will write the better, for having some knowledge of the subject on which he writes. 350

CHAP. II.

Containing letters and other matters which attend amours. 354

CHAP. III.

Containing various matters. 359

CHAP. IV.

Which we hope will be very attentively perused by young people of both sexes. 364

CHAP. V.

A short account of the history of Mrs Miller. 368

CHAP. VI.

Containing a scene which we doubt not will affect all our readers. 373

CHAP. VII.

The interview between Mr Jones and Mr Nightingale. 378

CHAP. VIII.

What passed between Jones and old Mr Nightingale; with the arrival of a person not yet mentioned in this history. 384

CHAP. IX.

Containing strange matters. 391

CHAP. X.

A short chapter, which concludes the book. 394

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

OF THE

SEVENTH VOLUME.

BOOK I.

Containing as much of the birth of the Foundling as is neceſſary or proper to acquaint the reader with in the beginning of this hiſtory.

CHAP. I.

The introduction to the work, or bill of fare to the feaſt. Page 1

CHAP. II.

A ſhort deſcription of Squire Allworthy, and a fuller account of Miſs Bridget Allworthy his ſiſter. 4

CHAP. III.

An odd accident which befel Mr Allworthy, at his return home. The decent behaviour of Mrs Deborah Wilkins, with ſome proper animadverſions on baſtards. 6

CHAP. IV.

The reader's neck brought into danger by a deſcription; his eſcape, and the great condeſcenſion of Miſs Bridget Allworthy. 9

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V.

Containing a few common matters, with a very uncommon observation upon them. Page 13

CHAP. VI.

Mrs Deborah is introduced into the parish with a simile. A short account of Jenny Jones, with the difficulties and discouragements which may attend young women in the pursuit of learning. 14

CHAP. VII.

Containing such grave matter, that the reader cannot laugh once through the whole chapter, unless peradventure he should laugh at the author. 19

CHAP. VIII.

A dialogue between Mesdames Bridget and Deborah: containing more amusement, but less instruction, than the former. 23

CHAP. IX.

Containing matters which will surprise the reader. 26

CHAP. X.

The hospitality of Allworthy; with a short sketch of the characters of two brothers, a doctor and a captain, who were entertained by that gentleman. 29

CHAP. XI.

Containing many rules, and some examples, concerning falling in love: descriptions of beauty, and other more prudential inducements to matrimony. 33

CHAP. XII.

Containing what the reader may perhaps expect to find in it. 37

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XIII.

Which concludes the first book; with an instance of ingratitude, which, we hope, will appear unnatural. Page 41

BOOK II.

Containing scenes of matrimonial felicity in different degrees of life; and various other transactions during the first two years after the marriage between Captain Blifil and Miss Bridget Allworthy.

CHAP. I.

Shewing what kind of a history this is; what it is like, and what it is not like. 44

CHAP. II.

Religious cautions against shewing too much favour to bastards; and a great discovery made by Mrs Deborah Wilkins. 46

CHAP. III.

The description of a domestic government founded upon rules directly contrary to those of Aristotle. 49

CHAP. IV.

Containing one of the most bloody battles, or rather duels, that were ever recorded in domestic history. 53

CHAP. V.

Containing much matter to exercise the judgment and reflection of the reader. 58

CHAP. VI.

The trial of Partridge, the schoolmaster, for incontinency; the evidence of his wife; a short reflection on the wisdom of our law; with other grave matters, which those will like best who understand them most. 64

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

A short sketch of that felicity which prudent couples may extract from hatred: with a short apology for those people who overlook imperfections in their friends. Page 70

CHAP. VIII.

A receipt to regain the lost affections of a wife, which hath never been known to fail in the most desperate cases. 75

CHAP. IX.

A proof of the infallibility of the foregoing receipt, in the lamentations of the widow, with other suitable decorations of death, such as physicians, &c. and an epitaph in the true stile. 77

BOOK III.

Containing the most memorable transactions which passed in the family of Mr Allworthy, from the time when Tommy Jones arrived at the age of fourteen, till he attained the age of nineteen. In this book the reader may pick up some hints concerning the education of children.

CHAP. I.

Containing little or nothing. 84

CHAP. II.

The hero of this great history appears with very bad omens. A little tale of so LOW *a kind, that some may think it not worth their notice. A word or two concerning a 'squire, and more relating to a gamekeeper, and a schoolmaster.* 85

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. III.

The character of Mr Square the philosopher, and of Mr Thwackum the divine; with a dispute concerning—— Page 91

CHAP. IV.

Containing a necessary apology for the Author; and a childish incident, which perhaps requires an apology likewise. 94

CHAP. V.

The opinions of the divine and the philosopher concerning the two boys; with some reasons for their opinions, and other matters. 97

CHAP. VI.

Containing a better reason still for the before-mentioned opinions. 102

CHAP. VII.

In which the Author himself makes his appearance on the stage. 106

CHAP. VIII.

A childish incident, in which, however, is seen a good-natured disposition in Tom Jones. 108

CHAP. IX.

Containing an incident of a more heinous kind, with the comments of Thwackum and Square. 111

CHAP. X.

In which Master Blifil and Jones appear in different lights. 114

Digitized by Google

BOOK IV.

Containing the time of a year.

CHAP. I.

Containing five pages of paper. Page 117

CHAP. II.

A short hint of what we can do in the sublime, and a description of Miss Sophia Western. 120

CHAP. III.

Wherein the history goes back to commemorate a trifling incident that happened some years since; but which, trifling as it was, had some future consequences. 124

CHAP. IV.

Containing such very deep and grave matters, that some readers, perhaps, may not relish it. 127

CHAP. V.

Containing matter accommodated to every taste. 130

CHAP. VI.

An apology for the insensibility of Mr Jones, to all the charms of the lovely Sophia; in which possibly we may, in a considerable degree, lower his character in the estimation of those men of wit and gallantry, who approve the heroes in most of our modern comedies. 136

CHAP. VII.

Being the shortest chapter in this book. 141

CHAP. VIII.

A battle sung by the muse in the Homerican stile, and which none but the classical reader can taste. 142

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IX.

Containing matter of no very peaceable colour. Page 148

CHAP. X.

A story told by Mr Supple the curate. The penetration of 'squire Western. His great love for his daughter, and the return to it by her. 151

CHAP. XI.

The narrow escape of Molly Seagrim, with some observations, for which we have been forced to dive pretty deep into nature. 156

CHAP. XII.

Containing much clearer matters; but which flowed from the same fountain with those in the preceding chapter. 161

CHAP. XIII.

A dreadful accident which befel Sophia. The gallant behaviour of Jones, and the more dreadful consequence of that behaviour to the young lady; with a short digression in favour of the female sex. 165

CHAP. XIV.

The arrival of a surgeon. His operations, and a long dialogue between Sophia and her maid. 168

BOOK V.

Containing a portion of time, somewhat longer than half a year.

CHAP. I.

Of THE SERIOUS *in writing, and for what purpose it is introduced.* 175

CHAP

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

In which Mr Jones receives many friendly visits during his confinement; with some fine touches of the passion of love, scarce visible to the naked eye. Page 180

CHAP. III.

Which all who have no heart, will think to contain much ado about nothing. 185

CHAP. IV.

A little chapter, in which is contained a little incident. 188

CHAP. V.

A very long chapter, containing a very great incident. 191

CHAP. VI.

By comparing which with the former, the reader may possibly correct some abuse which he hath formerly been guilty of in the application of the word LOVE. 200

CHAP. VII.

In which Mr Allworthy appears on a sick-bed. 206

CHAP. VIII.

Containing matter rather natural than pleasing. 212

CHAP. IX.

Which, among other things, may serve as a comment on that saying of Æschines, *that* DRUNKENNESS SHEWS THE MIND OF A MAN, AS A MIRROR REFLECTS HIS PERSON. 217

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. X.

Shewing the truth of many observations of Ovid, *and of other more grave writers, who have proved, beyond contradiction, that wine is often the forerunner of incontinency.* Page 222

CHAP. XI.

In which a simile of Mr Pope's period of a mile, introduces as bloody a battle as can possibly be fought, without the assistance of steel or cold iron. 226

CHAP. XII.

In which is seen a more moving spectacle, than all the blood in the bodies of Thwackum and Blifil, and of twenty other such, is capable of producing. 230

BOOK VI.

Containing about three weeks.

CHAP. I.

Of love. 235

CHAP. II.

The character of Mrs Western. Her great learning and knowledge of the world, and an instance of the deep penetration which she derived from those advantages. 238

CHAP. III.

Containing two defiances to the Critics. 245

CHAP. IV.

Containing sundry curious matters. 249

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V.

In which is related what passed between Sophia and her aunt. Page 251

CHAP. VI.

Containing a dialogue between Sophia and Mrs Honour, which may a little relieve those tender affections which the foregoing scene may have raised in the mind of a good-natured reader. 257

CHAP. VII.

A picture of formal courtship in miniature, as it always ought to be drawn, and a scene of a tenderer kind painted at full length. 260

CHAP. VIII.

The meeting between Jones and Sophia. 265

CHAP. IX.

Being of a much more tempestuous kind than the former. 267

CHAP. X.

In which Mr Western visits Mr Allworthy. 272

CHAP. XI.

A short chapter; but which contains sufficient matter to affect the good-natured reader. 277

CHAP. XII.

Containing love-letters, &c. 279

CHAP. XIII.

The behaviour of Sophia on the present occasion; which none of her sex will blame, who are capable of behaving in the same manner. And the discussion of a knotty point in the court of conscience. 284

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XIV.

A short chapter, containing a short dialogue between 'Squire Western and his sister. Page 288

BOOK VII.

Containing three days.

CHAP. I.

A comparison between the World and the Stage. 291

CHAP. II.

Containing a conversation which Mr Jones had with himself. 295

CHAP. III.

Containing several dialogues. 297

CHAP. IV.

A picture of a country Gentlewoman taken from the life. 303

CHAP. V.

The generous behaviour of Sophia *towards her aunt.* 306

CHAP. VI.

Containing great variety of matter. 309

CHAP. VII.

A strange resolution of Sophia, and a more strange stratagem of Mrs Honour. 315

CHAP. VIII.

Containing scenes of altercation, of no very uncommon kind. 320

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IX.

The wise demeanour of Mr Western *in the character of a magistrate. A hint to justices of peace, concerning the necessary qualifications of a clerk; with extraordinary instances of paternal madness, and filial affection.* 324

CHAP. X.

Containing several matters natural enough, perhaps, but Low. 328

CHAP. XI.

The adventure of a company of soldiers. 334

CHAP. XII.

The adventure of a company of officers. 338

CHAP. XIII.

Containing the great address of the landlady; the great learning of a surgeon, and the solid skill in casuistry of the worthy lieutenant. 346

CHAP. XIV.

A most dreadful chapter indeed; and which few readers ought to venture upon in an evening, especially when alone. 352

CHAP. XV.

The conclusion of the foregoing adventure. 359

THE

Digitized by Google

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK VIII.

Containing above two days.

CHAP. I.

A wonderful long chapter concerning the marvellous; being much the longeſt of all our introductory chapters.

AS we are now entering upon a book, in which the courſe of our hiſtory will oblige us to relate ſome matters of a more ſtrange and ſurpriſing kind than any which have hitherto occurred, it may not be amiſs in the prolegomenous, or introductory chapter, to ſay ſomething of that ſpecies of writing which is called the *marvellous*. To this we ſhall, as well for the ſake of ourſelves, as of others, endeavour to ſet ſome certain bounds; and indeed nothing can be more neceſſary, as critics * of different complections are here apt to run into very different extremes; for while ſome are, with M. Dacier, ready to allow, that the ſame thing which is impoſſible may be yet probable †, others have ſo little hiſtoric or poetic faith, that they

* By this word here, and in moſt other parts of our work, we mean every reader in the world.

† It was happy for M. Dacier that he was not an Iriſhman.

Digitized by Google

believe nothing to be either possible or probable, the like to which hath not occurred to their own observation.

First then, I think it may very reasonably be required of every writer, that he keeps within the bounds of possibility; and still remembers that what it is not possible for man to perform, it is scarce possible for man to believe he did perform. This conviction, perhaps, gave birth to many stories of the ancient Heathen deities (for most of them are of poetical original.) The poet, being desirous to indulge a wanton and extravagant imagination, took refuge in that power, of the extent of which his readers were no judges, or rather which they imagined to be infinite, and consequently they could not be shocked at any prodigies related of it. This hath been strongly urged in defence of Homer's miracles; and it is, perhaps, a defence; not, as Mr Pope would have it, because Ulysses told a set of foolish lyes to the Phæacians, who were a very dull nation; but because the poet himself wrote to heathens, to whom poetical fables were articles of faith. For my own part, I must confess, so compassionate is my temper, I wish Polypheme had confined himself to his milk diet, and preserved his eye; nor could Ulysses be much more concerned than myself, when his companions were turned into swine by Circe, who shewed, I think, afterwards, too much regard for man's flesh to be supposed capable of converting it into bacon. I wish, likewise, with all my heart, that Homer could have known the rule prescribed by Horace, to introduce supernatural agents as seldom as possible. We should not then have seen his gods coming on trivial errands, and often behaving themselves so as not only to forfeit all title to respect, but to become the object of scorn and derision. A conduct which must have shocked the credulity of a pious and sagacious heathen; and which never could have been defended, unless by agreeing with a supposition to which I have been sometimes almost inclined, that this most glorious poet, as he certainly was, had an intent to burlesque the superstitious faith of his own age and country.

But

Digitized by Google

But I have rested too long on a doctrine which can be of no use to a Christian writer: for as he cannot introduce into his works any of that heavenly host which make a part of his creed, so is it horrid puerility to search the heathen theology for any of those deities who have been long since dethroned from their immortality. Lord Shaftesbury observes, that nothing is more cold than the invocation of a muse by a modern; he might have added, that nothing can be more absurd. A modern may with much more elegance invoke a ballad, as some have thought Homer did, or a mug of ale with the author of Hudibras; which latter may perhaps have inspired much more poetry as well as prose, than all the liquors of Hippocrene or Helicon.

The only supernatural agents which can in any manner be allowed to us moderns, are ghosts; but of these I would advise an author to be extremely sparing. These are indeed, like arsenic, and other dangerous drugs in physic, to be used with the utmost caution: nor would I advise the introduction of them at all in those works, or by those authors to which, or to whom a horse-laugh in the reader would be any great prejudice or mortification.

As for elves and fairies, and other such mummery, I purposely omit the mention of them, as I should be very unwilling to confine within any bounds those surprising imaginations, for whose vast capacity the limits of human nature are too narrow; whose works are to be considered as a new creation; and who have consequently just right to do what they will with their own.

Man therefore is the highest subject (unless on very extraordinary occasions indeed) which presents itself to the pen of our historian, or of our poet; and in relating his actions, great care is to be taken, that we do not exceed the capacity of the agent we describe.

Nor is possibility alone sufficient to justify us, we must keep likewise within the rules of probability. It is, I think, the opinion of Aristotle; or if not, it is the opinion of some wise man, whose authority will be as weighty, when it is as old; 'That it is no ex-

Digitized by Google

'cuſe for a poet who relates what is incredible, that 'the thing related is really matter of fact.' This may perhaps be allowed true with regard to poetry, but it may be thought impracticable to extend it to the hiſtorian: for he is obliged to record matters as he finds them; though they may be of ſo extraordinary a nature, as will require no ſmall degree of hiſtorical faith to ſwallow them. Such was the ſucceſsleſs armament of Xerxes, deſcribed by Herodotus, or the ſucceſsful expedition of Alexander related by Arrian. Such, of later years, was the victory of Agincourt obtained by Harry the Fifth, or that of Narva won by Charles the Twelfth of Sweden. All which inſtances, the more we reflect on them, appear ſtill the more aſtoniſhing.

Such facts, however, as they occur in the thread of the ſtory; nay, indeed, as they conſtitute the eſſential parts of it, the hiſtorian is not only juſtifiable in recording as they really happened, but indeed would be unpardonable ſhould he omit or alter them. But there are other facts not of ſuch conſequence nor ſo neceſſary, which, though ever ſo well atteſted, may nevertheleſs be ſacrificed to oblivion in complaiſance to the ſcepticiſm of a reader. Such is that memorable ſtory of the ghoſt of George Villers, which might with more propriety have been made a preſent of to Dr Drelincourt, to have kept the ghoſt of Mrs Veale company, at the head of his diſcourſe upon death, than have been introduced into ſo ſolemn a work as the hiſtory of the rebellion.

To ſay the truth, if the hiſtorian will confine himſelf to what really happened, and utterly reject any circumſtance, which, though never ſo well atteſted, he muſt be well aſſured is falſe, he will ſometimes fall into the marvellous, but never into the incredible. He will often raiſe the wonder and ſurprize of his reader, but never that incredulous hatred mentioned by Horace. It is by falling into fiction therefore, that we generally offend againſt this rule, of deſerting probability, which the hiſtorian ſeldom if ever quits, till he forſakes his character, and commences a writer of romance. In this, however, thoſe hiſtorians who relate public tranſactions have the advantage of us who confine

Digitized by Google

fine ourſelves to ſcenes of private life. The credit of the former is by common notoriety ſupported for a long time; and public records, with the concurrent teſtimony of many authors, bear evidence to their truth in future ages. Thus a Trajan and an Antoninus, a Nero and a Caligula, have all met with the belief of poſterity; and no one doubts but that men ſo very good, and ſo very bad, were once the maſters of mankind.

But we who deal in private character, who ſearch into the moſt retired receſſes, and draw forth examples of virtue and vice, from holes and corners of the world, are in a more dangerous ſituation. As we have no public notoriety, no concurrent teſtimony, no records to ſupport and corroborate what we deliver, it becomes us to keep within the limits not only of poſſibility, but of probability too; and this more eſpecially in painting what is greatly good and amiable. Knavery and folly, though never ſo exorbitant, will more eaſily meet with aſſent; for ill-nature adds great ſupport and ſtrength to faith.

Thus we may, perhaps, with little danger, relate the hiſtory of Fiſher; who having long owed his bread to the generoſity of Mr Derby, and having one morning received a conſiderable bounty from his hands, yet in order to poſſeſs himſelf of what remained in his friend's ſcrutore, concealed himſelf in a public office of the Temple, through which there was a paſſage into Mr Derby's chambers. Here he overheard Mr Derby for many hours ſolacing himſelf at an entertainment which he that evening gave his friends, and to which Fiſher had been invited. During all this time no tender, no grateful reflections aroſe to reſtrain his purpoſe; but when the poor gentlemen had let his company out through the office, Fiſher came ſuddenly from his lurking place, and walking ſoftly behind his friend into his chamber, diſcharged a piſtol-ball into his head. This may be believed, when the bones of Fiſher are as rotten as his heart. Nay, perhaps, it will be credited that the villain went two days afterwards with ſome young ladies to the play of Hamlet; and with an unaltered countenance heard one of the ladies,

who little ſuſpected how near ſhe was to the perſon, cry out, 'Good God! if the man that murdered Mr Derby was now preſent!' Manifeſting in this a more feared and callous conſcience than even Nero himſelf; of whom we are told by Suetonius, 'that the conſciouſneſs of his guilt, after the death of his mother, became immediately intolerable, and ſo continued; nor could all the congratulations of the ſoldiers, of the ſenate, and the people, allay the horrors of his conſcience.'

But now, on the other hand, ſhould I tell my reader, that I had known a man whoſe penetrating genius had enabled him to raiſe a large fortune in a way where no beginning was chalked out to him: that he had done this with the moſt perfect preſervation of his integrity, and not only without the leaſt injuſtice or injury to any one individual perſon, but with the higheſt advantage to trade, and a vaſt increaſe of the public revenue: that he had expended one part of the income of this fortune in diſcovering a taſte ſuperior to moſt, by works where the higheſt dignity was united with the pureſt ſimplicity, and another part in diſplaying a degree of goodneſs ſuperior to all men, by acts of charity to objects whoſe only recommendations were their merits, or their wants: that he was moſt induſtrious in ſearching after merit in diſtreſs, moſt eager to relieve it, and then as careful, (perhaps too careful) to conceal what he had done: that his houſe, his furniture, his gardens, his table, his private hoſpitality, and his public beneficence, all denoted the mind from which they flowed, and were all intrinſically rich and noble, without tinſel, or external oſtentation; that he filled every relation in life with the moſt adequate virtue: that he was moſt piouſly religious to his Creator, moſt zealouſly loyal to his ſovereign; a moſt tender huſband to his wife, a kind relation, a munificent patron, a warm and firm friend, a knowing and a chearful companion, indulgent to his ſervants, hoſpitable to his neighbours, charitable to the poor, and benevolent to all mankind. Should I add to theſe the epithets of wiſe, brave, elegant, and indeed every other amiable epithet in our language, I might ſurely ſay,

—*Quis*

Digitized by Google

—Quis credit? nemo Hercule! nemo: vel duo, vel nemo.

And yet I know a man who is all I have here described. But a single instance (and I really know not such another) is not sufficient to justify us, while we are writing to thousands who never heard of the person, nor of any thing like him. Such *rara aves* should be remitted to the epitaph writer, or to some poet, who may condescend to hitch him in a distich, or to slide him into rhime with an air of careleſſneſs and neglect, without giving any offence to the reader.

In the last place, the actions should be such as may not only be within the compass of human agency, and which human agents may probably be supposed to do; but they should be likely for the very actors and characters themselves to have performed: for what may be only wonderful and surprising in one man, may become improbable, or indeed impossible, when related of another.

This last requisite is what the dramatic critics call conservation of character; and it requires a very extraordinary degree of judgment, and a most exact knowledge of human nature.

It is admirably remarked by a most excellent writer, that zeal can no more hurry a man to act in direct opposition to itself, than a rapid stream can carry a boat against its own current. I will venture to say, that for a man to act in direct contradiction to the dictates of his nature, is, if not impossible, as improbable and as miraculous as any thing which can well be conceived. Should the best parts of the story of M. Antoninus be ascribed to Nero, or should the worst incidents of Nero's life be imputed to Antoninus, what would be more shocking to belief than either instance! whereas both these being related of their proper agent, constitute the truly marvellous.

Our modern authors of comedy have fallen almost universally into the error here hinted at: their heroes generally are notorious rogues, and their heroines abandoned jades, during the first four acts; but in the fifth, the former become very worthy gentlemen, and the

Digitized by Google

the latter, women of virtue and discretion: nor is the writer often so kind as to give himself the least trouble, to reconcile or account for this monstrous change and incongruity. There is, indeed, no other reason to be assigned for it, than because the play is drawing to a conclusion; as if it was no less natural in a rogue to repent in the last act of a play, than in the last of his life; which we perceive to be generally the case at Tyburn, a place which might, indeed, close the scene of some comedies with much propriety, as the heroes in these are most commonly eminent for those very talents which not only bring men to the gallows, but enable them to make an heroic figure when they are there.

Within these few restrictions, I think, every writer may be permitted to deal as much in the wonderful as he pleases; nay, if he thus keeps within the rules of credibility, the more he can surprize the reader, the more he will engage his attention, and the more he will charm him. As a genius of the highest rank observes in his 5th chapter of the Bathos, 'The great 'art of all poetry is to mix poetry with fiction, in or-'der to join the credible with the surprising.'

For though every good author will confine himself within the bounds of probability, it is by no means necessary that his characters, or his incidents, should be trite, common, or vulgar; such as happen in every street, or in every house, or which may be met with in the home articles of a news-paper. Nor must he be inhibited from shewing many persons and things, which may possibly have never fallen within the knowledge of great part of his readers. If the writer strictly observes the rules above-mentioned, he hath discharged his part; and is then entitled to some faith from his reader, who is indeed guilty of critical infidelity if he disbelieves him. For want of a portion of such faith, I remember the character of a young lady of quality, which was condemned on the stage for being unnatural, by the unanimous voice of a very large assembly of clerks and apprentices; though it had the previous suffrages of many ladies of the first

Digitized by Google

first rank; one of whom, very eminent for her understanding, declared it was the picture of half the young people of her acquaintance.

CHAP. II.

In which the landlady pays a visit to Mr Jones.

WHEN Jones had taken leave of his friend the lieutenant, he endeavoured to close his eyes, but all in vain: his spirits were too lively and wakeful to be lulled to sleep. So having amused, or rather tormented himself, with the thoughts of his Sophia, till it was open day light, he called for some tea; upon which occasion my landlady herself vouchsafed to pay him a visit.

This was indeed the first time she had seen him, or at least had taken any notice of him; but as the lieutenant had assured her that he was certainly some young gentleman of fashion, she now determined to shew him all the respect in her power; for, to speak truly, this was one of those houses where gentlemen, to use the language of advertisements, meet with civil treatment for their money.

She had no sooner begun to make his tea, than she likewise began to discourse. 'La! Sir,' said she, 'I think it is great pity that such a pretty young 'gentleman should undervalue himself so as to go 'about with these soldier fellows. They call themselves gentlemen, I warrant you; but, as my first 'husband used to say, they should remember it is we 'that pay them. And to be sure it is very hard upon 'us to be obliged to pay them, and to keep 'em too, 'as we publicans are. I had twenty of 'em last night, 'besides officers; nay, for matter o'that, I had rather have the soldiers than officers: for nothing is 'ever good enough for those sparks; and I am sure 'if you was to see the bills, la, Sir, it is nothing. 'I have had less trouble, I warrant you, with a good 'squire's family, where we take forty or fifty shillings of a night, besides horses. And yet I warrants me, there is narrow a one of all those officer 'fellows,

Digitized by Google

'fellows, but looks upon himſelf to be as good as 'arrow a 'ſquire of 500 l. a year. To be ſure it doth 'me good to hear their men run about after 'um, 'crying your honour and your honour. Marry come 'up with ſuch honour, and an ordinary at a ſhilling 'a head. Then there's ſuch ſwearing among 'um, 'to be ſure, it frightens me out of my wits; I thinks 'nothing can ever proſper with ſuch wicked people. 'And here one of 'um has uſed you in ſo barbarous a 'manner. I thought indeed how well the reſt would 'ſecure him; they all hang together: for if you had 'been in danger of death, which I am glad to ſee 'you are not, it would have been all as one to ſuch 'wicked people. They would have let the murderer 'go. Laud have mercy upon 'um! I would not have 'ſuch a ſin to anſwer for, for the whole world. But 'though you are likely, with the bleſſing, to recover, 'there is law for him yet; and if you will employ law-'yer Small, I dareſt be ſworn he'll make the fellow 'fly the country for him; though perhaps he'll have 'fled the country before; for it is here to-day and 'gone to-morrow with ſuch chaps. I hope, however, 'you will learn more wit for the future, and return 'back to your friends; I warrant they are all miſer-'able for your loſs; and if they was but to know what 'had happened. La, my ſeeming! I would not for 'the world they ſhould. Come, come, we know 'very well what all the matter is; but if one won't, 'another will; ſo pretty a gentlemam need never 'want a lady. I am ſure, if I was as you, I would 'ſee the fineſt ſhe that ever wore a head hanged, be-'fore I would go for a ſoldier for her.—Nay, don't 'bluſh ſo.; (for indeed he did to a violent degree;) 'why, you thought, Sir, I knew nothing of the 'matter, I warrant you, about Madam Sophia.' 'How,' ſays Jones, ſtarting up, 'do you know my 'Sophia?' 'Do I! ay marry,' cries the landlady, 'many's the time hath ſhe lain in this houſe.' 'With 'her aunt, I ſuppoſe,' ſays Jones—'Why, there it 'is now,' cries the landlady. 'Ay, ay, ay, I know 'the old lady very well. And a ſweet young creature

'is

Digitized by Google

'is Madam Sophia, that's the truth on't.' 'A sweet 'creature!' cries Jones, 'O heavens!'

'Angels are painted fair to look like her.
'There's in her all that we believe of Heaven,
'Amazing brightneſs, purity, and truth,
'Eternal joy, and everlaſting love.

'And could I ever have imagined that you had 'known my Sophia!' 'I wiſh,' ſays the landlady, 'you knew half ſo much of her. What would you 'have given to have ſat by her bed ſide? What a 'delicious neck ſhe hath! Her lovely limbs have 'ſtretched themſelves in that very bed you now ly 'in.' 'Here!' cries Jones, 'hath Sophia ever laid 'here?——' Ay, ay, here: there; in that very bed,' ſays the landlady, 'where I wiſh you had her this 'moment; and ſhe may wiſh ſo too, for any thing I 'know to the contrary: for ſhe hath mentioned your 'name to me.'——'Ha,' cries he, 'did ſhe ever men-'tion her poor Jones?—You flatter me now; I can 'never believe ſo much.' 'Why then,' anſwered ſhe, 'as I hope to be ſaved, and may the devil fetch me, 'if I ſpeak a ſyllable more than the truth. I have 'heard her mention Mr Jones; but in a civil and 'modeſt way, I confeſs; yet I could perceive ſhe 'thought a great deal more than ſhe ſaid.' 'O my 'dear woman,' cries Jones, 'her thoughts of me I 'ſhall never be worthy of. O ſhe is all gentleneſs, 'kindneſs, goodneſs. Why was ſuch a raſcal as I 'born, ever to give her ſoft boſom a moment's un-'eaſineſs? why am I curſed? I, who would undergo 'all the plagues and miſeries which any dæmon ever 'invented for mankind, to procure her any good; 'nay, torture itſelf could not be miſery to me, did 'I but know that ſhe was happy.' 'Why, look you 'there now,' ſays the landlady, 'I told her you 'was a conſtant lover.' 'But pray, Madam, tell me 'when or where you knew any thing of me; for 'I never was here before, nor do I remember ever 'to have ſeen you.' 'Nor is it poſſible you ſhould,' anſwered

Digitized by Google

answered she; 'for you was a little thing when I 'had you in my lap at the 'squire's.'——'How, 'the 'squire's,' says Jones, 'what, do you know that 'great and good Mr Allworthy then?' 'Yes, 'marry do I,' says she; 'who in the country doth 'not?'——'The fame of his goodness indeed,' answered Jones, 'must have extended farther than 'this; but Heaven only can know him, can know 'that benevolence which it copied from itself, and 'sent upon earth as its own pattern. Mankind are 'as ignorant of such divine goodness, as they are 'unworthy of it; but none so unworthy of it as my-'self. I who was raised by him to such a height; 'taken in, as you must well know, a poor base-'born child, adopted by him, and treated as his own 'son, to dare by my follies to disoblige him, to 'draw his vengeance upon me! Yes, I deserve it 'all: for I will never be so ungrateful as ever to 'think he hath done an act of injustice by me. No, 'I deserve to be turned out of doors as I am. And 'now, Madam,' says he, 'I believe you will not blame 'me for turning soldier, especially with such a fortune 'as this in my pocket.' At which words he shook a purse, which had but very little in it, and which still appeared to the landlady to have less.

My good landlady was (according to vulgar phrase) struck all of a heap by this relation. She answered coldly, 'That to be sure people were the best judges 'what was most proper for their circumstances—— 'But hark,' says she, 'I think I hear somebody 'call. Coming! Coming! the devil's in all our volk, 'nobody hath any ears I must go down stairs; if 'you want any more breakfast, the maid will come 'up. Coming!' At which words, without taking any leave, she flung out of the room. For the lower sort of people are very tenacious of respect; and though they are contented to give this gratis to persons of quality, yet they never confer it on those of their own order, without taking care to be well paid for their pains.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. III.

In which the Surgeon makes his second appearance.

BEFORE we proceed any farther, that the reader may not be mistaken in imagining the landlady knew more than she did, nor surprised that she knew so much, it may be necessary to inform him, that the lieutenant had acquainted her that the name of Sophia had been the occasion of the quarrel; and as for the rest of her knowledge, the sagacious reader will observe how she came by it in the preceding scene. Great curiosity was indeed mixed with her virtues; and she never willingly suffered any one to depart from her house without enquiring as much as possible into their names, families, and fortunes.

She was no sooner gone than Jones, instead of animadverting on her behaviour, reflected that he was in the same bed, which he was informed had held his dear Sophia. This occasioned a thousand fond and tender thoughts, which we could dwell longer upon did we not consider that such kind of lovers will make a very inconsiderable part of our readers. In this situation the surgeon found him, when he came to dress his wound. The doctor, perceiving, upon examination, that his pulse was disordered, and hearing that he had not slept, declared that he was in great danger: for he apprehended a fever was coming on; which he would have prevented by bleeding, but Jones would not submit, declaring he would lose no more blood; and, 'Doctor,' says he, 'if you will be 'so kind only to dress my head, I have no doubt of 'being well in a day or two.'

'I wish,' answered the surgeon, 'I could assure 'your being well in a month or two. Well indeed! 'No, no, people are not so soon well of such contusi-'ons; but, Sir, I am not at this time of day to be 'instructed in my operations by a patient, and I in-'sist on making a revulsion before I dress you.'

Jones persisted obstinately in his refusal, and the doctor at last yielded; telling him at the same time,

Digitized by Google

that he would not be answerable for the ill consequence, and hoped he would do him the justice to acknowledge that he had given him a contrary advice; which the patient promised he would.

The doctor retired into the kitchen, where, addressing himself to the landlady, he complained bitterly of the undutiful behaviour of his patient, who would not be blooded, though he was in a fever.

'It is an eating fever then,' says the landlady: 'for 'he hath devoured two swinging buttered toasts this 'morning for breakfast.'

'Very likely,' says the doctor; 'I have known 'people eat in a fever; and it is very easily account-'ed for; because the acidity occasioned by the febrile 'matter, may stimulate the nerves of the diaphragm, 'and thereby occasion a craving, which will not be 'easily distinguishable from a natural appetite; but 'the aliment will not be concreted, nor assimilated 'into chyle, and so will corrode the vascular orifices, 'and thus will aggravate the febrific symptoms. In-'deed I think the gentleman in a very dangerous 'way, and if he is not blooded, I am afraid will 'die.'

'Every man must die some time or other,' answered the good woman; 'it is no business of mine. I 'hope, doctor, you would not have me hold him 'while you bleed him.——But, harkee, a word in 'your ear; I would advise you, before you proceed 'too far, to take care who is to be your pay-master.

'Paymaster?' said the doctor, staring, 'why, I've 'a gentleman under my hands, have I not?'

I imagined so as well as you,' said the landlady; 'but, as my first husband used to say, every thing is 'not what it looks to be. He is an arrant scrub, I 'assure you. However, take no notice that I men-'tioned any thing to you of the matter; but I think 'people in business oft always to let one another 'know such things.'

'And have I suffered such a fellow as this,' cries the doctor, in a passion, 'to instruct me? Shall I 'hear my practice insulted by one who will not pay 'me! I am glad I have made this discovery in time.

'I

Digitized by Google

'I will see now whether he will be blooded or no.' He then immediately went up stairs, and flinging open the door of the chamber with much violence, awaked poor Jones from a very sound nap, into which he was fallen, and what was still worse, from a delicious dream concerning Sophia.

'Will you be blooded or no?' cries the doctor in a rage. 'I have told you my resolution already,' answered Jones, 'and I wish with all my heart you 'had taken my answer: for you have awaked me out 'of the sweetest sleep which I ever had in my life.'

'Ay, ay,' cries the doctor, 'many a man hath 'dosed away his life. Sleep is not always good, no 'more than food; but remember I demand of you 'for the last time, will you be blooded?' 'I answer you for the last time,' said Jones, 'I will not.' 'Then I wash my hands of you,' cries the doctor: 'and I desire you to pay me for the trouble I have 'had already. Two journies at 5 s. each, two dressings at 5 s. more, and half-a-crown for phlebotomy.' 'I hope,' said Jones, 'you don't intend to 'leave me in this condition.' 'Indeed but I shall,' said the other. Then,' said Jones, 'you have used 'me rascally, and I will not pay you a farthing.' 'Very well,' cries the doctor, 'the first loss is the 'best. What a pox did my landlady mean by send-'ing for me to such vagabonds?' At which words he flung out of the room, and his patient turning himself about soon recovered his sleep; but his dream was unfortunately gone.

CHAP. IV.

In which is introduced one of the pleasantest barbers that was ever recorded in history, the barber of Bagdad, or he in Don Quixote not excepted.

THE clock had now struck five, when Jones awaked from a nap of seven hours, so much refreshed, and in such perfect health and spirits, that he resolved to get up and dress himself: for which purpose he unlocked his portmanteau, and took our

Digitized by Google

clean linen, and a ſuit of cloaths; but firſt he ſlipt on a frock, and went down into the kitchen to beſpeak ſomething that might pacify certain tumults he found riſing within his ſtomach.

Meeting the landlady, he accoſted her with great civility, and aſked 'what he could have for dinner.' 'For dinner!' ſays ſhe, 'it is an odd time of day 'to think about dinner. There is nothing dreſt in 'the houſe, and the fire is almoſt out.' 'Well, 'but,' ſays he, 'I muſt have ſomething to eat, and 'it is almoſt indifferent to me what: for to tell you 'the truth, I was never more hungry in my life.' 'Then,' ſays ſhe, 'I believe there is a piece of cold 'buttock and carrot, which will fit you.'—'Nothing 'better,' anſwered Jones, 'but I ſhould be obliged 'to you if you would let it be fryed.' To which the landlady conſented, and ſaid ſmiling, 'ſhe was 'glad to ſee him ſo well recovered:' for the ſweetneſs of our hero's temper was almoſt irreſiſtible; beſides, ſhe was really no ill humoured woman at the bottom; but ſhe loved money ſo much, that ſhe hated every thing which had the ſemblance of poverty.

Jones now returned in order to dreſs himſelf, while his dinner was preparing, and was, according to his orders, attended by the barber.

This barber, who went by the name of little Benjamin, was a fellow of great oddity and humour, which had frequently led him into ſmall inconveniencies, ſuch as ſlaps on the face, kicks in the breech, broken bones, &c. For every one doth not underſtand a jeſt; and thoſe who do, are often diſpleaſed with being themſelves the ſubjects of it. This vice was, however, incurable in him; and though he had often ſmarted for it, yet if ever he conceived a joke, he was certain to be delivered of it without the leaſt reſpect of perſons, time, or place.

He had a great many other particularities in his character, which I ſhall not mention, as the reader will himſelf very eaſily perceive them, on his farther acquaintance with this extraordinary perſon.

Jones

Digitized by Google

Jones, being impatient to be dreſt, for a reaſon which may eaſily be imagined, thought the ſhaver was very tedious in preparing his ſuds, and begged him to make haſte; to which the other anſwered, with much gravity, for he never diſcompoſed his muſcles on any account, 'Feſtina lentè is a proverb 'which I learnt long before I ever touched a razor.' 'I find, friend, you are a ſcholar,' replied Jones. 'A poor one,' ſaid the barber, 'non omnia poſſumus 'omnes.' 'Again!' ſaid Jones; 'I fancy you are 'good at capping verſes.' 'Excuſe me, Sir,' ſaid the barber, 'non tanto me dignor honori.' And then proceeding to his operation, 'Sir,' ſaid he, 'ſince 'I have dealt in ſuds, I could never diſcover more 'than two reaſons for ſhaving, the one is to get a 'beard, and the other to get rid of one. I conjec-'ture, Sir, it may not be long ſince you ſhaved from 'the former of theſe motives. Upon my word you 'have had good ſucceſs; for one may ſay of your 'beard, that it is tondenti gravior.' 'I conjecture,' ſays Jones, 'that thou art a very comical fellow.' 'You miſtake me widely, Sir,' ſaid the barber, 'I 'am too much addicted to the ſtudy of philoſophy, 'hinc illæ lacrymæ, Sir, that's my misfortune. Too 'much learning hath been my ruin.' 'Indeed,' ſays Jones, 'I confeſs, friend, you have more learning 'than generally belongs to your trade; but I can't 'ſee how it can have injured you.' 'Alas, Sir,' anſwered the ſhaver, 'my father diſinherited me for it. 'He was a dancing-maſter; and becauſe I could read 'before I could dance, he took an averſion to me, 'and left every farthing among his other chil-'dren.—Will you pleaſe to have your temples—O 'la! I aſk your pardon, I fancy there is hiatus in 'manuſcriptis. I heard you was going to the wars; 'but I find it was a miſtake.' 'Why do you con-'clude ſo?' ſays Jones. 'Sure, Sir,' anſwered the barber, 'you are too wiſe a man to carry a broken 'head thither; for that would be carrying coals to 'Newcaſtle.'

'Upon my word,' cries Jones, 'thou art a very 'odd fellow, and I like thy humour extremely; I

'shall be very glad if thou wilt come to me after dinner, and drink a glass with me; I long to be better acquainted with thee.'

'O dear Sir,' said the barber, 'I can do you twenty times as great a favour, if you will accept of it.' 'What is that, my friend?' cries Jones. 'Why, I will drink a bottle with you, if you please; for I dearly love good-nature; and as you have found me out to be a comical fellow, so I have no skill in physiognomy, if you are not one of the best natured gentlemen in the universe.' Jones now walked down stairs neatly dress't, and perhaps the fair Adonis was not a lovelier figure; and yet he had no charms for my landlady: for as that good woman did not resemble Venus at all in her person, so neither did she in her taste. Happy had it been for Nanny the chambermaid, if she had seen with the eyes of her mistress; for that poor girl fell so violently in love with Jones in five minutes, that her passion afterwards cost her many a sigh. This Nancy was extremely pretty, and altogether as coy; for she had refused a drawer, and one or two young farmers in the neighbourhood; but the bright eyes of our hero thawed all her ice in a moment.

When Jones returned to the kitchen, his cloth was not yet laid: nor indeed was there any occasion it should, his dinner remaining in *statu quo*, as did the fire which was to dress it. This disappointment might have put many a philosophical temper into a passion; but it had no such effect on Jones. He only gave the landlady a gentle rebuke, saying, 'since it was so difficult to get it heated, he would eat the beef cold.' But now the good woman, whether moved by compassion, or by shame, or by whatever other motive, I cannot tell, first gave her servants a round scold for disobeying the orders which she had never given, and then bidding the drawer lay a napkin in the Sun, she set about the matter in good earnest, and soon accomplished it.

This Sun, into which Jones was now conducted, was truly named, as *lucus a non lucendo*; for it was an apartment into which the sun had scarce ever looked.

It

Digitized by Google

It was indved the worſt room in the houſe; and happy was it for Jones that it was ſo. However, he was now too hungry to find any fault; but having once ſatisfied his appetite, he ordered the drawer to carry a bottle of wine into a better room, and expreſſed ſome reſentment at having been ſhewn into a dungeon.

The drawer having obeyed his commands, he was, after ſome time, attended by the barber; who would not indeed have ſuffered him to wait ſo long for his company, had he not been liſtening in the kitchen to the landlady, who was entertaining a circle that ſhe had gathered round her with the hiſtory of poor Jones, part of which ſhe had extracted from his own lips, and the other part was her own ingenious compoſition; for ſhe ſaid, he 'was a poor pariſh boy, 'taken into the honſe of 'ſquire Allworthy, where 'he was bred up as an apprentice, and now turned 'out of doors, for his miſdeeds, particularly for ma-'king love to his young miſtreſs, and probably for 'robbing the houſe; for how elſe ſhould he come 'by the little money he hath? and this,' ſays ſhe, 'is your gentleman forſooth.' 'A ſervant of 'ſquire 'Allworthy!' ſays the barber, 'what's his name?'— 'Why, he told me his name was Jones,' ſays ſhe, 'perhaps he goes by a wrong name. Nay, and he 'told me too, that the 'ſquire had maintained him as 'his own ſon, thof he had quarrelled with him now.' 'And if his name be Jones, he told you the truth,' ſaid the barber; 'for I have relations who live in 'that country, nay, and ſome people ſay he is his 'ſon.' 'Why doth he not go by the name of his 'father?' 'I can't tell that,' ſaid the barber, 'many 'people's ſons don't go by the name of their father.' 'Nay,' ſaid the landlady, 'if I thought he was a 'gentleman's ſon, thof he was a bye-blow, I ſhould 'behave to him in another gueſs manner; for many 'of theſe bye-blows come to be great men, and, as 'my poor firſt huſband uſed to ſay, never affront any 'cuſtomer that's a gentleman.'

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V.

A dialogue between Mr Jones and the barber.

THIS converſation paſſed partly while Jones was at dinner in his dungeon, and partly while he was expecting the barber in the parlour. And, as ſoon as it was ended, Mr Benjamin, as we have ſaid, attended him, and was very kindly deſired to ſit down. Jones then filling out a glaſs of wine, drank his health by the appellation of *doctiſſime tonſorum*. *Ago tibi gratias, domini*, ſaid the barber; and then looking very ſtedfaſtly at Jones, he ſaid, with great gravity, and with a ſeeming ſurpriſe, as if he had recollected a face he had ſeen before, 'Sir, may 'I crave the favour to know if your name is not 'Jones?' To which the other anſwered, that it was. '*Proh deûm atque hominum fidem!*' ſays the barber, 'how ſtrangely things come to paſs! Mr Jones, I 'am your moſt obedient ſervant. I find you do not 'know me, which indeed is no wonder, ſince you 'never ſaw me but once, and then you was very 'young. Pray, Sir, how doth the good 'ſquire All-'worthy? how doth *ille optimus omnium patronus?*' 'I find,' ſaid Jones, 'you do indeed know me; but 'I have not the like happineſs of recollecting you.'— 'I do not wonder at that,' cries Benjamin; 'but 'I am ſurpriſed I did not know you ſooner, for you 'are not in the leaſt altered. And pray, Sir, may I 'without offence inquire whither you are travelling 'this way? Fill the glaſs, Mr Barber,' ſaid Jones, 'and aſk no more queſtions.' 'Nay, Sir,' anſwered Benjamin, 'I would not be troubleſome; and 'I hope you don't think me to be a man of an impertinent curioſity, for that is a vice which no-body 'can lay to my charge; but I aſk pardon, for when 'a gentleman of your figure travels without his ſervants, we may ſuppoſe him to be, as we ſay, *in 'caſu incognito*, and perhaps I ought not to have 'mentioned your name.' 'I own,' ſays Jones, 'I 'did not expect to have been ſo well known in this 'country

Digitized by Google

'country as I find I am: yet, for particular reaſons, 'I ſhall be obliged to you if you will not mention 'my name to any other perſon, till I am gone from 'hence.' 'Pauca verba,' anſwered the barber; 'and 'I wiſh no other here knew you but myſelf; for 'ſome people have tongues; but I promiſe you I can 'keep a ſecret. My enemies will allow me that vir-'tue.' 'And yet that is not the characteriſtic of 'your profeſſion, Mr Barber,' anſwered Jones. 'Alas, 'Sir,' replied Benjamin, '*Non ſi male nunc et olim* '*ſic erit*. I was not born nor bred a barber, I aſſure 'you. I have ſpent moſt of my time among gentle-'men, and though I ſay it, I underſtand ſomething 'of gentility. And if you had thought me as worthy 'of your confidence as you have ſome other people, 'I ſhould have ſhewn you I could have kept a ſecret 'better. I ſhould not have degraded your name in 'a public kitchen; for indeed, Sir, ſome people have 'not uſed you well; for beſides making a public 'proclamation of what you told them of a quarrel 'between yourſelf and 'ſquire Allworthy, they added 'lies of their own, things which I knew to be lies.' 'You ſurprize me greatly,' cries Jones. 'Upon 'my word, Sir,' anſwered Benjamin, 'I tell the 'truth, and I need not tell you my landlady was the 'perſon. I am ſure it moved me to hear the ſtory, 'and I hope it is all falſe; for I have a great reſpect 'for you, I do aſſure you I have, and have had, e-'ver ſince the good-nature you ſhewed to Black 'George, which was talked of all over the coun-'try, and I received more than one letter about it. 'Indeed it made you beloved by every body. You 'will pardon me, therefore; for it was real concern 'at what I heard made me aſk ſo many queſtions; 'for I have no impertinent curioſity about me; but 'I love good-nature, and thence became *amoris abun-'dantia erga te.*'

Every profeſſion of friendſhip eaſily gains credit with the miſerable; it is no wonder, therefore, if Jones, who, beſides his being miſerable, was extremely open-hearted, very readily believed all the profeſſions of Benjamin, and receiv'd him into his boſom.

Digitized by Google

bosom. The scraps of Latin, some of which Benjamin applied properly enough, though it did not savour of profound literature, seemed yet to indicate something superior to a common barber, and so indeed did his whole behaviour. Jones therefore believed the truth of what he had said, as to his original and education, and at length, after much entreaty, he said, 'Since you have heard, my friend, 'so much of my affairs, and seem so desirous to 'know the truth, if you will have patience to hear it, 'I will inform you of the whole.' 'Patience,' cries Benjamin, 'that I will, if the chapter was never so 'long, and I am very much obliged to you for the ho-'nour you do me.'

Jones now began, and related the whole history, forgetting only a circumstance or two, namely, every thing which passed on that day in which he had fought with Thwackum, and ended with his resolution to go to sea, till the rebellion in the North had made him change his purpose, and had brought him to the place where he then was.

Little Benjamin, who had been all attention, never once interrupted the narrative; but when it was ended, he could not help observing, that there must be surely something more invented by his enemies, and told Mr Allworthy against him, or so good a man would never have dismissed one he had loved so tenderly, in such a manner. To which Jones answered, 'He doubted not but such villainous arts had been 'made use of to destroy him.'

And surely it was scarce possible for any one to have avoided making the same remark with the barber; who had not, indeed, heard from Jones, one single circumstance upon which he was condemned; for his actions were not now placed in those injurious lights, in which they had been misrepresented to Allworthy; nor could he mention those many false accusations which had been from time to time preferred against him to Allworthy; for with none of these he was himself acquainted. He had likewise, as we have observed, omitted many material facts in his present relation. Upon the whole, indeed, every thing now appeared

Digitized by Google

appeared in such favourable colours to Jones, that malice itself would have found it no easy matter to fix any blame upon him.

Not that Jones desired to conceal or to disguise the truth; nay, he would have been more unwilling to have suffered any censure to fall on Mr Allworthy for punishing him, than on his own actions for deserving it, but in reality so it happened, and so it always will happen; for let a man be never so honest, the account of his own conduct will, in spite of himself, be so very favourable, that his vices will come purified through his lips, and, like foul liquors well strained, will leave all their foulness behind. For though the facts themselves may appear, yet so different will be the motives, circumstances, and consequences, when a man tells his own story, and when his enemy tells it, that we scarce can recognize the facts to be one and the same.

Though the barber had drank down this story with greedy ears, he was not yet satisfied. There was a circumstance behind, which his curiosity, cold as it was, most eagerly longed for. Jones had mentioned the fact of his amour, and of his being the rival of Blifil, but had cautiously concealed the name of the young lady. The barber, therefore, after some hesitation, and many hums and ha's, at last begged leave to crave the name of the lady, who appeared to be the principal cause of all this mischief. Jones paused a moment, and then said, 'Since I have trusted you 'with so much, and since, I am afraid, her name is 'become too public already on this occasion, I will 'not conceal it from you. Her name is Sophia 'Western.'

'*Proh Deum atque hominum fidem!* squire Western 'hath a daughter grown a woman!' 'Ay, and such 'a woman,' cries Jones, 'that the world cannot 'match. No eye ever saw any thing so beautiful; 'but that is her least excellence. Such sense! such 'goodness! O I could praise her for ever, and yet 'should omit half her virtues.' 'Mr Western a 'daughter grown up!' cries the barber, 'I remember the father a boy; well, *Tempus edax rerum.*'

The

Digitized by Google

The wine being now at an end, the barber preſſed very eagerly to be his bottle; but Jones abſolutely refuſed, ſaying, 'He had already drunk more than he 'ought; and that he now choſe to retire to his room, 'where he wiſhed he could procure himſelf a book. 'A book!' cries Benjamin, 'what book would 'you have? Latin or Engliſh? I have ſome curious 'books in both languages. Such as *Eraſmi Colloquia, Ovid de Triſtibus, Gradus ad Parnaſſum*; and 'in Engliſh I have ſeveral of the beſt books, though 'ſome of them are a little torn; but I have a great 'part of Stowe's Chronicle; the ſixth volume of 'Pope's Homer; the third volume of the Spectator; 'the ſecond volume of Echard's Roman Hiſtory; 'the Craftſman; Robinſon Cruſoe; Thomas a 'Kempis, and two volumes of Tom Brown's works.'

'Thoſe laſt,' cries Jones, 'are books I never ſaw, 'ſo if you pleaſe to lend me one of thoſe volumes.' The barber aſſured him he would be highly entertained; for he looked upon the author to have been one of the greateſt wits that ever the nation produced. He then ſtepped to his houſe, which was hard by, and immediately returned; after which the barber having received very ſtrict injunctions of ſecrecy from Jones, and having ſworn inviolably to maintain it, they ſeparated; the barber went home, and Jones retired to his chamber.

CHAP. VI.

In which more of the talents of Mr Benjamin will appear, as well as who this extraordinary perſon was.

IN the morning Jones grew a little uneaſy at the deſertion of his ſurgeon, as he apprehended ſome inconvenience, or even danger, might attend the not dreſſing his wound: he enquired therefore of the drawer what other ſurgeons were to be met with in that neighbourhood. The drawer told him there was one

Digitized by Google

not far off; but he had known him often refuse to be concerned after another had been sent for before him, 'but, Sir,' says he, 'if you will take my advice, 'there is not a man in the kingdom can do your busi-'ness better than the barber who was with you last 'night. We look upon him to be one of the ablest 'men at a cut in all this neighbourhood: for though 'he hath not been here above three months, he hath 'done several great cures.'

The drawer was presently dispatched for Little Benjamin, who being acquainted in what capacity he was wanted, prepared himself accordingly, and attended; but with so different an air and aspect from that which he wore when his bason was under his arm, that he could scarce be known to be the same person.

'So, tonsor,' says Jones, 'I find you have more 'trades than one; how came you not to inform me of 'this last night?' 'A surgeon,' answered Benjamin, with great gravity, 'is a profession, not a trade. The 'reason why I did not acquaint you last night that I 'professed this art, was that I then concluded you was 'under the hands of another gentleman, and I never 'love to interfere with my brethren in their business. '*Ars omnibus communis*. But now, Sir, if you please, 'I will inspect your head, and when I see into your 'skull, I will give my opinion of your case.'

Jones had no great faith in this new professor; however, he suffered him to open the bandage, and to look at his wound, which as soon as he had done, Benjamin began to groan and shake his head violently. Upon which Jones, in a peevish manner, bid him not play the fool, but tell him in what condition he found him. 'Shall I answer you as a surgeon, or a friend?' said Benjamin. 'As a friend and seriously,' said Jones. 'Why then upon my soul,' cries Benjamin, 'it would require a great deal of art to keep you from 'being well after a very few dressings; and if you 'will suffer me to apply some salve of mine, I will 'answer for the success.' Jones gave his consent, and the plaister was applied accordingly.

'There, Sir,' cries Bejamin, 'now I will, if you 'please, resume my former self; but a man is obliged

Digitized by Google

'to keep up some dignity in his countenance whilst he 'is performing these operations, or the world will not 'submit to be handled by him. You can't imagine, 'Sir, of how much consequence a grave aspect is to a 'grave character. A barber may make you laugh; 'but a surgeon ought rather to make you cry.'

'Mr Barber, or Mr Surgeon, or Mr Barber-sur-'geon,' said Jones.—'O dear Sir,' answered Benjamin, interrupting him, '*Infandum, Regina, jubes re-'novare dolorem.* You recal to my mind that cruel 'separation of the united fraternities, so much to the 'prejudice of both bodies, as all separations must be, 'according to the old adage, *vis unita fortior*; which 'to be sure there are not wanting some of one or of 'the other fraternity who are able to construe. What 'a blow was this to me, who unite both in my own 'person!' 'Well, by whatever name you please to 'be called,' continued Jones, 'you certainly are one 'of the oddest, most comical fellows I ever met with, 'and must have something very surprising in your 'story, which you must confess I have a right to hear.' 'I do confess it,' answered Bejamin, 'and will ve-'ry readily acquaint you with it, when you have suf-'ficient leisure; for I promise you it will require a 'good deal of time.' Jones told him, he could never be more at leisure than at present. 'Well then,' said Benjamin, 'I will obey you; but first I will fasten the 'door, that none may interrupt us.' He did so, and 'then advancing with a solemn air to Jones, said; 'I 'must begin by telling you, Sir, that you yourself 'have been the greatest enemy I ever had.' Jones was a little startled at this sudden declaration. 'I your 'enemy, Sir!' says he with much amazement, and some sternness in his look. 'Nay, be not angry,' said Benjamin, 'for I promise you I am not. You are per-'fectly innocent of having intended me any wrong; 'for you was then an infant; but I shall, I believe, 'unriddle all this the moment I mention my name. 'Did you never hear, Sir, of one Partridge, who had 'the honour of being reputed your father, and the mis-'fortune of being ruined by that honour?' 'I have 'indeed heard of that Partridge,' says Jones, 'and

'have

Digitized by Google

'have always believed myself to be his son.' 'Well, 'Sir,' answered Benjamin, 'I am that Partridge; 'but I here absolve you from all filial duty; for I do 'assure you, you are no son of mine.' 'How!' replied Jones, 'and is it possible that a false suspicion 'should have drawn all the ill consequences upon 'you with which I am too well acquainted?' 'It is 'possible,' cries Benjamin, 'for it is so; but though 'it is natural enough for men to hate even the inno-'cent causes of their sufferings, yet I am of a different 'temper. I have loved you ever since I heard of your 'behaviour to Black George, as I told you; and I 'am convinced, from this extraordinary meeting, 'that you are born to make me amends for all I have 'suffered on that account. Besides, I dreamt, the 'night before I saw you, that I stumbled over a stool 'without hurting myself; which plainly shewed me 'something good was towards me; and last night I 'dreamt again, that I rode behind you on a milk-'white mare, which is a very excellent dream, and 'betokens much good fortune, which I am resolved 'to pursue, unless you have the cruelty to deny me.'

'I should be very glad, Mr Partridge,' answered Jones, 'to have it in my power to make you amends 'for your sufferings on my account, though at pre-'sent I see no likelihood of it: however, I assure 'you I will deny you nothing which is in my power 'to grant.'

'It is in your power sure enough,' replied Benjamin; 'for I desire nothing more than leave to attend 'you in this expedition. Nay, I have so entirely set 'my heart upon it, that if you should refuse me, you 'will kill both a barber and a surgeon in one breath.'

Jones answered smiling, That he should be very sorry to be the occasion of so much mischief to the public. He then advanced many prudential reasons, in order to dissuade Benjamin (whom we shall hereafter call Partridge) from his purpose; but all were in vain. Partridge relied strongly on his dream of the milk-white mare. 'Besides, Sir,' says he, 'I 'promise you, I have as good an inclination to the 'cause as any man can possibly have; and go I will

Digitized by Google

'whether you admit me to go in your company or 'not.'

Jones, who was as much pleased with Partridge, as Partridge could be with him, and who had not consulted his own inclination, but the good of the other in desiring him to stay behind, when he found his friend so resolute, at last gave his consent; but then recollecting himself, he said, 'Perhaps, Mr 'Partridge, you think I shall be able to support you; 'but I really am not;' and then taking out his purse, he told out nine guineas, which he declared were his whole fortune.

Partridge answered, 'That his dependance was only 'on his future favour: for he was thoroughly con-'vinced he would shortly have enough in his power. 'At present, Sir,' said he, 'I believe I am rather the 'richer man of the two; but all I have is at your 'service, and at your disposal. I insist upon your ta-'king the whole, and I beg only to attend you in the 'quality of your servant; *Nil desperandum est Teucro 'duce et auspice Teucro.*' But to this generous proposal concerning the money, Jones would by no means submit.

It was resolved to set out the next morning, when a difficulty arose concerning the baggage; for the portmanteau of Mr Jones was too large to be carried without a horse.

'If I may presume to give my advice,' says Partridge, 'this portmanteau, with every thing in it, ex-'cept a few shirts, should be left behind. Those 'I shall be easily able to carry for you, and the rest of 'your cloaths will remain very safely locked up in 'my house.'

This method was no sooner proposed than agreed to, and then the barber departed, in order to prepare every thing for his intended expedition.

CHAP

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

Containing better reasons than any which have yet appeared for the conduct of Partridge; an apology for the weakness of Jones; and some farther anecdotes concerning my landlady.

THOUGH Partridge was one of the most superstitious of men, he would hardly, perhaps, have desired to accompany Jones on his expedition merely from the omens of the joint-stool, and white mare, if his prospect had been no better than to have shared the plunder gained in the field of battle. In fact, when Partridge came to ruminate on the relation he had heard from Jones, he could not reconcile to himself, that Mr Allworthy should turn his son (for so he most firmly believed him to be) out of doors, for any reason which he had heard assigned. He concluded therefore, that the whole was a fiction, and that Jones, of whom he had often from his correspondents heard the wildest character, had in reality run away from his father. It came into his head, therefore, that if he could prevail with the young gentleman to return back to his father, he should by that means render a service to Allworthy, which would obliterate all his former anger; nay, indeed, he conceived that very anger was counterfeited, and that *Allworthy* had sacrificed him to his own reputation. And this suspicion, indeed, he well accounted for from the tender behaviour of that excellent man to the foundling child; from his great severity to Partridge, who knowing himself to be innocent, could not conceive that any other should think him guilty; lastly, from the allowance which he had privately received long after the annuity had been publicly taken from him; and which he looked upon as a kind of smart-money, or rather by way of atonement for injustice: for it is very uncommon, I believe, for men to ascribe the benefactions they receive to pure charity, when they can possibly impute them to any other motive. If he could by any means, therefore, persuade

Digitized by Google

ſuade the young gentleman to return home, he doubted not but that he ſhould again be received into the favour of Allworthy, and well rewarded for his pains; nay, and ſhould be again reſtored to his native country; a reſtoration which Ulyſſes himſelf never wiſhed more heartily than poor Partridge.

As for Jones, he was well ſatisfied with the truth of what the other had aſſerted, and believed that Partridge had no other inducements but love to him, and zeal for the cauſe. A blameable want of caution and diffidence in the veracity of others, in which he was highly worthy of cenſure. To ſay the truth, there are but two ways by which men become poſſeſſed of this excellent quality. The one is from long experience, and the other is from nature; which laſt, I preſume, is often meant by genius, or great natural parts; and it is infinitely the better of the two, not only as we are maſters of it much earlier in life, but as it is much more infallible and concluſive: for a man who hath been impoſed upon by ever ſo many, may ſtill hope to find others more honeſt; whereas he who receives certain neceſſary admonitions from within, that this is impoſſible, muſt have very little underſtanding indeed, if he ever renders himſelf liable to be once deceived. As Jones had not this gift from nature, he was too young to have gained it by experience; for at the diffident wiſdom which is to be acquired this way we ſeldom arrive till very late in life; which is perhaps the reaſon why ſome old men are apt to deſpiſe the underſtandings of all thoſe who are a little younger than themſelves.

Jones ſpent moſt part of the day in the company of a new acquaintance. This was no other than the landlord of the houſe, or rather the huſband of the landlady. He had but lately made his deſcent down ſtairs, after a long fit of the gout, in which diſtemper he was generally confined to his room during one half of the year; and during the reſt he walked about the houſe, ſmoaked his pipe, and drank his bottle with his friends, without concerning himſelf in the leaſt with any kind of buſineſs. He had been bred, as they call it, a gentleman, that is, bred up to do nothing,

Digitized by Google

thing, and had ſpent a very ſmall fortune, which he inherited from an induſtrious farmer his uncle, in hunting, horſe-racing, and cock-fighting, and had been married by my landlady for certain purpoſes, which he had long ſince deſiſted from anſwering: for which ſhe hated him heartily. But as he was a ſurly kind of fellow, ſo ſhe contented herſelf with frequently upbraiding him by diſadvantageous compariſons with her firſt huſband, whoſe praiſe ſhe had eternally in her mouth; and as ſhe was for the moſt part miſtreſs of the profit, ſo ſhe was ſatisfied to take upon herſelf the care and government of the family, and after a long ſucceſsleſs ſtruggle, to ſuffer her huſband to be maſter of himſelf.

In the evening, when Jones retired to his room, a ſmall diſpute aroſe between this fond couple concerning him. 'What,' ſays the wife, 'you have 'been tippling with the gentleman! I ſee.' 'Yes,' anſwered the huſband, 'we have cracked a bottle 'together, and a very gentleman-like man he is, and 'hath a very pretty notion of horſe-fleſh. Indeed he 'is young, and hath not ſeen much of the world: 'for I believe he hath been at very few horſe races.' 'O ho! he is one of your order, is he?' replies the landlady; 'he muſt be a gentleman to be ſure, if he 'is a horſe-racer. The devil fetch ſuch gentry; I 'am ſure I wiſh I had never ſeen any of them. I have 'reaſon to love horſe-racers truly.' 'That you have,' ſays the huſband; 'for I was one, you know.' 'Yes,' anſwered ſhe, 'you are a pure one indeed. As my 'firſt huſband uſed to ſay, I may put all the good I 'have ever got by you in my eyes, and ſee never the 'worſe.' 'D—n your firſt huſband,' cries he.—'Don't d—n a better man than yourſelf,' anſwered the wife; 'if he had been alive, you durſt not have 'done it.' 'Then you think,' ſays he, 'I have not 'ſo much courage as yourſelf: for you have d---n'd 'him often in my hearing.' 'If I did,' ſays ſhe, 'I have repented of it, many's the good time and 'oft. And if he was ſo good to forgive me a word 'ſpoken in haſte, or ſo, it doth not become ſuch a 'one as you to twitter me. He was a huſband to 'me,

Digitized by Google

'me, he was; and if ever I did make uſe of an ill 'word or ſo in a paſſion, I never called him raſcal; 'I ſhould have told a lie, if I had called him raſ-'cal' Much more ſhe ſaid, but not in his hearing: for having lighted his pipe, he ſtaggered off as faſt as he could. We ſhall therefore tranſcribe no more of her ſpeech, as it approached ſtill nearer and nearer to a ſubject too indelicate to find any place in this hiſtory.

Early in the morning Partridge appeared at the bed-ſide of Jones ready equipped for the journey, with his knapſack at his back. This was his own work-manſhip; for beſides his other trades, he was no indifferent taylor. He had already put up his whole ſtock of linen in it, conſiſting of four ſhirts, to which he now added eight for Mr Jones: and then packing up the portmanteau, he was departing with it towards his own houſe, but was ſtopt in his way by the landlady, who refuſed to ſuffer any removals till after the payment of the reckoning.

The landlady was, as we have ſaid, abſolute governeſs in theſe regions; it was therefore neceſſary to comply with her rules; ſo the bill was preſently writ out, which amounted to a much larger ſum than might have been expected, from the entertainment which Jones had met with. But here we are obliged to diſcloſe ſome maxims which publicans hold to be the grand myſteries of their trade. The firſt is, if they have any thing good in their houſe (which indeed very ſeldom happens) to produce it only to perſons who travel with great equipages. 2dly, To charge the ſame for the very worſt proviſions, as if they were the beſt. And, laſtly, if any of their gueſts call but for little, to make them pay a double price for every thing they have, ſo that the amount by the head may be much the ſame.

The bill being made and diſcharged, Jones ſet forward with Partridge, carrying his knapſack; nor did the landlady condeſcend to wiſh him a good journey: for this was, it ſeems, an inn frequented by people of faſhion; and I know not whence it is, but all thoſe who get their livelihood by people of faſhion, contract

as

Digitized by Google

as much insolence to the rest of mankind as if they really belonged to that rank themselves.

CHAP. VIII.

Jones arrives at Gloucester, and goes to the Bell; the character of that house, and of a pettyfogger, which he there meets with.

MR Jones, and Partridge, or little Benjamin, (which epithet of Little was perhaps given him ironically, he being in reality near six feet high) having left their last quarters in the manner before described, travelled on to Gloucester, without meeting any adventure worth relating.

Being arrived here, they chose for their house of entertainment the sign of the Bell, an excellent house indeed, and which I do most seriously recommend to every reader who shall visit this ancient city. The master of it is brother to the great preacher Whitefield; but is absolutely untainted with the pernicious principles of methodism, or of any other heretical sect. He is indeed a very honest plain man, and, in my opinion, not likely to create any disturbance either in church or state. His wife hath, I believe, had much pretension to beauty, and is still a very fine woman. Her person and deportment might have made a shining figure in the politest assemblies; but though she must be conscious of this, and many other perfections, she seems perfectly contented with, and resigned to that state of life to which she is called; and this resignation is entirely owing to the prudence and wisdom of her temper: for she is at present as free from any methodistical notions as her husband. I say at present: for she freely confesses that her brother's documents made at first some impression upon her, and that she had put herself to the expence of a long hood, in order to attend the extraordinary motions of the spirit; but having found, during an experiment of three weeks, no emotions, she says, worth a farthing, she very wisely laid by her hood, and abandoned the sect. To be concise, she is a very friendly, good-

Digitized by Google

good-natured woman; and so industrious to oblige, that her guests must be of a very morose disposition who are not extremely well satisfied in her house.

Mrs Whitefield happened to be in the yard when Jones and his attendant marched in. Her sagacity soon discovered in the air of our hero something which distinguished him from the vulgar. She ordered her servants, therefore, immediately to shew him into a room, and presently afterwards invited him to dinner with herself; which invitation he very thankfully accepted, for indeed much less agreeable company than that of Mrs Whitefield, and a much worse entertainment than she had provided, would have been welcome, after so long fasting, and so long a walk.

Besides Mr Jones and the good governess of the mansion, there sat down at table an attorney of Salisbury, indeed the very same who had brought the news of Mrs Blifil's death to Mr Allworthy, and whose name, which I think we did not before mention, was Dowling: there was likewise present another person, who stiled himself a lawyer, and who lived somewhere near Linlinch, in Somersetshire. This fellow, I say, stiled himself a lawyer, but was indeed a most vile petty-fogger, without sense or knowledge of any kind, one of those who may be termed train-bearers to the law; a sort of supernumeraries in the profession, who are the hackneys of attornies, and will ride more miles for half-a-crown than a post-boy.

During the time of dinner, the Somersetshire lawyer recollected the face of Jones, which he had seen at Mr Allworthy's: for he had often visited in that gentleman's kitchen. He therefore took occasion to enquire after the good family there, with that familiarity which would have become an intimate friend or acquaintance of Mr Allworthy; and indeed he did all in his power to insinuate himself to be such, though he had never had the honour of speaking to any person in that family higher than the butler. Jones answered all his questions with much civility, though he never remembered to have seen the petty-fogger before, and though he concluded, from the outward appearance and behaviour of the man, that he

Digitized by Google

he uſurped a freedom with his betters, to which he was by no means intitled.

As the converſation of fellows of this kind, is of all others the moſt deteſtable to men of any ſenſe, the cloth was no ſooner removed than Mr Jones withdrew, and a little barbarouſly left poor Mrs Whitefield to do a pennance, which I have often heard Mr Timothy Harris, and other publicans of good taſte, lament, as the ſevereſt lot annexed to their calling, namely, that of being obliged to keep company with their gueſts.

Jones had no ſooner quitted the room, than the petty-fogger in a whiſpering tone, aſked Mrs Whitefield, 'if ſhe knew who that fine ſpark was?' She anſwered, 'ſhe had never ſeen the gentleman before.' 'The gentleman, indeed!' replied the petty-fogger; 'a pretty gentleman truly! Why, he's the baſtard of 'a fellow who was hanged for horſe-ſtealing. He 'was dropt at 'ſquire Allworthy's door, where one 'of the ſervants found him in a box ſo full of rain-'water, that he would certainly have been drowned, 'had he not been reſerved for another fate.' 'Ay, 'ay, you need not mention it, I proteſt; we under-'ſtand what that fate is very well,' cries Dowling, with a moſt facetious grin. 'Well,' continued the other, 'the 'ſquire ordered him to be taken in: for 'he is a tinderſom man every body knows, and 'was afraid of drawing himſelf into a ſcrape; and 'there the baſtard was bred up and fed and clothi-'fied all to the world like any gentleman; and there 'he got one of the ſervant maids with child, and 'perſuaded her to ſwear it to the 'ſquire himſelf; and 'afterwards he broke the arm of one Mr Thwackum 'a clergyman, only becauſe he reprimanded him for 'following whores; and afterwards he ſnapt a piſtol 'at Mr Blifil behind his back; and once when 'ſquire 'Allworthy was ſick, he got a drum, and beat it all 'over the houſe, to prevent him from ſleeping; and 'twenty other pranks he hath played: for all which, 'about four or five days ago, juſt before I left the 'country, the 'ſquire ſtripped him ſtark naked, and 'turned him out of doors.'

'And

'And very juſtly too, I proteſt,' cries Dowling; 'I would turn my own ſon out of doors, if he was 'guilty of half as much. And pray what is the name 'of this pretty gentleman?'

'The name o'un!' anſwered the petty-fogger, 'why, he is called Thomas Jones.'

'Jones!' anſwered Dowling, a little eagerly, 'what, Mr Jones, that lived at Mr Allworthy's! 'was that the gentleman that dined with us?'—'The 'very ſame,' ſaid the other 'I have heard of the 'gentleman,' cries Dowling, 'often; but I never 'heard any ill character of him.' 'And I am ſure,' ſays Mrs Whitefield, 'if half what this gentleman 'hath ſaid be true, Mr Jones hath the moſt deceitful countenance I ever ſaw; for ſure his looks promiſe ſomething very different; and I muſt ſay, for 'the little I have ſeen of him, he is as civil a well-'bred man as you would with to converſe with.'

The petty-fogger calling to mind that he had not been ſworn, as he uſually was, before he gave his evidence, now bound what he had declared with ſo many oaths and imprecations, that the landlady's ears were ſhocked, and ſhe put a ſtop to his ſwearing, by aſſuring him of her belief. Upon which he ſaid, 'I 'hope, Madam, you imagine I would ſcorn to tell 'ſuch things of any man unleſs I knew them to be 'true. What intereſt have I in taking away the re-'putation of a man who never injured me? I promiſe you every ſyllable of what I have ſaid is fact, 'and the whole country knows it.'

As Mrs Whitefield had no reaſon to ſuſpect that the petty-fogger had any motive or temptation to abuſe Jones, the reader cannot blame her for believing what he ſo confidently affirmed with many oaths. She accordingly gave up her ſkill in phyſiognomy; and henceforwards conceived ſo ill an opinion of her gueſt, that ſhe heartily wiſhed him out of her houſe.

This diſlike was now farther increaſed by a report which Mr Whitefield made from the kitchen, where Partridge had informed the company, 'That though 'he carried the knapſack, and contented himſelf with 'ſtaying among ſervants, while Tom Jones (as he cal-

Digitized by Google

'led him) was regaling in the parlour, he was not his 'servant, but only a friend and companion, and as 'good a gentleman as Mr Jones himself.'

Dowling sat all this while silent, biting his fingers, making faces, grinning, and looking wonderfully arch; at last he opened his lips, and protested that the gentleman looked like another sort of man. He then called for his bill with the utmost haste, declared he must be at Hereford that evening, lamented his great hurry of business, and wished he could divide himself into twenty pieces, in order to be at once in twenty places.

The petty-fogger now likewise departed, and then Jones desired the favour of Mrs Whitefield's company to drink tea with him; but she refused, and with a manner so different from that with which she had received him at dinner, that it a little surprised him. And now he soon perceived her behaviour totally changed; for instead of that natural affability which we have before celebrated, she wore a constrained severity on her countenance, which was so disagreeable to Mr Jones, that he resolved, however late, to quit the house that evening.

He did indeed account somewhat unfairly for this sudden change; for besides some hard and unjust surmises concerning female fickleness and mutability, he began to suspect that he owed this want of civility to his want of horses; a sort of animals which, as they dirty no sheets, are thought, in inns, to pay better for their beds than their riders, and are therefore considered as the more desirable company; but Mrs Whitefield, to do her justice, had a much more liberal way of thinking. She was perfectly well-bred, and could be very civil to a gentleman, though he walked on foot. In reality, she looked on our hero as a sorry scoundrel, and therefore treated him as such, for which not even Jones himself, had he known as much as the reader, could have blamed her; nay, on the contrary, he must have approved her conduct, and have esteemed her the more for the disrespect shewn towards himself. This is indeed a most aggravating circumstance which attends depriving men unjustly

Digitized by Google

of their reputation; for a man who is conſcious of having an ill character, cannot juſtly be angry with thoſe who neglect and ſlight him: but ought rather to deſpiſe ſuch as affect his converſation, unleſs where a perfect intimacy muſt have convinced them that their friend's character hath been falſely and injuriouſly aſperſed.

This was not, however, the caſe of Jones; for as he was a perfect ſtranger to the truth, ſo he was with good reaſon offended at the treatment he received. He therefore paid his reckoning and departed, highly againſt the will of Mr Partridge, who having remonſtrated much againſt it to no purpoſe, at laſt condeſcended to take up his knapſack, and to attend his friend.

CHAP. IX.

Containing ſeveral dialogues between Jones and Partridge, concerning love, cold, hunger, and other matters; with the lucky and narrow eſcape of Partridge as he was on the very brink of making a fatal diſcovery to his friend.

THE ſhadows began now to deſcend larger from the high mountains: the feathered creation had betaken themſelves to their reſt. Now the higheſt order of mortals were ſitting down to their dinners, and the loweſt order to their ſuppers. In a word, the clock ſtruck five juſt as Mr Jones took his leave of Glouceſter; an hour at which (as it was now midwinter) the dirty fingers of Night would have drawn her ſable curtain over the univerſe, had not the moon forbid her, who now, with a face as broad and as red as thoſe of ſome jolly mortals, who, like her, turn night into day, began to riſe from her bed, where ſhe had ſlumbered away the day, in order to ſit up all night. Jones had not travelled far before he paid his compliments to that beautiful planet, and turning to his companion, aſked him, if he had ever beheld ſo delicious an evening. Partridge making no ready anſwer to his queſtion, he proceeded

Digitized by Google

ed to comment on the beauty of the moon, and repeated some passages from Milton, who hath certainly excelled all other poets in his description of the heavenly luminaries. He then told Partridge the story from the Spectator, of two lovers who had agreed to entertain themselves when they were at a great distance from each other, by repairing, at a certain fixed hour, to look at the moon; thus pleasing themselves with the thought that they were both employed in contemplating the same object at the same time. 'Those lovers,' added he, 'must have had souls 'truly capable of feeling all the tenderness of the 'sublimest of all human passions.' 'Very probably,' cries Partridge: 'but I envy them more, if they had 'bodies incapable of feeling cold; for I am almost 'frozen to death, and am very much afraid I shall 'lose a piece of my nose before we get to another 'house of entertainment. Nay, truly, we may well 'expect some judgment should happen to us for our 'folly in running away so by night from one of the 'most excellent inns I ever set my foot into. I am 'sure I never saw more good things in my life, and 'the greatest lord in the land cannot live better in 'his own house than he may there. And to forsake 'such a house, and go a rambling about the country, the Lord knows whither, *per devia rura viarum*, 'I say nothing for my part; but some people might 'not have charity enough to conclude we were in 'our sober senses.' 'Fie upon it, Mr Partridge,' says Jones, 'have a better heart: consider you are 'going to face an enemy; and are you afraid of 'facing a little cold? I wish, indeed, we had a 'guide to advise which of these roads we should 'take.' 'May I be so bold,' says Partridge, 'to 'offer my advice: *Interdum stultus opportuna loquitur.*' 'Why, which of them,' cries Jones, 'would you recommend?' 'Truly neither of them,' answered Partridge, 'The only road we can be 'certain of finding, is the road we came. A good 'hearty pace will bring us back to Gloucester in 'an hour; but if we go forward, the Lord Harry 'knows when we shall arrive at any place; for I

Digitized by Google

'see at least fifty miles before me, and no house in 'all the way.' 'You see, indeed, a very fair pro-'spect,' says Jones, 'which receives great additional 'beauty from the extreme lustre of the moon. How-'ever, I will keep the left hand track, as that seems 'to lead directly to those hills, which we were in-'formed lie not far from Worcester. And here, 'if you are inclined to quit me, you may, and re-'turn back again; but, for my part, I am resolved 'to go forward.'

'It is unkind in you, Sir,' says Partridge, 'to 'suspect me of any such intension. What I have 'advised hath been as much on your account as on 'my own; but since you are determined to go on, 'I am as much determined to follow. *I præ, se-'quar te.*'

They now travelled some miles without speaking to each other, during which suspence of discourse Jones often sighed, and Benjamin groaned as bitterly, though from a very different reason. At length Jones made a full stop, and turning about, cries, 'Who 'knows, Partridge, but the loveliest creature in the 'universe may have her eyes now fixed on that very 'moon which I behold at this instant?' 'Very 'likely, Sir,' answered Partridge, 'and if my eyes 'were fixed on a good surloin of roast beef, the de-'vil might take the moon and her horns into the 'bargain.' 'Did ever Tramontane make such an 'answer?' cries Jones. 'Prithee, Partridge, wast 'thou ever susceptible of love in thy life, or hath 'time worn away all the traces of it from thy me-'mory?' 'Alack-a-day,' cries Partridge, 'well 'would it have been for me if I had never known 'what love was. *Infandum, Regina, jubes renovare 'dolorem.* I am sure I have tasted all the tenderness 'and sublimities, and bitterness of the passion.' 'Was your mistress unkind then?' says Jones. 'Very unkind indeed, Sir,' answered Partridge? 'for she married me, and made one of the most con-'founded wives in the world. However, Heaven be 'praised, she's gone; and if I believed she was in the 'moon, according to the book I once read, which

'teaches

Digitized by Google

'teaches that to be the receptacle of departed ſpirits, 'I would never look at it for fear of ſeeing her: 'But I wiſh, Sir, that the moon was a looking glaſs 'for your ſake, and that Miſs Sophia Weſtern was 'now placed before it.' 'My dear Partridge,' cries Jones, 'what a thought was there! A thought which 'I am certain could never have entered into any 'mind but that of a lover. O Partridge, could I 'hope once again to ſee that face; but, alas! all 'thoſe golden dreams are vaniſhed for ever, and my 'only refuge from future miſery is to forget the ob- 'ject of all my former happineſs.' 'And do you 'really deſpair of ever ſeeing Miſs Weſtern again?' anſwered Partridge: 'If you will follow my advice, 'I will engage you ſhall not only ſee her, but have 'her in your arms.' 'Ha! do not awaken a thought 'of that nature,' cries Jones. 'I have ſtruggled 'ſufficiently to conquer all ſuch wiſhes already.' 'Nay,' anſwered Partridge, 'if you do not wiſh 'to have your miſtreſs in your arms, you are a moſt 'extraordinary lover indeed.' 'Well, well,' ſays Jones, 'let us avoid this ſubject; but pray what is 'your advice?' 'To give it you in the military 'phraſe then,' ſays Partridge, 'as we are ſoldiers; 'To the right about. Let us return the way we 'came; we may yet reach Glouceſter to-night, 'though late; whereas if we proceed, we are likely, 'for ought I ſee, to ramble about for ever without 'coming to either houſe or home.' 'I have already 'told you my reſolution is to go on,' anſwered Jones; but, I would have you to go back. I am 'obliged to you for your company hither, and I beg 'you to accept a guinea, as a ſmall inſtance of my 'gratitude. Nay, it would be cruel in me to ſuffer 'you to go any farther; for, to deal plainly with 'you, my chief end and deſire is a glorious death 'in the ſervice of my king and county' 'As for 'your money,' replied Partridge, 'I beg, Sir, you 'will put it up: I will receive none of you at this 'time; for at preſent I am, I believe, the richer 'man of the two. And as your reſolution is to go 'on, ſo mine is to follow you if you do. Nay, now

Digitized by Google

'my preſence appears abſolutely neceſſary to take 'care of you, ſince your intentions are ſo deſperate; 'for I promiſe you my views are much more pru-'dent; as you are reſolved to fall in battle if you 'can, ſo I am reſolved as firmly to come to no hurt, 'if I can help it. And indeed I have the comfort to 'think there will be but little danger; for a popiſh 'prieſt told me the other day, the buſineſs would 'ſoon be over, and he believed without a battle.' 'A popiſh prieſt,' cries Jones, 'I have heard is 'not always to be believed when he ſpeaks in behalf 'of his religion.' 'Yes, but ſo far,' anſwered the other, 'from ſpeaking in behalf of his religion, he 'aſſured me, the catholics did not expect to be 'any gainers by the change; for that Prince Charles 'was as good a proteſtant as any in England; and 'that nothing but regard to right made him and the 'reſt of the popiſh party to be Jacobites.' 'I believe 'him to be as much a proteſtant as I believe he hath 'any right,' ſays Jones, 'and I make no doubt of 'our ſucceſs, but not without a battle. So that I 'am not ſo ſanguine as your friend the popiſh prieſt.' 'Nay, to be ſure, Sir,' anſwered Partridge, 'all 'the prophecies I have ever read, ſpeak of a great 'deal of blood to be ſpilt in the quarrel: and the 'miller with three thumbs, who is now alive, is to 'hold the horſes of three kings, up to his knees in 'blood. Lord have mercy upon us all, and ſend 'better times!' 'With what ſtuff and nonſenſe 'haſt thou filled thy head?' anſwered Jones. 'This 'too, I ſuppoſe, comes from the popiſh prieſt. 'Monſters and prodigies are the proper arguments 'to ſupport monſtrous and abſurd doctrines. The 'cauſe of King George is the cauſe of liberty and 'true religion. In other words, it is the cauſe of 'common ſenſe, my boy, and I warrant you will 'ſucceed, though Briareus himſelf was to riſe again 'with his hundred thumbs, and to turn miller.' Partridge made no reply to this. He was indeed caſt into the utmoſt confuſion by this declaration of Jones. For to inform the reader of a ſecret, which we had no proper opportunity of revealing before, Partridge was

Digitized by Google

was in truth a Jacobite, and had concluded that Jones was of the ſame party, and was now proceeding to join the rebels. An opinion which was not without foundation For the tall long-ſided dame, mentioned by Hudibras; that many-ey'd, many-tongued, many mouthed, many-eared monſter of Virgil, had related the ſtory of the quarrel between Jones and the officer, with her uſual regard to truth. She had indeed changed the name of Sophia into that of the Pretender, and had reported, that drinking his health was the cauſe for which Jones was knocked down. This Partridge had heard, and moſt firmly believed. 'Tis no wonder, therefore, that he had thence entertained the above-mentioned opinion of Jones; and which he had almoſt diſcovered to him before he found out his own miſtake. And at this the reader will be the leſs inclined to wonder, if he pleaſes to recollect the doubtful phraſe in which Jones firſt communicated his reſolution to Mr Partridge; and, indeed, had the words been leſs ambiguous, Partridge might very well have conſtrued them as he did; being perſuaded, as he was, that the whole nation were of the ſame inclination in their hearts; nor did it ſtagger him that Jones had travelled in the company of ſoldiers; for he had the ſame opinion of the army which he had of the reſt of the people.

But however well affected he might be to James or Charles, he was ſtill much more attached to Little Benjamin than to either; for which reaſon he no ſooner diſcovered the principles of his fellow-traveller, than he thought proper to conceal, and outwardly to give up his own to the man on whom he depended for the making his fortune, ſince he by no means believed the affairs of Jones to be ſo deſperate as they really were with Mr Allworthy; for as he had kept a conſtant correſpondence with ſome of his neighbours ſince he left that country, he had heard much, indeed more than was true, of the great affection Mr Allworthy bore this young man, who, as Partridge had been inſtructed, was to be that gentleman's heir, and whom, as we have ſaid, he did not in the leaſt doubt to be his ſon.

He

Digitized by Google

He imagined, therefore, that whatever quarrel was between them, it would be certainly made up at the return of Mr Jones; an event from which he promised great advantages, if he could take this opportunity of ingratiating himself with that young gentleman; and if he could by any means be instrumental in procuring his return, he doubted not, as we have before said, but it would as highly advance him in the favour of Mr Allworthy.

We have already observed, that he was a very good-natured fellow, and he hath himself declared the violent attachment he had to the person and character of Jones; but possibly the views which I have just before mentioned, might likewise have some little share in prompting him to undertake this expedition, at least in urging him to continue it, after he had discovered, that his master and himself, like some prudent fathers and sons, though they travelled together in great friendship, had embraced opposite parties. I am led into this conjecture, by having remarked, that though love, friendship, esteem, and such like, have very powerful operations in the human mind; interest, however, is an ingredient seldom omitted by wise men, when they would work others to their own purposes. This is indeed a most excellent medicine, and, like Ward's pill, flies at once to the particular part of the body on which you desire to operate, whether it be the tongue, the hand, or any other member, where it scarce ever fails of immediately producing the desired effect.

CHAP. X.

In which our travellers meet with a very extraordinary adventure.

JUST as Jones and his friend came to the end of their dialogue in the preceding chapter, they arrived at the bottom of a very steep hill. Here Jones stopt short, and directing his eyes upwards, stood for a while silent. At length he called to his companion, and said, 'Partridge, I wish I was at the top of this 'hill;

Digitized by Google

'hill; it must certainly afford a most charming pro-
'spect, especially by this light: for the solemn gloom
'which the moon casts on all objects, is beyond ex-
'pression beautiful, especially to an imagination which
'is desirous of cultivating melancholy ideas.' 'Very,
'probably,' answered Partridge; 'but if the top of
'the hill be properest to produce melancholy thoughts,
'I suppose the bottom is the likeliest to produce merry
'ones, and these I take to be much the better of the two.
'I protest you have made my blood run cold with the
'very mentioning the top of that mountain; which
'seems to me to be one of the highest in the world.
'No, no, if we look for any thing, let it be for a
'place under ground, to screen ourselves from the
'frost,'——'Do so,' said Jones, 'let it be but within
'hearing of this place, and I will halloo to you at my
'return back.' 'Surely, Sir, you are not mad,' said Partridge. 'Indeed, I am,' answered Jones, 'if ascend-
'ing this hill be madness: but, as you complain so
'much of the cold already, I would have you stay be-
'low, I will certainly return to you within an hour.'
'Pardon me, Sir,' cries Partridge, 'I have deter-
'mined to follow you where-ever you go.' Indeed he was now afraid to stay behind; for though he was coward enough in all respects, yet his chief fear was that of ghosts, with which the present time of night, and the wildness of the place, extremely well suited.

At this instant Partridge espied a glimmering light through some trees, which seemed very near to them. He immediately cried out in a rapture, 'Oh, Sir!
'Heaven hath at last heard my prayers, and hath
'brought us to a house; perhaps it may be a inn.
'Let me beseech you, Sir, if you have any compassion
'either for me or yourself, do not despise the good-
'ness of Providence, but let us go directly to yon
'light. Whether it be a public-house or no, I am
'sure, if they be Christians that dwell there, they will
'not refuse a little house-room to persons in our mi-
'serable condition.' Jones at length yielded to the earnest supplications of Partridge, and both together made directly towards the place whence the light issued.

They

Digitized by Google

They ſoon arived at the door of this houſe or cottage: for it might be called either, without much impropriety. Here Jones knocked ſeveral times, without receiving any anſwer from within; at which Patridge, whoſe head was full of nothing but of ghoſts, devils, witches, and ſuch like, began to tremble, crying, 'Lord have mercy upon us! ſure the people muſt be 'all dead. I can ſee no light neither now, and yet I 'am certain I ſaw a candle burning but a moment be'fore. Well, I have heard of ſuch things.' 'What 'haſt thou heard of?' ſaid Jones. 'The people are 'either faſt aſleep, or probably, as this is a lonely 'place, are afraid to open their door.' He then began to vociferate pretty loudly, and at laſt an old woman opening an upper caſement, aſked, 'who they 'were, and what they wanted?' Jones anſwered, 'they were travellers who had loſt their way, and, 'having ſeen a light in the window, had been led thi'ther in hopes of finding ſome fire to warm them'ſelves.' 'Whoever you are,' cries the woman, 'you 'have no buſineſs here; nor ſhall I open the door to 'any body at this time of night.' Partridge, whom the ſound of a human voice had recovered from his fright, fell to the moſt earneſt ſupplications to be admitted for a few minutes to the fire, ſaying, 'he was 'almoſt dead with the cold,' to which fear had indeed contributed equally with the froſt. He aſſured her, that the gentleman who ſpoke to her, was one of the greateſt 'ſquires in the country; and made uſe of every argument ſave one, which Jones afterwards effectually added, and this was the promiſe of half a crown. A bribe too great to be reſiſted by ſuch a perſon, eſpecially as the genteel appearance of Jones, which the light of the moon plainly diſcovered to her, together with his affable behaviour, had entirely ſubdued thoſe apprehenſions of thieves which ſhe had at firſt conceived. She agreed, therefore, at laſt to let them in, where Partridge, to his infinite joy, found a good fire ready for his reception.

The poor fellow, however, had no ſooner warmed himſelf, than thoſe thoughts which were always uppermoſt in his mind, began a little to diſturb his brain. There

Digitized by Google

There was no article of his creed in which he had a ſtronger faith, than he had in witchcraft, nor can the reader conceive a figure more adapted to inſpire this idea, than the old woman who now ſtood before him. She anſwered exactly to that picture drawn by Otway in his Orphan. Indeed, if this woman had lived in the reign of James the Firſt, her appearance alone would have hanged her, almoſt without any evidence.

Many circumſtances likewiſe conſpired to confirm Partridge in his opinion. Her living, as he then imagined, by herſelf in ſo lonely a place; and in a houſe, the outſide of which ſeemed much too good for her; but its inſide was furniſhed in the moſt neat and elegant manner. To ſay the truth, Jones himſelf was not a little ſurpriſed at what he ſaw: for, beſides the extraordinary neatneſs of the room, it was adorned with a great number of nicknacks and curioſities, which might have engaged the attention of a virtuoſo.

While Jones was admiring theſe things, and Partridge ſat trembling with the firm belief that he was in the houſe of a witch, the old woman ſaid, 'I hope, 'gentlemen, you will make what haſte you can; for 'I expect my maſter preſently, and I would not for 'double the money he ſhould find you here.' 'Then 'you have a maſter,' cried Jones; 'indeed you will 'excuſe me, good woman, but I was ſurpriſed to ſee 'all thoſe fine things in your houſe.' 'Ah, Sir!' ſaid ſhe 'if the twentieth part of theſe things were 'mine, I ſhould think myſelf a rich woman; but 'pray, Sir, do not ſtay much longer: for I look for 'him in every minute.'—'Why ſure he would not be 'angry with you,' ſaid Jones, 'for doing a common 'act of charity.' 'Alack-a-day, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'he 'is a ſtrange man, not at all like other people. He 'keeps no company with any body, and ſeldom walks 'out but by night, for he doth not care to be ſeen; 'and all the country people are as much afraid of 'meeting him; for his dreſs is enough to frighten thoſe 'who are not uſed to it. They call him *the Man of the 'Hill* (for there he walks by night), and the coun-'try people are not, I believe, more afraid of the de-'vil himſelf. He would be terribly angry if he found

Digitized by Google

'you here.' 'Pray, Sir,' says Partridge, 'don't let 'us offend the gentleman, I am ready to walk, and 'was never warmer in my life.—Do, pray, Sir, let us 'go—here are pistols over the chimney; who knows 'whether they be charged or no, or what he may do 'with them?' 'Fear nothing, Partridge,' cries Jones, 'I will secure thee from danger.'—'Nay, for matter o' 'that, he never doth any mischief,' said the woman; 'but to be sure it is neeessary he should keep some 'arms for his own safety; for his house hath been be-'set more than once, and it is not many nights ago, 'that we thought we heard thieves about it: for my 'own part, I have often wondered that he is not mur-'dered by some villain or other, as he walks out by 'himself at such hours; but then, as I said, the peo-'ple are afraid of him, and besides, they think, I sup-'pose, he hath nothing about him worth taking.' 'I 'should imagine, by this collection of rarities,' cries Jones, 'that your master had been a traveller.' 'Yes, 'Sir,' answered she, 'he hath been a very great one; 'there be few gentlemen that know more of all mat-'ters than he; I fancy he hath been crost in love, or 'whatever it is, I know not, but I have lived with 'him above these thirty years, and in all that time he 'hath hardly spoke to six living people.' She then again solicited their departure, in which she was back-ed by Partridge; but Jones purposely protracted the time: for his curiosity was greatly raised to see this extraordinary person. Though the old woman there-fore, concluded every one of her answers with desiring him to be gone, and Partridge proceeded so far as to pull him by the sleeve, he still continued to invent new questions, till the old woman, with an affrighted coun-tenance, declared she heard her master's signal: and at the same instant more than one voice was heard with-out the door, crying, 'D—n your blood, shew us 'your money this instant. Your money, you villain, 'or we will blow your brains about your ears.'

'O, good Heaven!' cries the old woman, 'some 'villains, to be sure, have attacked my master. O la! 'what shall I do? what shall I do?' 'How,' cries Jones, 'how—are these pistols loaded?' 'O, good 'Sir,

Digitized by Google

'Sir, there is nothing in them, indeed—O, pray don't 'murder us, gentlemen.' (for in reality she now had the same opinion of those within, as she had of those without.) Jones made her no answer; but snatching an old broad-sword which hung in the room, he instantly sallied out, where he found the old gentleman struggling with two ruffians, and begging for mercy. Jones asked no questions, but fell so briskly to work with his broad-sword, that the fellows immediately quitted their hold; and, without offering to attack our hero, betook themselves to their heels, and made their escape; for he did not attempt to pursue them, being contented with having delivered the old gentleman; and indeed he concluded he had pretty well done their business: for both of them, as they ran off, cried out with bitter oaths, that they were dead men.

Jones presently ran to lift up the old gentleman, who had been thrown down in the scuffle, expressing at the same time great concern, lest he should have received any harm from the villains. The old man stared a moment at Jones, and then cried,—'No, Sir, no, I 'have very little harm, I thank you. Lord have mercy 'upon me!' 'I see, Sir,' said Jones, 'you are not 'free from apprehensions even of those who have had 'the happiness to be your deliverers; nor can I blame 'any suspicions which you may have; but indeed, 'you have no real occasion for any; here are none 'but your friends present. Having missed our way this 'cold night, we took the liberty of warming ourselves 'at your fire, whence we were just departing when 'we heard you call for assistance, which I must say, 'Providence alone seems to have sent you.' 'Provi-'dence indeed,' cries the old gentleman, 'if it be 'so.'—'So it is, I assure you,' cries Jones, 'here is 'your own sword, Sir. I have used it in your de-'fence, and I now return it into your own hand.' The old man having received the sword, which was stained with the blood of his enemies, looked stedfastly at Jones during some moments, and then, with a sigh, cried out, 'You will pardon me, young gentleman, I 'was not always of a suspicious temper, nor am I a 'friend to ingratitude.' 'Be thankful then,' cries

Digitized by Google

Jones, 'to that Providence to which you owe your deliverance; as to my part, I have only discharged the common duties of humanity, and what I would have done for any fellow creature in your situation.' 'Let me look at you a little longer,' cries the old gentleman—'You are a human creature then?—Well, perhaps you are. Come, pray walk into my little hut. You have been my deliverer indeed.'

The old woman was distracted between the fears which she had of her master, and for him; and Partridge was, if possible, in a greater fright. The former of these, however, when she heard her master speak kindly to Jones, and perceived what had happened, came again to herself; but Partridge no sooner saw the gentleman, than the strangeness of his dress infused greater terrors into that poor fellow, than he had before felt either from the strange description which he had heard, or from the uproar which had happened at the door.

To say the truth, it was an appearance which might have affected a more constant mind than that of Mr Partridge. This person was of the tallest size, with a long beard as white as snow. His body was clothed with the skin of an ass, made something into the form of a coat. He wore likewise boots on his legs, and a cap on his head, both composed of the skin of some other animals.

As soon as the old gentleman came into his house, the old woman began her congratulations on his happy escape from the ruffians. 'Yes,' cried he, 'I have escaped indeed, thanks to my preserver.' 'O the blessing on him,' answered she, 'he is a good gentleman, I warrant him. I was afraid your worship would have been angry with me for letting him in; and to be certain I should not have done it, had not I seen by the moon-light, that he was a gentleman, and almost frozen to death. And to be certain it must have been some good angel that sent him hither, and tempted me to do it.'

'I am afraid, Sir,' said the old gentleman to Jones, 'that I have nothing in this house which you can either eat or drink, unless you will accept a dram of brandy;

Digitized by Google

'dy; of which I can give you some most excellent, 'and which I have had by me these thirty years.' Jones declined this offer in a very civil and proper speech, and then the other asked him, 'Whither he 'was travelling when he missed his way;' saying, 'I must 'own myself surprised to see such a person as you ap- 'pear to be journeying on foot at this time of night. 'I suppose, Sir, you are a gentleman of these parts; 'for you do not look like one who is used to travel 'far without horses.'

'Appearances,' cried Jones, 'are often deceitful; 'men sometimes look like what they are not. I as- 'sure you I am not of this country, and whither I 'am travelling, in reality I scarce know myself.'

'Whoever you are, or whithersoever you are go- 'ing,' answered the old man, 'I have obligations to 'you which I can never return.'

'I once more,' replied Jones, 'affirm, that you 'have none; for there can be no merit in having 'hazarded that in your service on which I set no va- 'lue. And nothing is so contemptible in my eyes as 'life.'

'I am sorry, young gentleman,' answered the stranger, 'that you have any reason to be so unhap- 'py at your years.'

'Indeed I am, Sir,' answered Jones, 'the most un- 'happy of mankind.'—'Perhaps you have had a 'friend, or a mistress,' replied the other. 'How 'could you,' cries Jones, 'mention two words suffi- 'cient to drive me to distraction?' 'Either of them 'are enough to drive any man to distraction,' an- swered the old man. 'I inquire no farther, Sir. 'Perhaps my curiosity hath led me too far already.'

'Indeed, Sir,' cries Jones, 'I cannot censure a pas- 'sion, which I feel at this instant in the highest de- 'gree. You will pardon me, when I assure you, that 'every thing which I have seen or heard since I first 'entered this house, hath conspired to raise the great- 'est curiosity in me. Something very extraordinary 'must have determined you to this course of life, 'and I have reason to fear your own history is not 'without misfortunes.'

Digitized by Google

Here the old gentleman again ſighed, and remained ſilent for ſome minutes; at laſt, looking earneſtly on Jones, he ſaid, 'I have read that a good countenance 'is a letter of recommendation; if ſo, none ever can 'be more ſtrongly recommended than yourſelf. If I 'did not feel ſome yearnings towards you from ano-'ther conſideration, I muſt be the moſt ungrateful 'monſter upon earth; and I am really concerned it is 'no otherwiſe in my power, than by words, to con-'vince you of my gratitude.'

Jones, after a moment's hefitation, anſwered, 'That 'it was in his power by words to gratify him ex-'tremely. I have confeſſed a curioſity,' ſaid he, 'Sir; 'need I ſay how much obliged I ſhall be to you, if 'you would condeſcend to gratify it? Will you ſuffer 'me therefore to beg, unleſs ſome conſideration re-'ſtrains you, that you would be pleaſed to acquaint 'me what motives have induced you thus to withdraw 'from the ſociety of mankind, and to betake yourſelf 'to a courſe of life to which it ſufficiently appears you 'were not born?'

'I ſcarce think myſelf at liberty to refuſe you any-'thing, after what hath happened,' replied the old man; 'if you deſire therefore to hear the ſtory of an 'unhappy man, I will relate it to you. Indeed you 'judge rightly, in thinking there is commonly ſome-'thing extraordinary in the fortunes of thoſe who fly 'from ſociety: for however it may ſeem a paradox, 'or even a contradiction, certain it is that great phi-'lanthropy chiefly inclines us to avoid and deteſt 'mankind; not on account ſo much of their private 'and ſelfiſh vices, but for thoſe of a relative kind; 'ſuch as envy, malice, treachery, cruelty, with every 'other ſpecies of malevolence. Theſe are the vices 'which true philanthropy abhors, and which rather 'than ſee and converſe with, ſhe avoids ſociety itſelf. 'However, without a compliment to you, you do 'not appear to me one of thoſe whom I ſhould ſhun 'or deteſt; nay, I muſt ſay, in what little hath dropt 'from you, there appears ſome parity in our for-'tunes; I hope however yours will conclude more 'ſucceſsfully.'

Here

Digitized by Google

Here some compliment passed between our hero and his host, and then the latter was going to begin his history, when Partridge interrupted him. His apprehensions had now pretty well left him; but some effects of his terrors remained; he therefore reminded the gentleman of that excellent brandy which he had mentioned. This was presently brought, and Partridge swallowed a large bumper.

The gentleman then, without any farther preface, began as you may read in the next chapter.

CHAP. XI.

In which the Man of the Hill begins to relate his history.

'I Was born in a village of Somersetshire, called Mark, in the year 1637; my father was one of 'those whom they call gentlemen farmers. He had 'a little estate of about 300 l. a year of his own, and 'rented another estate of near the same value. He 'was prudent and industrious, and so good a hus-'bandman, that he might have led a very easy and 'comfortable life, had not an arrogant vixen of a wife 'soured his domestic quiet. But though this circum-'stance perhaps made him miserable, it did not make 'him poor: for he confined her almost entirely at 'home, and rather chose to bear eternal upbraidings 'in his own house, than to injure his fortune by in-'dulging her in the extravagancies she desired a-'broad.

'By this Xantippe' (so was the wife of Socrates 'called, said Partridge) 'By this Xantippe he had 'two sons, of which I was the younger. He de-'signed to give us both good education; but my 'elder brother, who, unhappily for him, was the 'favourite of my mother, utterly neglected his learn-'ing; insomuch that after having been five or six 'years at school with little or no improvement, my 'father being told by his master, that it would be to 'no purpose to keep him longer there, at last com-'plied with my mother in taking him home from the 'hands of that tyrant, as she called his master;

'though indeed he gave the lad much leſs correction 'than his idleneſs deſerved, but much more, it ſeems, 'than the young gentleman liked, who conſtantly 'complained to his mother of his ſevere treatment, 'and ſhe as conſtantly gave him a hearing.

"Yes, yes," cries Partridge, "I have ſeen ſuch "mothers, I have been abuſed myſelf by them, and "very unjuſtly; ſuch parents deſerve correction as "much as their children."

Jones chid the pedagogue for his interruption, and then the ſtranger proceeded. 'My brother now, 'at the age of fifteen, bid adieu to all learning, and 'to every thing elſe but to his dog and gun, with 'which latter he became ſo expert, that, though 'perhaps you may think it incredible, he could not 'only hit a ſtanding mark with great certainty, but 'hath actually ſhot a crow as it was flying in the air. 'He was likewiſe excellent at finding a hare ſitting, 'and was ſoon reputed one of the beſt ſportſmen in 'the country. A reputation which both he and his 'mother enjoyed as much as if he had been thought 'the fineſt ſcholar.

'The ſituation of my brother made me at firſt 'think my lot the harder, in being continued at 'ſchool; but I ſoon changed my opinion; for as I 'advanced pretty faſt in learning, my labours be-'came eaſy, and my exerciſe ſo delightful, that holi-'days were my moſt unpleaſant time: for my mo-'ther, who never loved me, now apprehending that 'I had the greater ſhare of my father's affection, 'and finding, or at leaſt thinking, that I was more 'taken notice of by ſome gentlemen of learning, and 'particularly by the parſon of the pariſh, than my 'brother, ſhe now hated my ſight, and made home ſo 'diſagreeable to me, that what is called by ſchool-'boys Black Monday, was to me the whiteſt in the 'whole year.

'Having, at length, gone through the ſchool at 'Taunton, I was thence removed to Exeter college 'in Oxford, where I remained four years; at the end 'of which, an accident took me off entirely from my 'ſtudies;

Digitized by Google

'studies; and hence I may truly date the rise of all 'which happened to me afterwards in life.

'There was at the same college with myself one 'Sir George Gresham, a young fellow who was en- 'titled to a very considerable fortune; which he was 'not, by the will of his father, to come into full pos- 'session of, till he arrived at the age of twenty-five. 'However, the liberality of his guardians gave him 'little cause to regret the abundant caution of his fa- 'ther: for they allowed him five hundred pound a- 'year while he remained at the university, where he 'kept his horses and his whore, and lived as wicked 'and as profligate a life, as he could have done, had he 'been never so entirely master of his fortune; for be- 'sides the five hundred a-year which he received from 'his guardians, he found means to spend a thousand 'more. He was above the age of twenty-one, and 'had no difficulty in gaining what credit he pleased.

'This young fellow, among many other tolerable 'bad qualities, had one very diabolical. He had a 'great delight in destroying and ruining the youth 'of inferior fortune, by drawing them into expences 'which they could not afford so well as himself; and 'the better, and worthier, and soberer, any young 'man was, the greater pleasure and triumph had he 'in his destruction; thus acting the character which 'is recorded of the devil, and going about seeking 'whom he might devour.

'It was my misfortune to fall into an acquaintance 'and intimacy with this gentleman. My reputation of 'diligence in my studies made me a desirable object of 'his mischievous intention; and my own inclination 'made it sufficiently easy for him to effect his pur- 'pose: for though I had applied myself with much in- 'dustry to books, in which I took great delight, there 'were other pleasures in which I was capable of ta- 'king much greater; for I was high-mettled, had a 'violent flow of animal spirits, was a little ambitious, 'and extremely amorous.

'I had not long contracted an intimacy with Sir 'George, before I became a partaker of all his plea- 'sures; and when I was once entered on that scene,

'neither

Digitized by Google

'neither my inclination nor my ſpirit, would ſuffer 'me to play an under part. I was ſecond to none of 'the company in any acts of debauchery; nay, I ſoon 'diſtinguiſhed myſelf ſo notably in all riots and diſor- 'ders, that my name generally ſtood firſt in the roll of 'delinquents; and inſtead of being lamented as the 'unfortunate pupil of Sir George, I was now accuſed 'as the perſon who had miſled and debauched that 'hopeful young gentleman; for though he was the 'ringleader and promoter of all the miſchief, he was 'never ſo conſidered I fell at laſt under the cenſure 'of the vice-chancellor, and very narrowly eſcaped 'expulſion.

'You will eaſily believe, Sir, that ſuch a life as I 'am now deſcribing muſt be incompatible with my 'further progreſs in learning; and that in proportion 'as I addicted myſelf more and more to looſe plea- 'ſure, I muſt grow more and more remiſs in applica- 'tion to my ſtudies. This was truly the conſequence; 'but this was not all. My expences now greatly ex- 'ceeded not only my former income, but thoſe addi- 'tions which I extorted from my poor generous fa- 'ther, on pretences of ſums being neceſſary for prepa- 'ring for my approaching degree of bachelor of arts. 'Theſe demands, however, grew at laſt ſo frequent 'and exorbitant, that my father, by ſlow degrees, 'opened his ears to the accounts which he received 'from many quarters of my preſent behaviour, and 'which my mother failed not to echo very faithfully, 'and loudly; adding, 'Ay, this is the fine gentle- "man, the ſcholar who doth ſo much honour to his "family, and is to be the making of it. I thought "what all this learning would come to. He is to be "the ruin of us all, I find, after his elder brother "hath been denied neceſſaries for his ſake, to perfect "his education forſooth, for which he was to pay us "ſuch intereſt; I thought what the intereſt would "come to;' with much more of the ſame kind; but 'I have, I believe ſatisfied you with this taſte.

'My father therefore began now to return remon- 'ſtrances, inſtead of money, to my demands, which

'brought

Digitized by Google

'brought my affairs perhaps a little ſooner to a cri-
'ſis; but had he remitted me his whole income, you
'will imagine it could have ſufficed a very ſhort time
'to ſupport one who kept pace with the expences of
'Sir George Greſham.

'It is more than poſſible, that the diſtreſs I was
'now in for money, and the impracticability of going
'on in this manner, might have reſtored me at once
'to my ſenſes and to my ſtudies, had I opened my
'eyes, before I became involved in debts, from which
'I ſaw no hopes of ever extricating myſelf. This was
'indeed the great art of Sir George, and by which
'he accompliſhed the ruin of many, whom he after-
'wards laughed at as fools and coxcombs, for vying,
'as he called it, with a man of his fortune. To bring
'this about he would now and then advance a little
'money himſelf, in order to ſupport the credit of the
'unfortunate youth with other people; till, by
'means of that very credit, he was irretrievably un-
'done.

'My mind being, by theſe means, grown as deſ-
'perate as my fortune, there was ſcarce a wickedneſs
'which I did not meditate, in order for my relief.'
'Self-murder itſelf became the ſubject of my ſerious
'deliberation; and I had certainly reſolved on it,
'had not a more ſhameful, though perhaps leſs ſinful
'thought expelled it from my head.' Here he heſi-
tated a moment, and then cried out, 'I proteſt, ſo
'many years have not waſhed away the ſhame of
'this act, and I ſhall bluſh while I relate it.' Jones
deſired him to paſs over any thing that might give
him pain in the relation; but Partridge eagerly cried
out, 'O pray, Sir, let us hear this; I had rather
'hear this than all the reſt; as I hope to be ſaved, I
'will never mention a word of it.' Jones was going
to rebuke him, but the ſtranger prevented it, by pro-
ceeding thus: 'I had a chum, a very prudent, fru-
'gal young lad, who, though he had no very large
'allowance, had by his parſimony, heaped up upwards
'of forty guineas, which I knew he kept in his eſcru-
'tore. I took therefore an opportunity of purloin-
'ing his key from his breeches pocket while he was
'aſleep,

Digitized by Google

'asleep, and thus made myself master of all his 'riches. After which I again conveyed his key into 'his pocket, and counterfeiting sleep, though I never 'once closed my eyes, lay in bed till after he arose 'and went to prayers, an exercise to which I had long 'been unaccustomed.

'Timorous thieves, by extreme caution, often sub-'ject themselves to discoveries, which those of a bold-'er kind escape. Thus it happened to me; for had 'I boldly broke open his escrutore, I had, perhaps, 'escaped even his suspicion; but as it was plain that 'the person who robbed him had possessed himself of 'his key, he had no doubt, when he first missed his 'money, but that his chum was certainly the thief. 'Now as he was of a fearful disposition, and much 'my inferior in strength, and, I believe, in courage, 'he did not dare to confront me with my guilt, for 'fear of worse bodily consequences, which might hap-'pen to him. He repaired therefore immediately 'to the vice-chancellor, and, upon swearing to the 'robbery, and to the circumstances of it, very easily 'obtained a warrant against one who had now so bad 'a character through the whole university.

'Luckily for me I lay out of the college the next 'evening; for that day I attended a young lady in a 'chaise to Whitney, where we staid all night: and 'in our return the next morning to Oxford, I met 'one of my cronies, who acquainted me with suffici-'ent news concerning myself to make me turn my 'horse another way.'

'Pray, Sir, did he mention any thing of the war-'rant?' said Partridge. But Jones begged the gen-tleman to proceed, without regarding any imperti-nent questions; which he did as follows.

'Having now abandoned all thoughts of return-'ing to Oxford, the next thing which offered itself 'was a journey to London. I imparted this inten-'tion to my female companion, who at first remon-'strated against it; but upon producing my wealth, 'she immediately consented. We then struck across 'the country into the great Cirencester road, and

'made

Digitized by Google

'made such haste, that we spent the next evening '(save one) in London.

'When you consider the place where I now was, 'and the company with whom I was, you will, I 'fancy, conceive that a very short time brought me 'to an end of that sum of which I had so iniquitously 'possessed myself.

'I was now reduced to a much higher degree of 'distress than before; the necessaries of life began to 'be numbered among my wants; and what made 'my case still the more grievous, was, that my 'paramour, of whom I was now grown immode-'rately fond, shared the same distresses with myself. 'To see a woman you love in distress; to be unable 'to relieve her, and at the same time to reflect that 'you have brought her into this situation, is, per-'haps, a curse of which no imagination can repre-'sent the horrors to those who have not felt it.' 'I believe it from my soul,' cries Jones; 'and I 'pity you from the bottom of my heart.' He then took two or three disorderly turns about the room, and at last begged pardon, and flung himself into his chair, crying, 'I thank Heaven I have escaped 'that.'

'This circumstance,' continued the gentleman, 'so severely aggravated the horrors of my present 'situation, that they became absolutely intolerable. 'I could with less pain endure the raging of my own 'natural unsatisfied appetites, even hunger or thirst, 'than I could submit to leave ungratified the most 'whimsical desires of a woman, on whom I so ex-'travagantly doated, that, though I knew she had 'been the mistress of half my acquaintance, I firmly 'intended to marry her. But the good creature was 'unwilling to consent to an action which the world 'might think so much to my disadvantage. And 'as possibly she compassionated the daily anxieties 'which she must have perceived me suffer on her 'account, she resolved to put an end to my distress. 'She soon indeed found means to relieve me from 'my troublesome and perplexed situation: for while 'I was distracted with various inventions to supply

'her

Digitized by Google

her with pleaſures, ſhe very kindly——betrayed me to one of her former lovers at Oxford, by whoſe care and diligence I was immediately apprehended and committed to gaol.

'Here I firſt began ſeriouſly to reflect on the miſcarriages of my former life; on the errors I had been guilty of; on the misfortunes which I had brought on myſelf; and on the grief which I muſt have occaſioned to one of the beſt of fathers. When I added to all theſe the perfidy of my miſtreſs, ſuch was the horror of my mind, that life, inſtead of being longer deſireable, grew the object of my abhorrence; and I could have gladly embraced death, as my deareſt friend, if it had offered itſelf to my choice unattended by ſhame.'

'The time of the aſſizes ſoon came, and I was removed by Habeas Corpus to Oxford, where I expected certain conviction and condemnation; but to my great ſurprize, none appeared againſt me, and I was, at the end of the ſeſſions, diſcharged for want of proſecution. In ſhort, my chum had left Oxford, and whether from indolence, or from what other motive, I am ignorant, had declined concerning himſelf any farther in the affair.'

'Perhaps,' cries Partridge, 'he did not care to have your blood upon his hands, and he was in the right on't. If any perſon was to be hanged upon my evidence, I ſhould never be able to ly alone afterwards, for fear of ſeeing his ghoſt.'

'I ſhall ſhortly doubt, Partridge,' ſays Jones, 'whether thou art more brave or wiſe.' 'You may laugh at me, Sir, if you pleaſe,' anſwered Partridge, 'but if you will hear a very ſhort ſtory which I can tell, and which is moſt certainly true, perhaps you may change your opinion. In the pariſh where I was born——' Here Jones would have ſilenced him, but the ſtranger interceded that he might be permitted to tell his ſtory, and in the mean time promiſed to recollect the remainder of his own.

Partridge then proceeded thus: 'In the pariſh where I was born, there lived a farmer whoſe name was *Bridle*, and he had a ſon named *Francis*, a good

Digitized by Google

'hopeful young fellow: I was at the grammar ſchool 'with him, where I remember he was got into Ovid's 'Epiſtles, and he could conſtrue you three lines to-'gether ſometimes without looking into a dictionary. 'Beſides all this, he was a very good lad, never miſ-'ſed church o' Sundays, and was reckoned one of 'the beſt pſalm-ſingers in the whole pariſh. He 'would indeed now and then take a cup too much, 'and that was the only fault he had.——'Well, 'but come to the ghoſt,' cries Jones. 'Never fear, 'Sir, I ſhall come to him ſoon enough,' anſwered Partridge. 'You muſt know then, that farmer 'Bridle loſt a mare, a ſorrel one to the beſt of my 'remembrance; and ſo it fell out that this young 'Francis ſhortly afterward being at a fair at Hindon, 'and as I think it was on—I can't remember the 'day; and being as he was, what ſhould he happen 'to meet, but a man upon his father's mare. Frank 'called out preſently, Stop thief; and it being in the 'middle of the fair, it was impoſſible, you know, 'for the man to make his eſcape. So they appre-'hended him, and carried him before the juſtice; I 'remember it was Juſtice Willoughby of Noyle, a 'very worthy good gentleman, and he committed 'him to priſon, and bound Frank in a recognizance, 'I think they call it, a hard word compounded of '*re* and *cognoſco*: but it differs in its meaning from 'the uſe of the ſimple, as many other compounds do. 'Well, at laſt, down came my Lord Juſtice Page to 'hold the aſſizes, and ſo the fellow was had up, 'and Frank was had up as a witneſs. To be ſure I 'ſhall never forget the face of the judge, when he 'began to aſk him what he had to ſay againſt the 'priſoner. He made poor Frank tremble and ſhake 'in his ſhoes. 'Well, you fellow,' ſays my Lord, "what have you to ſay? Don't ſtand humming and "hawing but ſpeak out;' but however he ſoon turn-'ed altogether as civil to Frank, and began to thun-'der at the fellow; and when he aſked him, if he 'had any thing to ſay for himſelf, the fellow ſaid he 'had found the horſe. 'Ay!' anſwered the judge, "thou art a lucky fellow; I have travelled the circuit

"these forty years, and never found a horse in my "life; but I'll tell thee what, friend, thou wast "more lucky than thou didst know of: for thou didst "not only find a horse, but a halter too, I promise "thee.' To be sure I shall never forget the word. 'Upon which every body fell a laughing, as how 'could they help it! Nay, and twenty other jests 'he made, which I can't remember now. There 'was something about his skill in horse flesh, which 'made all the folks laugh. To be certain the judge 'must have been a very brave man, as well as a man 'of much learning. It is indeed charming sport to 'hear trials upon life and death. One thing I own 'I thought a little hard, that the prisoner's counsel 'was not suffered to speak for him though he desired 'only to be heard one very short word; but my Lord 'would not hearken to him, though he suffered a 'counsellor to talk against him for above half an hour. 'I thought it hard, I own, that there should be so 'many of them; my Lord, and the court, and the 'jury, and the counsellors, and the witnesses, all up-'on one poor man, and he too in chains. Well, 'the fellow was hanged, as to be sure it could be no 'otherwise, and poor Frank could never be easy 'about it, he never was in the dark alone, but he 'fancied he saw the fellow's spirit.' 'Well, and is 'this thy story?' cries Jones. 'No, no,' answered Partridge; 'O Lord have mercy upon me!—I am 'just now coming to the matter; for one night, com-'ing from the alehouse in a long narrow dark lane, 'there he ran directly up against him, and the spirit 'was all in white, and fell upon Frank; and Frank, 'who is a sturdy lad, fell upon the spirit again, and 'there they had a tussel together, and poor Frank 'was dreadfully beat; indeed he made a shift at last 'to crawl home; but what with the beating and 'what with the fright, he lay ill above a fortnight; 'and all this is most certainly true, and the whole 'parish will bear witness to it.'

The stranger smiled at this story, and Jones burst into a loud fit of laughter, upon which Partridge cried, 'Ay, you may laugh, Sir, and so did some others, 'parti-

Digitized by Google

'perſon who ſo ſaluted me, to have been my fellow-'collegiate; one who had left the univerſity above a 'year, and long before any of my misfortunes had 'befallen me. This gentleman, whoſe name was *Watſon*, ſhook me heartily by the hand, and ex-'preſſing great joy at meeting me, propoſed our im-'mediately drinking a bottle together. I firſt de-'clined the propoſal, and pretended buſineſs; but as 'he was very earneſt and preſſing, hunger at laſt 'overcame my pride, and I fairly confeſſed to him I 'had no money in my pocket; yet not without fram-'ing a lye for an excuſe, and imputing it to my ha-'ving changed my breeches that morning. Mr Wat-'ſon anſwered, 'I thought Jack, you and I had been '"too old acquaintance for you to mention ſuch a '"matter." He then took me by the arm, and was 'pulling me along; but I gave him very little trou-'ble, for my own inclinations pulled me much ſtrong-'er than he could do.

'We then went into the Friars, which you know 'is the ſcene of all mirth and jollity. Here, when we 'arrived at the tavern, Mr Watſon applied himſelf 'to the drawer only, without taking the leaſt notice 'of the cook; for he had no ſuſpicion but that I had 'dined long ſince. However, as the caſe was really 'otherwiſe, I forged another falſehood, and told my 'companion, I had been at the further end of the city 'on buſineſs of conſequence, and had ſnapt up a mut-'ton chop in haſte; ſo that I was again hungry, and 'wiſhed he would add a beef-ſteak to his bottle.' 'Some people,' cries Partridge, 'ought to have 'good memories, or did you find juſt money enough 'in your breeches to pay for the mutton chop?' 'Your obſervation is right,' anſwered the ſtranger, 'and I believe ſuch blunders are inſeparable from all 'dealing in untruth.—But to proceed.—I began 'now to feel myſelf extremely happy. The meat and 'wine ſoon revived my ſpirits to a high pitch, and I 'enjoyed much pleaſure in the converſation of my 'old acquaintance, the rather as I thought him en-'tirely ignorant of what had happened at the uni-'verſity ſince his leaving it.

Digitized by Google

'But he did not suffer me to remain long in this 'agreeable delusion; for taking a bumper in one 'hand, and holding me by the other, 'Here, my "boy,' cries he, 'here's wishing you joy of your "being so honourably acquitted of that affair laid to "your charge.' I was thunder-struck with confu- 'sion at those words, which Watson observing, pro- 'ceeded thus——'Nay, never be ashamed, man; "thou hast been acquitted, and no one now dares "call thee guilty; but prithee do tell me, who am "thy friend. I hope thou didst really rob him; for "rat me if it was not a meritorious action to strip "such a sneaking pitiful rascal, and instead of the "two hundred guineas, I wish you had taken as "many thousands. Come, come, my boy, don't be "shy of confessing to me; you are not now brought "before one of the pimps. D—n me, if I don't "honour you for it; for, as I hope for salvation, I "would have made no manner of scruple of doing "the same thing.'

'This declaration a little relieved my abashment, 'and as wine had now somewhat opened my heart, 'I very freely acknowledged the robbery, but ac- 'quainted him that he had been misinformed as to 'the sum taken, which was little more than a fifth 'part of what he had mentioned.'

"I am sorry for it with all my heart,' quoth he, "and I wish thee better success another time. Tho' "if you will take my advice, you shall have no oc- "casion to run any such risk. Here,' said he, 'taking some dice out of his pocket), 'here's the "stuff. Here are the implements; here are the little "doctors which cure the distempers of the purse. "Follow but my counsel, and I will shew you a way "to empty the pocket of a queer cull, without any "danger of the nubbing cheat.'

'Nubbing cheat,' cries Partridge, 'pray, Sir, 'what is that?'

'Why that, Sir,' says the stranger, 'is a cant- 'phrase for the gallows; for as gamesters differ little 'from highwaymen in their morals, so do they very 'much resemble them in their language.

'We

Digitized by Google

'particularly a 'squire, who is thought to be no bet-
'ter than an atheist; who forsooth, because there
'was a calf with a white face found dead in the same
'lane the next morning, would fain have it, that
'the battle was between Frank and that, as if a calf
'would set upon a man. Besides, Frank told me he
'knew it to be a spirit, and could swear to him in
'any court in Christendom, and he had not drank
'above a quart or two, or such a matter of liquor
'at the time. Lud have mercy upon us, and keep
'us all from dipping our hands in blood, I say.'

'Well, Sir,' said Jones to the stranger, 'Mr Par-
'tridge hath finished his story, and I hope will give
'you no future interruption, if you will be so kind
'to proceed.' He then resumed his narration; but as he hath taken breath for a while, we think it proper to give it to our reader, and shall therefore put an end to this chapter.

CHAP. XII.

In which the Man of the Hill continues his history.

'I HAD now regained my liberty,' said the stranger, 'but I had lost my reputation; for there
'is a wide difference between the case of a man who
'is barely acquitted of a crime in a court of justice,
'and of him who is acquitted in his own heart, and
'in the opinion of the people. I was conscious of
'my guilt, and ashamed to look any one in the face,
'so resolved to leave Oxford the next morning, before
'the day-light discovered me to the eyes of any be-
'holders.

'When I had got clear of the city, it first entered
'into my head to return home to my father, and en-
'deavour to obtain his forgiveness; but as I had no
'reason to doubt his knowledge of all which had past,
'and as I was well assured of his great aversion to
'all acts of dishonesty, I could entertain no hopes of
'being received by him, especially since I was too
'certain of all the good offices in the power of my
'mother: nay, had my father's pardon been as sure,

Digitized by Google

'as I conceived his resentment to be, I yet question 'whether I could have had the assurance to behold 'him, or whether I could, upon any terms, have 'submitted to live and converse with those, who, I 'was convinced, knew me to have been guilty of so 'base an action.

'I hastened therefore back to London, the best re- 'tirement of either grief or shame, unless for persons 'of a very public character; for here you have the ad- 'vantage of solitude without its disadvantage, since 'you may be alone and in company at the same time; 'and while you walk or sit unobserved, noise, hurry, 'and a constant succession of objects entertain the 'mind, and prevent the spirits from preying on them- 'selves, or rather on grief or shame, which are the 'most unwholesome diet in the world; and on which '(though there are many who never taste either but 'in public), there are some who can feed very plen- 'tifully, and very fatally when alone.

'But as there is scarce any human good without 'its concomitant evil, so there are people who find 'an inconvenience in this unobserving temper of man- 'kind; I mean persons who have no money; for as 'you are not put out of countenance, so neither are 'you cloathed or fed by those who do not know you. 'And a man may be as easily starved in Leadenhall- 'market as in the deserts of Arabia.

'It was at present my fortune to be destitute of that 'great evil, as it is apprehended to be by several 'writers, who I suppose were over-burthened with it, 'namely, Money.' 'With submission, Sir,' said Partridge, 'I do not remember any writers who have 'called it *Malorum*; but *irritamenta Malorum. Ef- 'fodiuntur opes irritamenta Malorum.*' 'Well, Sir,' continued the stranger, 'whether it be an evil, or 'only the cause of evil, I was entirely void of it, 'and at the same time of friends, and as I thought 'of acquaintance; when one evening as I was passing 'through the Inner Temple, very hungry, and very 'miserable, I heard a voice on a sudden hailing me 'with great familiarity by my Christian name; and 'upon my turning about, I presently recollected the

'person

Digitized by Google

'glaſs, while they plied heartily two young fellows, 'who were to be afterwards pillaged, as indeed they 'were without mercy. Of this plunder I had the 'good fortune to be a ſharer, though I was not yet 'let into the ſecret.

'There was one remarkable accident attended this 'tavern play; for the money, by degrees, totally diſ-'appeared, ſo that though at the beginning the table 'was half covered with gold, yet before the play 'ended, which it did not till the next day, being Sun-'day at noon, there was ſcarce a ſingle guinea to be 'ſeen on the table; and this was the ſtranger, as eve-'ry perſon preſent except myſelf declared he had loſt; 'and what was become of the money, unleſs the de-'vil himſelf carried it away, is difficult to determine.'

'Moſt certainly he did,' ſays Partridge, 'for 'evil ſpirits can carry away any thing without being 'ſeen, though there were never ſo many folk in the 'room; and I ſhould not have been ſurpriſed if he 'had carried away all the company of a ſet of wicked 'wretches, who were at play in ſermon-time. And 'I could tell you a true ſtory if I would, where the 'devil took a man out of bed from another man's 'wife, and carried him away through the key-hole 'of the door. I've ſeen the very houſe where it was 'done, and no body hath lived in it theſe thirty 'years.'

Though Jones was a little offended by the impertinence of Partridge, he could not however avoid ſmiling at his ſimplicity. The ſtranger did the ſame, and then proceeded with his ſtory, as will be ſeen in the next chapter.

CHAP. XIII.

In which the foregoing ſtory is farther continued.

'MY fellow collegiate had now entered me in a 'new ſcene of life. I ſoon became acquainted 'with the whole fraternity of ſharpers, and was let 'into their ſecrets. I mean into the knowledge of 'thoſe groſs cheats which are proper to impoſe upon 'the

Digitized by Google

'the raw and unexperienced: for there are ſome tricks
'of a finer kind, which are known only to a few of
'the gang, who are at the head of their profeſſion;
'a degree of honour beyond my expectation; for
'drink, to which I was immoderately addicted, and
'the natural warmth of my paſſions, prevented me
'from arriving at any great ſucceſs in an art, which
'requires as much coolneſs as the moſt auſtere ſchool
'of philoſophy.

'Mr Watſon, with whom I now lived in the cloſeſt
'amity, had unluckily the former failing to a very
'great exceſs; ſo that inſtead of making a fortune by
'his profeſſion, as ſome others did, he was alternately
'rich and poor, and was often obliged to ſurrender to
'his cooler friends over a bottle, which they never
'taſted, that plunder that he had taken from culls at
'the public table

'However, we both made a ſhift to pick up an un-
'comfortable livelihood, and for two years I con-
'tinued of the calling, during which time I taſted all
'the varieties of fortune: ſometimes flouriſhing in
'affluance, and at others being obliged to ſtruggle with
'almoſt incredible difficulties. To-day wallowing in
'luxury, and to-morrow reduced to the coarſeſt and
'moſt homely fare; my fine cloaths being often on
'my back in the evening, and at the pawnſhop the
'next morning

'One night as I was returning pennyleſs from the
'gaming table, I obſerved a very great diſturbance,
'and a large mob gathered together in the ſtreet. As
'I was in no danger from pickpockets, I ventured
'into the croud, where, upon enquiry, I found that
'a man had been robbed and very ill uſed by ſome
'ruffians. The wounded man appeared very bloody,
'and ſeemed ſcarce able to ſupport himſelf on his
'legs. As I had not therefore been deprived of my
'humanity by my preſent life and converſation, though
'they had left me very little of either honeſty or
'ſhame, I immediately offered my aſſiſtance to the un-
'happy perſon, who thankfully accepted it, and put-
'ting himſelf under my conduct, begged me to con-
'vey him to ſome tavern, where he might ſend for a

'ſur-

Digitized by Google

'We had now each drank our bottle, when Mr 'Watſon ſaid, the board was ſitting, and that he 'muſt attend, earneſtly preſſing me, at the ſame time, 'to go with him and try my fortune. I anſwered, he 'knew that was at preſent out of my power, as I 'had informed him of the emptineſs of my pocket. 'To ſay the truth, I doubted not, from his many 'ſtrong expreſſions of friendſhip, but that he would 'offer to lend me a ſmall ſum for that purpoſe; but 'he anſwered, 'Never mind that, man, e'en boldly "run a levant;' (Partridge was going to enquire the meaning of that word; but Jones ſtopped his mouth;) 'but be circumſpect as to the man. I will "tip you the proper perſon, which may be neceſſary, "as you do not know the town, nor can diſtinguiſh "a rum cull from a queer one.'

'The bill was now brought, when Watſon paid 'his ſhare, and was departing. I reminded him, 'not without bluſhing, of my having no money.' 'He anſwered, 'That ſignifies nothing, ſcore it be-"hind the door, or make a bold bruſh, and take no "notice—Or—ſtay, ſays he, I will go down ſtairs "firſt, and then do you take up my money, and ſcore "the whole reckoning at the bar, and I will wait for "you at the corner.' I expreſſed ſome diſlike at 'this, and hinted my expectation that he would have 'depoſited the whole; but he ſwore he had not ano-'ther ſixpence in his pocket.

'He then went down, and I was prevailed on to 'take up the money and follow him, which I did 'cloſe enough to hear him tell the drawer the rec-'koning was upon the table. The drawer paſſed by 'me up ſtairs; but I made ſuch haſte into the ſtreet, 'that I heard nothing of his diſappointment, nor 'did I mention a ſyllable at the bar, according to 'my inſtructions.

'We now went directly to the gaming-table, where 'Mr Watſon to my ſurprize, pulled out a large ſum 'of money, and placed it before him, as did many 'others; all of them, no doubt, conſidering their 'own heaps as ſo many decoy birds, which were to 'intice and draw over the heaps of their neighbours.

'Here

Digitized by Google

'Here it would be tedious to relate all the freaks 'which fortune, or rather the dice, played in this 'her temple. Mountains of gold were in a few mo- 'ments reduced to nothing at one part of the table, 'and rose as suddenly in another. The rich grew in 'a moment poor, and the poor as suddenly became 'rich: so that it seemed a philosopher could no where 'have so well instructed his pupils in the contempt of 'riches, at least he could no where have better incul- 'cated the incertainty of their duration.

'For my own part, after having considerably im- 'proved my small estate, I at last entirely demolished 'it. Mr Watson too, after much variety of luck, 'rose from the table in some heat, and declared he 'had lost a cool hundred, and would play no longer. 'Then coming up to me, he asked me to return with 'him to the tavern; but I positively refused, saying, 'I would not bring myself a second time into such a 'dilemma, and especially as he had lost all his mo- 'ney, and was now in my own condition. 'Pooh,' 'says he, 'I have just borrowed a couple of guineas "of a friend; and one of them is at your service.' 'He immediately put one of them into my hand, and 'I no longer resisted his invitation.

'I was at first a little shocked at returning to the 'same house whence we had departed in so unhandsome 'a manner: but when the drawer with very civil 'address, told us, 'he believed we had forgot to "pay our reckoning,' I became perfectly easy, 'and very readily gave him a guinea, bid him pay 'himself, and acquiesced in the unjust charge which 'had been laid on my memory.

'Mr Watson now bespoke the most extravagant 'supper he could well think of, and though he had 'contented himself with simple claret before, nothing 'now but the most precious Burgundy would serve 'his purpose.

'Our company was soon encreased by the addition 'of several gentlemen from the gaming-table; most 'of whom, as I afterwards found, came not to the 'tavern to drink, but in the way of business; for the 'true gamesters pretended to be ill, and refused their 'glass,

Digitized by Google

'surgeon, being, as he said, faint with loss of blood. 'He seemed indeed highly pleased at finding one who 'appeared in the dress of a gentleman: for as to all 'the rest of the company present, their outside was 'such, that he could not wisely place any confidence 'in them.

'I took the poor man by the arm, and led him to 'the tavern where we kept our rendezvous, as it hap-'pened to be the nearest at hand. A surgeon happen-'ing luckily to be in the house, immediately attend-'ed, and applied himself to dressing his wounds, 'which I had the pleasure to hear were not likely to 'be mortal.

'The surgeon having very expeditiously and dex-'trously finished his business, began to enquire in what 'part of the town the wounded man lodged; who an-'swered, That he was come to town that very morn-'ing; that his horse was at an inn in Piccadilly, and 'that he had no other lodging, and very little or no 'acquaintance in town.

'This surgeon, whose name I have forgot, though 'I remember it began with an R, had the first cha-'racter in his profession, and was serjeant-surgeon to 'the king. He had moreover many good qualities, 'and was a very generous, good-natured man, and 'ready to do any service to his fellow-creatures. He 'offered his patient the use of his chariot to carry him 'to his inn, and at the same time whispered in his 'ear, That if he wanted any money, he would fur-'nish him.

'The poor man was not now capable of returning 'thanks for this generous offer: for having had his 'eyes for some time stedfastly on me, he threw himself 'back in his chair, crying, O my son! my son! and 'then fainted away.

'Many of the people present imagined this accident 'had happened through his loss of blood; but I, who 'at the same time began to recollect the features of 'my father, was now confirmed in my suspicion, and 'satisfied that it was he himself who appeared before 'me. I presently ran to him, raised him in my arms, 'and kissed his cold lips with the utmost eagerness.

'Here

Digitized by Google

'Here it would be tedious to relate all the freaks 'which fortune, or rather the dice, played in this 'her temple. Mountains of gold were in a few mo- 'ments reduced to nothing at one part of the table, 'and rose as suddenly in another. The rich grew in 'a moment poor, and the poor as suddenly became 'rich: so that it seemed a philosopher could no where 'have so well instructed his pupils in the contempt of 'riches, at least he could no where have better incul- 'cated the incertainty of their duration.

'For my own part, after having considerably im- 'proved my small estate, I at last entirely demolished 'it. Mr Watson too, after much variety of luck, 'rose from the table in some heat, and declared he 'had lost a cool hundred, and would play no longer. 'Then coming up to me, he asked me to return with 'him to the tavern; but I positively refused, saying, 'I would not bring myself a second time into such a 'dilemma, and especially as he had lost all his mo- 'ney, and was now in my own condition. 'Pooh,' 'says he, 'I have just borrowed a couple of guineas "of a friend; and one of them is at your service.' 'He immediately put one of them into my hand, and 'I no longer resisted his invitation.

'I was at first a little shocked at returning to the 'same house whence we had departed in so unhandsome 'a manner: but when the drawer with very civil 'address, told us, 'he believed we had forgot to "pay our reckoning,' I became perfectly easy, 'and very readily gave him a guinea, bid him pay 'himself, and acquiesced in the unjust charge which 'had been laid on my memory.

'Mr Watson now bespoke the most extravagant 'supper he could well think of, and though he had 'contented himself with simple claret before, nothing 'now but the most precious Burgundy would serve 'his purpose.

'Our company was soon encreased by the addition 'of several gentlemen from the gaming-table; most 'of whom, as I afterwards found, came not to the 'tavern to drink, but in the way of business; for the 'true gamesters pretended to be ill, and refused their 'glass,

Digitized by Google

'surgeon, being, as he said, faint with loss of blood. 'He seemed indeed highly pleased at finding one who 'appeared in the dress of a gentleman: for as to all 'the rest of the company present, their outside was 'such, that he could not wisely place any confidence 'in them.

'I took the poor man by the arm, and led him to 'the tavern where we kept our rendezvous, as it hap'pened to be the nearest at hand. A surgeon happen'ing luckily to be in the house, immediately attend'ed, and applied himself to dressing his wounds, 'which I had the pleasure to hear were not likely to 'be mortal.

'The surgeon having very expeditiously and dex'trously finished his business, began to enquire in what 'part of the town the wounded man lodged; who an'swered, That he was come to town that very morn'ing; that his horse was at an inn in Piccadilly, and 'that he had no other lodging, and very little or no 'acquaintance in town.

'This surgeon, whose name I have forgot, though 'I remember it began with an R, had the first cha'racter in his profession, and was serjeant-surgeon to 'the king. He had moreover many good qualities, 'and was a very generous, good-natured man, and 'ready to do any service to his fellow-creatures. He 'offered his patient the use of his chariot to carry him 'to his inn, and at the same time whispered in his 'ear, That if he wanted any money, he would fur'nish him.

'The poor man was not now capable of returning 'thanks for this generous offer: for having had his 'eyes for some time stedfastly on me, he threw himself 'back in his chair, crying, O my son! my son! and 'then fainted away.

'Many of the people present imagined this accident 'had happened through his loss of blood; but I, who 'at the same time began to recollect the features of 'my father, was now confirmed in my suspicion, and 'satisfied that it was he himself who appeared before 'me. I presently ran to him, raised him in my arms, 'and kissed his cold lips with the utmost eagerness.

'Here

Digitized by Google

'Here I muſt draw a curtain over a ſcene which I 'cannot deſcribe: for though I did not loſe my being, 'as my father for a while did, my ſenſes were however 'ſo overpowered with affright and ſurpriſe, that I 'am a ſtranger to what paſſed during ſome minutes, 'and indeed till my father had again recovered from 'his ſwoon; and I found myſelf in his arms, both 'tenderly embracing each other, while the tears 'trickled a-pace down the cheeks of each of us.

'Moſt of thoſe preſent ſeemed affected by this ſcene, 'which we, who might be conſidered as the actors in 'it, were deſirous of removing from the eyes of all 'ſpectators, as faſt as we could; my father therefore 'accepted the kind offer of the ſurgeon's chariot, and 'I attended him in it to his inn.

'When we were alone together, he gently upbraid-'ed me with having neglected to write to him during 'ſo long a time, but entirely omitted the mention of 'that crime which had occaſioned it. He then in-'formed me of my mother's death, and inſiſted on my 'returning home with him, ſaying, That he had long 'ſuffered the greateſt anxiety on my account; that 'he knew not whether he had moſt feared my death 'or wiſhed it; ſince he had ſo many more dreadful 'apprehenſions for me. At laſt he ſaid, a neighbour-'ing gentleman, who had juſt recovered a ſon from 'the ſame place, informed him where I was, and that 'to reclaim me from this courſe of life, was the ſole 'cauſe of his journey to London. He thanked Hea-'ven he had ſucceeded ſo far as to find me out by 'means of an accident which had like to have proved 'fatal to him; and had the pleaſure to think he 'partly owed his preſervation to my humanity, with 'which he profeſſed himſelf to be more delighted than 'he ſhould have been with my filial piety, if I had 'known that the object of all my care was my own 'father.

'Vice had not ſo depraved my heart, as to excite 'in it an inſenſibility of ſo much paternal affection, 'though ſo unworthily beſtowed. I preſently pro-'miſed to obey his commands in my return home

'with

Digitized by Google

'with him, as ſoon as he was able to travel, which 'indeed he was in a very few days, by the aſſiſtance 'of that excellent ſurgeon who had undertaken his 'cure.

'The day preceding my father's journey (before 'which time I ſcarce ever left him) I went to take my 'leave of ſome of my moſt intimate acquaintance, par-'ticularly of Mr Watſon, who diſſuaded me from 'burying myſelf, as he called it, out of a ſimple com-'pliance with the fond deſires of a fooliſh old fellow. 'Such ſolicitations, however, had no effect, and I 'once more ſaw my own home. My father now great-'ly ſolicited me to think of marriage: but my incli-'nations were utterly averſe to any ſuch thoughts. I 'had taſted of love already, and perhaps you know 'the extravagant exceſſes of that moſt tender and moſt 'violent paſſion.' Here the old gentleman pauſed and looked earneſtly at Jones; whoſe countenance within a minute's ſpace diſplayed the extremities of both red and white. Upon which the old man, without making any obſervations, renewed his nar-rative.

'Being now provided with all the neceſſaries of 'life, I betook myſelf once again to ſtudy, and that 'with a more inordinate application than I had ever 'done formerly. The books which now employed 'my time ſolely were thoſe, as well ancient as modern, 'which treat of true philoſophy, a word which is by 'many thought to be the ſubject only of farce and ri-'dicule. I now read over the works of Ariſtotle and 'Plato, with the reſt of thoſe ineſtimable treaſures 'which ancient Greece had bequeathed to the world.

'Theſe authors, though they inſtructed me in no 'ſcience by which men may promiſe to themſelves to 'acquire the leaſt riches, or worldly power, taught 'me, however, the art of deſpiſing the higheſt acqui-'ſitions of both. They elevate the mind, and ſteel 'and harden it againſt the capricious invaſions of for-'tune. They not only inſtruct in the knowledge of 'Wiſdom, but confirm men in her habits, and demon-'ſtrate plainly, that this muſt be our guide, if we pro-'poſe ever to arrive at the greateſt worldly happineſs:

Digitized by Google

'or to defend ourſelves with any tolerable ſecurity 'againſt the miſery which every where ſurrounds and 'inveſts us.

'To this I added another ſtudy, compared to 'which all the philoſophy taught by the wiſeſt hea-'thens is little better than a dream, and is indeed as 'full of vanity as the ſilliest jeſter ever pleaſed to re-'preſent it. This is that divine wiſdom which is 'alone to be found in the holy ſcriptures: for they 'impart to us the knowledge and aſſurance of things 'much more worthy our attention, than all which 'this world can offer to our acceptance; of things 'which Heaven itſelf hath condeſcended to reveal to 'us, and to the ſmalleſt knowledge of which the 'higheſt human wit unaſſiſted could never aſcend. I 'began now to think all the time I had ſpent with the 'beſt heathen writers, was little more than labour 'loſt: for however pleaſant and delightful their leſ-'ſons may be, or however adequate to the right re-'gulation of our conduct with reſpect to this world 'only; yet when compared with the glory revealed in 'ſcripture, their higheſt documents will appear as 'trifling, and of as little conſequence as the rules by 'which children regulate their childiſh little games 'and paſtime. True it is, that philoſophy makes us 'wiſer, but Chriſtianity makes us better men. Phi-'loſophy elevates and ſteels the mind, Chriſtianity 'ſoftens and ſweetens it. The former makes us the 'objects of human admiration, the latter of divine 'love. That inſures us a temporal, but this an eter-'nal happineſs—But I am afraid I tire you with my 'rhapſody.'

'Not at all,' cries Partridge; 'Lud forbid we 'ſhould be tired with good things.'

'I had ſpent,' continued the ſtranger, 'about 'four years in the moſt delightful manner to myſelf, 'totally given up to contemplation, and entirely 'unembarraſſed with the affairs of the world, when 'I loſt the beſt of fathers, and one whom I ſo en-'tirely loved, that my grief at his loſs exceeds all 'deſcription. I now abandoned my books, and 'gave myſelf up for a whole month to the efforts

'of

Digitized by Google

'of melancholy and despair. Time, however, the 'best physician of the mind, at length brought me 'relief.' 'Ay, ay, *Tempus edax rerum*,' said Partridge. 'I then,' continued the stranger, 'betook 'myself again to my former studies, which I may say 'perfected my cure: for philosophy and religion 'may be called the exercises of the mind, and when 'this is disordered they are as wholesome as exercise 'can be to a distempered body. They do indeed 'produce similar effects with exercise; for they 'strengthen and confirm the mind; till man be-'comes, in the noble strain of Horace,

'*Fortis, et in seipso totus teres atque rotundus,*
'*Externi ne quid valeat per læve morari:*
'*In quem manca ruit semper Fortuna.*—*

Here Jones smiled at some conceit which intruded itself into his imagination; but the stranger, I believe, perceived it not, and proceeded thus

'My circumstances were now greatly altered by 'the death of that best of men: for my brother, 'who was now become master of the house, differ-'ed so widely from me in his inclinations, and our 'pursuits in life had been so very various, that we 'were the worst of company to each other; but 'what made our living together still more disagree-'able, was the little harmony which could subsist 'between the few who resorted to me, and the nu-'merous train of sportsmen who often attended my 'brother from the field to the table: for such fel-'lows, besides the noise and nonsense with which 'they persecute the ears of sober men, endeavour 'always to attack them with affront and contempt. 'This was so much the case, that neither I myself, 'nor my friends, could ever sit down to a meal with 'them, without being treated with derision, because 'we were unacquainted with the phrases of sports-'men. For men of true learning, and almost uni-'versal knowledge, always compassionate the igno-

* 'Firm in himself, who on himself relies,
'Polish'd and round, who runs his proper course,
'And breaks misfortunes with superior force. Mr FRANCIS.

Digitized by Google

'rance of others; but fellows who excel in ſome 'little, low, contemptible art, are always certain to 'deſpiſe thoſe who are unacquainted with that art.

'In ſhort, we ſoon ſeparated, and I went by the 'advice of a phyſician to drink the Bath waters: 'for my violent affliction, added to a ſedentary life, 'had thrown me into a kind of paralytic diſorder, 'for which thoſe waters are accounted an almoſt 'certain cure. The ſecond day after my arrival, as 'I was walking by the river, the ſun ſhone ſo in-'tenſely hot (though it was early in the year) that 'I retired to the ſhelter of ſome willows, and ſat 'down by the river ſide. Here I had not been ſeated 'long before I heard a perſon on the other ſide the 'willows, ſighing and bemoaning himſelf bitterly. 'On a ſudden, having uttered a moſt impious oath, 'he cried, 'I am reſolved to bear it no longer,' 'and directly threw himſelf into the water. I im-'mediately ſtarted, and ran towards the place, cal-'ling at the ſame time as loudly as I could for aſſiſt-'ance. An angler happened luckily to be a-fiſhing 'a little below me, though ſome very high ſedge had 'hid him from my ſight. He immediately came up, 'and both of us together, not without ſome hazard 'of our lives, drew the body to the ſhore. At firſt 'we perceived no ſign of life remaining; but having 'held the body up by the heels (for we ſoon had aſ-'ſiſtance enough) it diſcharged a vaſt quantity of wa-'ter at the mouth, and at length began to diſcover 'ſome ſymptoms of breathing, and a little afterwards 'to move both its hands and its legs.

'An apothecary, who happened to be preſent 'among others, adviſed that the body, which ſeemed 'now to have pretty well emptied itſelf of water, 'and which began to have many convulſive motions, 'ſhould be directly taken up, and carried into a 'warm bed. This was accordingly performed, the 'apothecary and myſelf attending.

'As we were going towards an inn, for we knew 'not the man's lodgings, luckily a woman met us, 'who, after ſome violent ſcreaming, told us, that 'the gentleman lodged at her houſe.

'When

Digitized by Google

'When I had seen the man safely deposited there, 'I left him to the care of the apothecary, who, I 'suppose, used all the right methods with him; for 'the next morning I heard he had perfectly recover-'ed his senses.

'I then went to visit him, intending to search 'out, as well as I could, the cause of his having at-'tempted so desperate an act, and to prevent, as 'far as I was able, his pursuing such wicked inten-'tions for the future. I was no sooner admitted into 'his chamber, than we both instantly knew each 'other; for who should this person be but my good 'friend Mr Watson! Here I will not trouble you 'with what passed at our first interview, for I would 'avoid prolixity as much as possible.' 'Pray, let us 'hear all,' cries Partridge, 'I want mightily to know 'what brought him to Bath.'

'You shall hear every thing material,' answered the stranger; and then proceeded to relate what we shall proceed to write, after we have given a short breathing time to both ourselves and the reader.

CHAP. XIV.

In which the Man of the Hill concludes his history.

'MR Watson,' continued the stranger, 'very 'freely acquainted me, that the unhappy 'situation of his circumstances, occasioned by a train 'of ill-luck, had in a manner forced him to a reso-'lution of destroying himself.

'I now began to argue very seriously with him, 'in opposition to this heathenish, or indeed diabo-'lical principle of the lawfulness of self-murder; 'and said every thing which occurred to me on the 'subject; but, to my great concern, it seemed to 'have very little effect on him. He seemed not at all 'to repent of what he had done, and gave me rea-'son to fear, he would soon make a second attempt 'of the like horrible kind.

'When I had finished my discourse, instead of 'endeavouring to answer my arguments, he looked

Digitized by Google

'me ſtedfaſtly in the face, and with a ſmile ſaid, "You are ſtrangely altered, my good friend, ſince "I remember you. I queſtion whether any of our "biſhops could make a better argument againſt "ſuicide than you have entertained me with; but "unleſs you can find ſomebody who will lend me a "cool hundred, I muſt either hang, or drown, or "ſtarve; and in my opinion the laſt death is the moſt "terrible of the three.'

'I anſwered him very gravely, that I was indeed 'altered ſince I had ſeen him laſt. That I had found 'leiſure to look into my follies, and to repent of 'them. I then adviſed him to purſue the ſame ſteps; 'and at laſt concluded with an aſſurance, that I my-'ſelf would lend him a hundred pound, if it would 'be of any ſervice to his affairs, and he would not 'put it into the power of a die to deprive him of it.

'Mr Watſon, who ſeemed almoſt compoſed in 'ſlumber by the former part of my diſcourſe, was 'rouſed by the latter. He ſeized my hand eagerly, 'gave me a thouſand thanks, and declared I was a 'friend indeed; adding, that he hoped I had a better 'opinion of him, than to imagine he had profited ſo 'little by experience, as to put any confidence in 'thoſe damned dice, which had ſo often deceived 'him.' 'No, no,' cries he, 'let me but once "handſomely be ſet up again, and if ever fortune "makes a broken merchant of me afterwards, I will "forgive her.'

'I very well underſtood the language of ſetting 'up, and broken merchant. I therefore ſaid to him 'with a very grave face, Mr Watſon, you muſt 'endeavour to find out ſome buſineſs, or employ-'ment, by which you may procure yourſelf a liveli-'hood; and I promiſe you, could I ſee any proba-'bility of being repaid hereafter, I would advance 'a much larger ſum than what you have mentioned, 'to equip you in any fair and honourable calling; 'but as to gaming, beſides the baſeneſs and wicked-'neſs of making it a profeſſion, you are really, to my 'own knowledge, unfit for it, and it will end in your 'certain ruin.'

"Why

"Why now, that's ſtrange,' anſwered he, 'neither you, nor any of my friends, would ever allow me to know any thing of the matter, and yet, I believe, I am as good a hand at every game as any of you all; and I heartily wiſh I was to play with you only for your whole fortune; I ſhould deſire no better ſport, and I would let you name your game into the bargain: but come, my dear boy, have you the hundred in your pocket?'

'I anſwered, I had only a bill for 50l. which I delivered him, and promiſed to bring him the reſt next morning; and after giving him a little more advice, took my leave.

'I was indeed better than my word: for I returned to him that very afternoon. When I entered the room, I found him ſitting up in his bed at cards with a notorious gameſter. This ſight, you will imagine, ſhocked me not a little! to which I may add the mortification of ſeeing my bill delivered by him to his antagoniſt, and thirty guineas only given in exchange for it.

'The other gameſter preſently quitted the room, and then Watſon declared he was aſhamed to ſee me; 'but,' ſays he, 'I find luck runs ſo damnably againſt me, that I will reſolve to leave off play for ever. I have thought of the kind propoſal you made me ever ſince, and I promiſe you there ſhall be no fault in me, if I do not put it in execution.'

'Though I had no great faith in his promiſes, I produced him the remainder of the hundred in conſequence of my own; for which he gave me a note, which was all I ever expected to ſee in return for my money.

'We were prevented from any farther diſcourſe at preſent, by the arrival of the apothecary: who, with much joy in his countenance, and without even aſking his patient how he did, proclaimed there was great news arrived in a letter to himſelf, which he ſaid would ſhortly be public, 'That the Duke of Monmouth was landed in the weſt with a vaſt army of Dutch; and that another vaſt fleet

"hovered

Digitized by Google

" hovered over the coaſt of Norfolk, and was to make " a deſcent there, in order to favour the duke's en- " terprize with a diverſion on that ſide.'

' This apothecary was one of the greateſt politi- ' cians of his time. He was more delighted with the ' moſt paultry packet, than with the beſt patient; ' and the higheſt joy he was capable of, he received ' from having a piece of news in his poſſeſſion an ' hour or two ſooner than any other perſon in the ' town. His advices, however, were ſeldom authen- ' tic; for he would ſwallow almoſt any thing as a ' truth, a humour which many made uſe of to impoſe ' upon him.

' Thus it happened with what he at preſent com- ' municated; for it was known within a ſhort time ' afterwards, that the duke was really landed; but ' that his army conſiſted only of a few attendants; ' and as to the diverſion in Norfolk, it was entirely ' falſe.

' The apothecary ſtaid no longer in the room than ' while he acquainted us with his news; and then, ' without ſaying a ſyllable to his patient on any other ' ſubject, departed to ſpread his advices all over the ' town.

' Events of this nature in the public are generally ' apt to eclipſe all private concerns. Our diſcourſe, ' therefore, now became entirely political. For my ' own part, I had been for ſome time very ſeriouſly ' affected with the danger to which the Proteſtant ' religion was ſo viſibly expoſed, under a Popiſh ' prince; and thought the apprehenſion of it alone ' ſufficient to juſtify that inſurrection: for no real ſe- ' curity can ever be found againſt the perſecuting ' ſpirit of Popery, when armed with power, except ' the depriving it of that power, as woful expe- ' rience preſently ſhewed. You know how King ' James behaved after getting the better of this at- ' tempt; how little he valued either his royal word, ' or coronation-oath, or the liberties and rights of ' his people. But all had not the ſenſe to foreſee this ' at firſt; and therefore the Duke of Monmouth was ' weakly ſupported; yet all could feel when the evil

' came

Digitized by Google

'came upon them; and therefore all united, at laſt, 'to drive out that king, againſt whoſe excluſion a 'great party among us had ſo warmly contended, 'during the reign of his brother, and for whom they 'now fought with ſuch zeal and affection.'

'What you ſay,' interrupted Jones, 'is very true; 'and it has often ſtruck me, as the moſt wonderful 'thing I ever read of in hiſtory, that ſo ſoon after this 'convincing experience, which brought our whole 'nation to join ſo unanimouſly in expelling King 'James, for the preſervation of our religion and li-'berties, there ſhould be a party among us mad e-'nough to deſire the placing his family again on the 'throne.' 'You are not in earneſt!' anſwered the old man; 'there can be no ſuch party. As bad an 'opinion as I have of mankind, I cannot believe them 'infatuated to ſuch a degree! There may be ſome 'hot-headed Papiſts led by their prieſts to engage in 'this deſperate cauſe, and think it a holy war: but 'that Proteſtants, that are the members of the church 'of England, ſhould be ſuch apoſtates, ſuch *Felos de ſe*; 'I cannot believe it; no, no, young man, unacquaint-'ed as I am with what has paſt in the world for theſe 'laſt thirty years, I cannot be ſo impoſed upon as to 'credit ſo fooliſh a tale: but I ſee you have a mind to 'ſport with my ignorance.' 'Can it be poſſible,' replied Jones, 'that you have lived ſo much out of the 'world as not to know that during that time there 'have been two rebellions in favour of the ſon of King 'James, one of which is now actually raging in the 'very heart of the kingdom?' At theſe words the old gentleman ſtarted up, and, in a moſt ſolemn tone of voice, conjured Jones by his Maker to tell him, if what he ſaid was really true: which the other as ſo-lemnly affirming, he walked ſeveral turns about the room in a profound ſilence, then cried, then laughed, and, at laſt, fell down on his knees, and bleſſed God, in a loud thankſgiving prayer, for having delivered him from all ſociety with human nature, which could be capable of ſuch monſtrous extravagancies. After which, being reminded by Jones that he had broke off his ſtory, he reſumed it again in this manner.

'As

'As mankind, in the days I was ſpeaking of, was 'not yet arrived to that pitch of madneſs which I find 'they are capable of now, and which, to be ſure, I 'have only eſcaped by living alone, and at a diſ-'tance from the contagion, there was a conſiderable 'riſing in favour of Monmouth; and, my principles 'ſtrongly inclining me to take the ſame part, I de-'termined to join him: and Mr Watſon, from dif-'ferent motives, concurring in the ſame reſolution, '(for the ſpirit of a gameſter will carry a man as far 'upon ſuch an occaſion as the ſpirit of patriotiſm); 'we ſoon provided ourſelves with all neceſſaries, and 'went to the duke at Bridgewater.

'The unfortunate event of this enterprize you are, 'I conclude, as well acquainted with as myſelf. I 'eſcaped, together with Mr Watſon, from the bat-'tle at Sedgemore, in which action I received a ſlight 'wound. We rode near forty miles together on the 'Exeter road, and, then, abandoning our horſes, 'ſcrambled as well as we could through the fields 'and bye-roads, till we arrived at a little wild hut 'on a common, where a poor old woman took all the 'care of us ſhe could, and dreſſed my wound with 'ſalve, which quickly healed it.'

'Pray, Sir, where was the wound?' ſays Partridge. The ſtranger ſatisfied him it was in his arm, and then continued his narrative. 'Here, Sir,' ſaid he, 'Mr 'Watſon left me the next morning, in order, as he 'pretended, to get us ſome proviſion from the town 'of Collumptom;—but—can I relate it? or can you 'believe it?—This Mr Watſon, this friend, this 'baſe, barbarous, treacherous villain, betrayed me 'to a party of horſe belonging to King James, and, 'at his return, delivered me into their hands.

'The ſoldiers, being ſix in number, had now ſeized 'me, and were conducting me to Taunton gaol; 'but neither my preſent ſituation, nor the apprehen-'ſions of what might happen to me, were half ſo 'irkſome to my mind, as the company of my falſe 'friend, who, having ſurrendered himſelf, was like-'wiſe conſidered as a priſoner, though he was better 'treated, as being to make his peace at my expence.

He

Digitized by Google

'He at first endeavoured to excuse his treachery; but 'when he received nothing but scorn and upbraiding 'from me, he soon changed his note, abused me as 'the most attrocious and malicious rebel, and laid all 'his own guilt to my charge, who, as he declared, 'had sollicited, and even threatened him, to make 'him take up arms against his gracious, as well as 'lawful sovereign.

'This false evidence, (for in reality he had been 'much the forwarder of the two), stung me to the 'quick, and raised an indignation scarce conceivable 'by those who have not felt it. However, fortune 'at length took pity on me: for as we were got a 'little beyond Wellington, in a narrow lane, my 'guards received a false alarm, that near fifty of the 'enemy were at hand, upon which they shifted for 'themselves, and left me and my betrayer to do the 'same. That villain immediately ran from me, and 'I am glad he did, or I should have certainly endea-'voured, though I had no arms, to have executed 'vengeance on his baseness.

'I was now once more at liberty, and immediately 'withdrawing from the highway into the fields, I tra-'velled on, scarce knowing which way I went, and 'making it my chief care to avoid all public roads, 'and all towns, nay, even the most homely houses; 'for I imagined every human creature whom I saw, 'desirous of betraying me.

'At last, after rambling several days about the 'country, during which the fields afforded me the 'same bed, and the same food, which Nature bestows 'on our savage brothers of the creation, I at length 'arrived at this place, where the solitude and wildness 'of the country invited me to fix my abode. The 'first person with whom I took up my habitation was 'the mother of this old woman, with whom I remain-'ed concealed, till the news of the glorious Revolu-'tion put an end to all my apprehensions of danger, 'and gave me an opportunity of once more visiting 'my own home, and of enquiring a little into my 'affairs, which I soon settled as agreeably to my bro-'ther as to myself; having resigned every thing to 'him,

Digitized by Google

'him, for which he paid me the ſum of a thouſand 'pounds, and ſettled on me an annuity for life.

'His behaviour in this laſt inſtance, as in all others, 'was ſelfiſh and ungenerous. I could not look on 'him as my friend, nor indeed did he deſire that I 'ſhould; ſo I preſently took my leave of him, as well 'as of my other acquaintance; and from that day to 'this, my hiſtory is little better than a blank.'

'And is it poſſible, Sir,' ſaid Jones, 'that you can 'have reſided here from that day to this?' 'O no, 'Sir,' anſwered the gentleman, 'I have been a great 'traveller, and there are few parts of Europe with 'which I am not acquainted.' 'I have not, Sir,' cried Jones, 'the aſſurance to aſk it of you now. In-'deed it would be cruel, after ſo much breath as you 'have already ſpent. But you will give me leave to 'wiſh for ſome further opportunity of hearing the ex-'cellent obſervations, which a man of your ſenſe and 'knowledge of the world muſt have made in ſo long 'a courſe of travels.' 'Indeed, young gentleman,' anſwered the ſtranger, 'I will endeavour to ſatisfy 'your curioſity on this head likewiſe, as far as I am 'able.' Jones attempted freſh apologies, but was pre-'vented;' and while he and Partridge ſat with greedy and impatient ears, the ſtranger proceeded as in the next chapter.

CHAP. XV.

A brief hiſtory of Europe. And a curious diſcourſe between Mr Jones and the Man of the Hill.

'IN Italy the landlords are very ſilent. In France 'they are more talkative, but yet civil. In Ger-'many and Holland they are generally very impertі-'nent. And as for their honeſty, I believe it is pretty 'equal in all thoſe countries. The *Laquais a Louange* 'are ſure to loſe no opportunity of cheating you: and 'as for the poſtilions, I think they are pretty much 'alike all the world over. Theſe, Sir, are the ob-'ſervations on men which I made in my travels; for 'theſe were the only men I ever converſed with. My 'deſign, when I went abroad, was to divert myſelf

Digitized by Google

'by seeing the wondrous variety of prospects, beasts, 'birds, fishes, insects, and vegetables, with which 'God has been pleased to enrich the several parts of 'this globe.—A variety, which as it must give great 'pleasure to a contemplative beholder, so doth it ad-'mirably display the power, and wisdom, and good-'ness of the Creator. Indeed, to say the truth, there 'is but one work in his whole creation that doth him 'any dishonour, and with that I have long since avoid-'ed holding any conversation.'

'You will pardon me,' cries Jones, 'but I have 'always imagined, that there is in this very work 'you mention, as great variety as in all the rest; for 'besides the difference of inclinations, customs and 'climates have, I am told, introduced the utmost di-'versity into human nature.' 'Very little indeed,' answered the other; 'those who travel in order to ac-'quaint themselves with the different manners of men, 'might spare themselves much pains, by going to a 'carnival at Venice; for there they will see at once 'all which they can discover in the several courts of 'Europe;—the same hypocrisy, the same fraud; in 'short, the same follies and vices, dressed in different 'habits. In Spain these are equipped with much 'gravity; and in Italy, with vast splendor. In 'France, a knave is dressed like a fop; and in the 'northern countries, like a sloven. But human na-'ture is every where the same, every where the ob-'ject of detestation and scorn.

'As for my own part, I past through all these na-'tions, as you perhaps may have done through a 'crowd at a shew, jostling to get by them, holding 'my nose with one hand, and defending my pockets 'with the other, without speaking a word to any of 'them, while I was pressing on to see what I wanted 'to see; which, however entertaining it might be in 'itself, scarce made me amends for the trouble the 'company gave me.'

'Did not you find some of the nations among which 'you travelled, less troublesome to you than others?' said Jones. 'O yes,' replied the old man; 'the 'Turks were much more tolerable to me than the

Digitized by Google

'Chriſtians. For they are men of profound taciturnity, and never diſturb a ſtranger with queſtions. 'Now and then indeed they beſtow a ſhort curſe upon 'him, or ſpit in his face as he walks the ſtreets, but 'then they have done with him; and a man may live 'an age in their country without hearing a dozen 'words from them. But of all the people I ever ſaw, 'Heaven defend me from the French. With their 'damned prate and civilities, and doing the honour 'of their nation to ſtrangers, (as they are pleaſed to 'call it), but indeed, ſetting forth their own vanity; 'they are ſo troubleſome, that I had infinitely rather 'paſs my life with the Hottentots, than ſet my foot 'in Paris again. They are a naſty people, but their 'naſtineſs is moſtly without; whereas in France, and 'ſome other nations that I won't name, it is all with'in, and makes them ſtink much more to my reaſon 'than that of Hottentots does to my noſe.

'Thus, Sir, I have ended the hiſtory of my life; 'for as to all that ſeries of years, during which I have 'lived retired here, it affords no variety to entertain 'you, and may be almoſt conſidered as one day. The 'retirement has been ſo complete, that I could hardly 'have enjoyed a more abſolute ſolitude in the deſerts 'of the Thebais, than here in the midſt of this popu'lous kingdom. As I have no eſtate, I am plagued 'with no tenants or ſtewards; my annuity is paid me 'pretty regularly, as indeed it ought to be; for it is 'much leſs than what I might have expected, in re'turn for what I gave up. Viſits I admit none; and 'the old woman who keeps my houſe knows, that her 'place entirely depends upon her ſaving me all the 'trouble of buying the things that I want, keeping 'off all ſolicitation or buſineſs from me, and holding 'her tongue whenever I am within hearing. As my 'walks are all by night, I am pretty ſecure in this 'wild, unfrequented place, from meeting any com'pany. Some few perſons I have met by chance, and 'ſent them home heartily frighted, as from the odd'neſs of my dreſs and figure they took me for a ghoſt 'or a hobgoblin. But what has happened to-night 'ſhows, that even here I cannot be ſafe from the vil-

'lainy

Digitized by Google

'lainy of men; for without your assistance I had not 'only been robbed, but very probably murdered.'

Jones thanked the stranger for the trouble he had taken in relating his story, and then expressed some wonder how he could possibly endure a life of such solitude; 'in which,' says he, 'you may well com-'plain of the want of variety. Indeed, I am astonish-'ed how you have filled up, or rather killed, so much 'of your time.'

'I am not at all surprised,' answered the other, 'that 'to one whose affections and thoughts are fixed on the 'world, my hours should appear to have wanted em-'ployment in this place; but there is one single act, 'for which the whole life of man is infinitely too 'short. What time can suffice for the contemplation 'and worship of that glorious, immortal, and eternal 'Being, among the works of whose stupendous crea-'tion, not only this globe, but even those numberless 'luminaries which we may here behold spangling all 'the sky, though they should many of them be suns 'lighting different systems of worlds, may possibly 'appear but as a few atoms, opposed to the whole 'earth which we inhabit? Can a man who, by di-'vine meditations, is admitted, as it were, into the 'conversation of this ineffable, incomprehensible Ma-'jesty, think days or years, or ages, too long for the 'continuance of so ravishing an honour? Shall the 'trifling amusements, the palling pleasures, the silly 'business of the world, roll away our hours too swiftly 'from us; and shall the pace of time seem sluggish 'to a mind exercised in studies so high, so important, 'and so glorious! As no time is sufficient, so no place 'is improper for this great concern. On what object 'can we cast our eyes, which may not inspire us with 'ideas of his power, of his wisdom, and of his good-'ness? It is not necessary, that the rising sun should 'dart his fiery glories over the eastern horizon; nor 'that the boisterous winds should rush from their ca-'verns, and shake the lofty forest; nor that the open-'ing clouds should pour their deluges on the plains: 'it is not necessary, I say, that any of these should 'proclaim his Majesty; there is not an insect, not a

Digitized by Google

vegetable, of so low an order in the creation, as not to be honoured with bearing marks of the attributes of the great Creator; marks not only of his power, but of his wisdom and goodness. Man alone, the king of this globe, the last and greatest work of the supreme Being, below the sun; man alone hath basely dishonoured his own nature, and by dishonesty, cruelty and ingratitude, and treachery, hath called his Maker's goodness in question, by puzzling us to account how a benevolent Being should form so foolish and so vile an animal. Yet this is the Being from whose conversation you think, I suppose, that I have been unfortunately restrained; and without whose blessed society, life, in your opinion, must be tedious and insipid.'

'In the former part of what you said,' replied Jones, 'I most heartily and readily concur; but I believe, as well as hope, that the abhorrence which you express for mankind, in the conclusion, is much too general. Indeed, you here fall into an error, which, in my little experience, I have observed to be a very common one, by taking the character of mankind from the worst and basest among them; whereas indeed, as an excellent writer observes, nothing should be esteemed as characteristical of a species, but what is to be found among the best and most perfect individuals of that species. This error, I believe, is generally committed by those who, from want of proper caution in the choice of their friends and acquaintance, have suffered injuries from bad and worthless men; two or three instances of which are very unjustly charged on all human nature.'

'I think I had experience enough of it,' answered the other. 'My first mistress, and my first friend betrayed me in the basest manner, and in matters which threatened to be of the worst of consequences, even to bring me to a shameful death.'

'But you will pardon me,' cries Jones, 'if I desire you to reflect who that mistress, and who that friend were. What better, my good Sir, could be expected in love derived from the stews, or in friendship first pro-

Digitized by Google

'produced and nouriſhed at the gaming table! To 'take the characters of women from the former in- 'ſtance, or of men from the latter, would be as unjuſt 'as to aſſert, that air is a nauſeous and unwholeſome 'element, becauſe we find it ſo in a jakes. I have 'lived but a ſhort time in the world, and yet have 'known men worthy of the higheſt friendſhip, and 'women of the higheſt love.'

'Alas! young man,' anſwered the ſtranger, 'you 'have lived, you confeſs, but a very ſhort time in the 'world; I was ſomewhat older than you when I was 'of the ſame opinion.

'You might have remained ſo ſtill,' replied Jones, 'if you had not been unfortunate, I will venture to 'ſay incautious, in the placing your affections. If 'there was indeed much more wickedneſs in the world 'than there is, it would not prove ſuch general aſ- 'ſertions againſt human nature, ſince much of this 'arrives by mere accident, and many a man who 'commits evil, is not totally bad and corrupt in his 'heart. In truth, none ſeem to have any title to 'aſſert human nature to be neceſſarily and univer- 'ſally evil, but thoſe whoſe own minds afford them 'one inſtance of this natural depravity; which is not, 'I am convinced, your caſe.'

'And ſuch,' ſaid the ſtranger, 'will be always the 'moſt backward to aſſert any ſuch thing. Knaves 'will no more endeavour to perſuade you of the baſe- 'neſs of mankind, than a highwayman will inform 'you that there are thieves on the road. This would 'indeed be a method to put you on your guard, and 'to defeat their own purpoſes. For which reaſon, 'though knaves, as I remember, are very apt to 'abuſe particular perſons; yet they never caſt any 'reflections on human nature in general.' The old gentleman ſpoke this ſo warmly, that as Jones deſpaired of making a convert, and was unwilling to offend, he returned no anſwer

The day now began to ſend forth its firſt ſtreams of light, when Jones made an apology to the ſtranger for having ſtaid ſo long, and perhaps detained him from his reſt. The ſtranger anſwered, 'he ne-

Digitized by Google

'ver wanted reſt leſs than at preſent; for that day
'and night were indifferent ſeaſons to him, and that
'he commonly made uſe of the former for the time
'of his repoſe, and of the latter for his walks and
'lucubrations. However,' ſaid he, 'it is now a moſt
'lovely morning, and if you can bear any longer to
'be without your own reſt or food, I will gladly en-
'tertain you with the ſight of ſome very fine proſpects,
'which I believe you have not yet ſeen.'

Jones very readily embraced this offer, and they immediately ſet forward together from the cottage. As for Partridge, he had fallen into a profound repoſe, juſt as the ſtranger had finiſhed his ſtory; for his curioſity was ſatisfied, and the ſubſequent diſcourſe was not forcible enough in its operation to conjure down the charms of ſleep. Jones therefore left him to enjoy his nap; and as the reader may perhaps be, at this ſeaſon, glad of the ſame favour, we will here put an end to the eighth book of our hiſtory

THE

Digitized by Google

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK IX.

Containing twelve hours.

CHAP. I.

Of those who lawfully may, and of those who may not write such histories as this.

AMONG other good uses for which I have thought proper to institute these several introductory chapters, I have considered them as a kind of mark or stamp, which may hereafter enable a very indifferent reader to distinguish what is true and genuine in this historic kind of writing, from what is false and counterfeit. Indeed it seems likely that some such mark may shortly become necessary, since the favourable reception which two or three authors have lately procured for their works of this nature from the public, will probably serve as an encouragement to many others to undertake the like. Thus a swarm of foolish novels, and monstrous romances will be produced, either to the great impoverishing of booksellers, or to the great loss of time, and depravation of morals in the reader; nay, often to the spreading of scandal

Digitized by Google

ſcandal and calumny, and to the prejudice of the characters of many worthy and honeſt people.

I queſtion not but the ingenious author of the Spectator was principally induced to prefix Greek and Latin mottos to every paper from the ſame conſideration of guarding againſt the purſuit of thoſe ſcribblers, who, having no talents of a writer but what is taught by the writing maſter, are yet nowiſe afraid nor aſhamed to aſſume the ſame titles with the greateſt genius, than their good-brother in the fable was of braying in the lion's ſkin.

By the device therefore of his motto, it became impracticable for any man to preſume to imitate the Spectators, without underſtanding at leaſt one ſentence in the learned languages. In the ſame manner I have now ſecured myſelf from the imitation of thoſe who are utterly incapable of any degree of reflection, and whoſe learning is not equal to an eſſay.

I would not be here underſtood to inſinuate, that the greateſt merit of ſuch hiſtorical productions can ever lie in theſe introductory chapters: but, in fact, thoſe parts which contain mere narrative only, afford much more encouragement to the pen of an imitator, than thoſe which are compoſed of obſervation and reflection. Here I mean ſuch imitators as Rowe was of Shakeſpeare, or as Horace hints ſome of the Romans were of Cato, by bare feet and four faces.

To invent good ſtories, and to tell them well, are poſſibly very rare talents. and yet I have obſerved few perſons who have ſcrupled to aim at both; and if we examine the romances and novels with which the world abounds, I think we may fairly conclude, that moſt of the authors would not have attemped to ſhew their teeth (if the expreſſion may be allowed me) in any other way of writing; nor could indeed have ſtrung together a dozen ſentences on any other ſubject whatever. *Scribimus indocti doctique paſſim* *, may be more truly ſaid of the hiſtorian and biographer, than of any other ſpecies of writing; for all the arts and ſciences (even

*——Each deſperate blockhead dares to write,
Verſe is the trade of every living wight.

criticiſm

Digitized by Google

criticism itself) require some little degree of learning and knowledge. Poetry indeed may perhaps be thought an exception, but then it demands numbers, or something like numbers: whereas to the composition of novels and romances, nothing is necessary but paper, pens, and ink, with the manual capacity of using them. This, I conceive, their productions shew to be the opinion of the authors themselves: and this must be the opinion of their readers, if indeed there be any such.

Hence we are to derive that universal contempt, which the world, who always denominate the whole from the majority, have cast on all historical writers who do not draw their materials from records. And it is the apprehension of this contempt, that hath made us so cautiously avoid the term romance, a name with which we might otherwise have been well enough contented. Though as we have good authority for all our characters, no less indeed than the vast authentic doomsday-book of nature, as is elsewhere hinted, our labours have sufficient title to the name of history. Certainly they deserve some distinction from those works, which one of the wittiest of men regarded only as proceeding from a Pruritus, or indeed rather from a looseness of the brain.

But besides the dishonour which is thus cast on one of the most useful as well as entertaining of all kinds of writing, there is just reason to apprehend, that by encouraging such authors, we shall propagate much dishonour of another kind; I mean to the characters of many good and valuable members of society: for the dullest writers no more than the dullest companions are always inoffensive. They have both enough of language to be indecent and abusive. And surely, if the opinion just above cited be true, we cannot wonder, that works so nastily derived should be nasty themselves, or make others so.

To prevent therefore for the future, such intemperate abuses of leisure, of letters, and of the liberty of the press, especially as the world seems at present to be more than usually threatened with them, I shall here venture to mention some qualifications, every one of which

Digitized by Google

which are in a pretty high degree neceſſary to this order of hiſtorians.

The firſt is genius, without a full vein of which, no ſtudy, ſays Horace can avail us. By genius I would underſtand that power, or rather thoſe powers of the mind, which are capable of penetrating into all things within our reach and knowledge, and of diſtinguiſhing their eſſential differences. Theſe are no other than invention and judgment; and they are both called by the collective name of genius, as they are of thoſe gifts of nature which we bring with us into the world. Concerning each of which many ſeem to have fallen into very great errors; for by invention, I believe, is generally underſtood a creative faculty; which would indeed prove moſt romance-writers to have the higheſt pretenſions to it; whereas by invention is really meant no more, (and ſo the word ſignifies) than diſcovery, or finding out; or to explain it at large, a quick and ſagacious penetration into the true eſſence of all the objects of our contemplation. This, I think, can rarely exiſt, without the concomitancy of judgment for how we can be ſaid to have diſcovered the true eſſence of two things, without diſcerning their difference, ſeems to me hard to conceive Now this laſt is the undiſputed province of judgment: and yet ſome few men of wit have agreed with all the dull fellows in the world, in repreſenting theſe two to have been ſeldom or never the property of one and the ſame perſon.

But though they ſhould be ſo, they are not ſufficient for our purpoſe, without a good ſhare of learning; for which I could again cite the authority of Horace, and of many others, if any was neceſſary to prove that tools were of no ſervice to a workman, when they are not ſharpened by art, or when he wants rules to direct him in his work, or hath no matter to work upon. All theſe uſes are ſupplied by learning: for nature can only furniſh us with capacity, or, as I have choſe to illuſtrate it, with the tools of our profeſſion; learning muſt fit them for uſe, muſt direct them in it; and laſtly, muſt contribute, part at leaſt, of the materials. A competent knowledge of hiſtory and of the Belles Lettres,

Digitized by Google

Lettres, is here abſolutely neceſſary; and without this ſhare of knowledge at leaſt, to affect the character of an hiſtorian, is as vain as to endeavour at building a houſe without timber or mortar, or brick or ſtone. Homer and Milton, though they added the ornament of numbers to their works, were both hiſtorians of our order, and maſters of all the learning of their times.

Again, there is another ſort of knowledge beyond the power of learning to beſtow, and this is to be had by converſation. So neceſſary is this to the underſtanding the characters of men, that none are more ignorant of them than thoſe learned pedants, whoſe lives have been entirely conſumed in colleges, and among books: for however exquiſitely human nature may have been deſcribed by writers, the true practical ſyſtem can be learnt only in the world. Indeed the like happens in every other kind of knowledge. Neither phyſic, nor law, are to be practically known from books. Nay, the farmer, the planter, the gardener, muſt perfect by experience what he hath acquired the rudiments of by reading. How accurately ſoever the ingenious Mr Miller may have deſcribed the plant, he himſelf would adviſe his diſciple to ſee it in the garden. As we muſt perceive, that after the niceſt ſtrokes of a Shakeſpear, or a Johnſon, of a Wycherly, or an Otway, ſome touches of nature will eſcape the reader, which the judicious action of a Garrick, of a Cibber, or a Clive *, can convey to him; ſo on the real ſtage, the character ſhews himſelf in a ſtronger and bolder light, than he can be deſcribed. And if this be the caſe in thoſe fine and nervous deſcriptions, which great authors themſelves have taken from life, how much more ſtrongly will it hold when the writer himſelf takes his lines not from nature, but from books! Such cha-

* There is a peculiar propriety in mentioning this great actor, and theſe two moſt juſtly celebrated actreſſes in this place; as they have all formed themſelves on the ſtudy of nature only; and not on the imitation of their predeceſſors. Hence they have been able to excel all who have gone before them; a degree of merit which the ſervile herd of imitators can never poſſibly arrive at.

racters

Digitized by Google

racters are only the faint copy of a copy, and can have neither the juſtneſs nor the ſpirit of an original.

Now this converſation in our hiſtorian muſt be univerſal, that is, with all ranks and degrees of men: for the knowledge of what is called high-life, will not inſtruct him in low, nor *e converſo*, will his being acquainted with the inferior part of mankind, teach him the manners of the ſuperior. And though it may be thought that the knowledge of either may ſufficiently enable him to deſcribe at leaſt that in which he hath been converſant; yet he will even here fall greatly ſhort of perfection: for the follies of either rank do in reality illuſtrate each other. For inſtance, the affectation of high-life appears more glaring and ridiculous from the ſimplicity of the low; and again, the rudeneſs and babarity of this latter, ſtrikes with much ſtronger ideas of abſurdity, when contraſted with, and oppoſed to the politeneſs which controuls the former. Beſides, to ſay the truth, the manners of our hiſtorians will be improved by both theſe converſations: for in the one he will eaſily find examples of plainneſs, honeſty, and ſincerity: in the other of refinement, elegance, and a liberality of ſpirit; which laſt quality I myſelf have ſcarce ever ſeen in men of low birth and education.

Nor will all the qualities I have hitherto given my hiſtorian avail him, unleſs he have what is generally meant by a good heart, and be capable of feeling. The author who will make me weep, ſays Horace, muſt firſt weep himſelf. In reality, no man can paint a diſtreſs well, which he doth not feel while he is painting it; nor do I doubt, but that the moſt pathetic and affecting ſcenes have been writ with tears. In the ſame manner it is with the ridiculous. I am convinced I never make my reader laugh heartily, but where I have laughed before him; unleſs it ſhould happen at any time, that inſtead of laughing with me, he ſhould be inclined to laugh at me. Perhaps this may have been the caſe at ſome paſſages in this chapter, from which apprehenſion I will here put an end to it.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. II.

Containing a very surprising adventure indeed, which Mr Jones met with in his walk with the Man of the Hill.

AURORA now first opened her casement. *Anglicé*, the day began to break, when Jones walked forth in company with the stranger, and mounted Mazzard Hill; of which they had no sooner gained the summit, than one of the most noble prospects in the world presented itself to their view, and which we would likewise present to the reader, but for two reasons. First, We despair of making those who have seen this prospect, admire our description. Secondly, We very much doubt whether those, who have not seen it, would understand it.

Jones stood for some minutes fixed in one posture, and directing his eyes towards the south; upon which the old gentleman asked what he was looking at with so much attention? 'Alas, Sir,' answered he with a sigh, 'I was endeavouring to trace out my own journey hither. Good Heavens! what a distance is 'Gloucester from us! What a vast track of land must 'be between me and my own home!' 'Ay, ay, young 'gentleman,' cries the other, 'and, by your sighing, 'from what you love better than your own home, or 'I am mistaken. I perceive now the object of your 'contemplation is not within your sight, and yet I 'fancy you have a pleasure in looking that way.' Jones answered with a smile, 'I find, old friend, you 'have not yet forgot the sensations of your youth.— 'I own my thoughts were employed as you have 'guessed.'

They now walked to that part of the hill which looks to the north-west, and which hangs over a vast and extensive wood. Here they were no sooner arrived, than they heard at a distance the most violent screams of a woman, proceeding from the wood below them. Jones listened a moment, and then without saying a word to his companion (for indeed the occasion seemed sufficiently pressing) ran, or rather slid, down the hill, and without the least apprehension or

Digitized by Google

concern for his own ſafety, made directly to the thicket whence the ſound had iſſued.

He had not entered far into the wood before he beheld a moſt ſhocking ſight indeed, a woman ſtript half naked, under the hands of a ruffian, who had put his garter round her neck, and was endeavouring to draw her up to a tree. Jones aſked no queſtions at this interval; but fell inſtantly upon the villain, and made ſuch good uſe of his truſty oaken ſtick, that he laid him ſprawling on the ground, before he could defend himſelf, indeed almoſt before he knew he was attacked; nor did he ceaſe the proſecution of his blows, till the woman herſelf begged him to forbear, ſaying, ſhe believed he had ſufficiently done his buſineſs.

The poor wretch then fell upon her knees to Jones, and gave him a thouſand thanks for her deliverance: he preſently lifted her up, and told her he was highly pleaſed with the extraordinary accident which had ſent him thither for her relief, where it was ſo improbable ſhe ſhould find any: adding, that Heaven ſeemed to have deſigned him as the happy inſtrument of her protection. 'Nay,' anſwered ſhe, 'I could almoſt 'conceive you to be ſome good angel; and to ſay the 'truth, you look more like an angel than a man, in 'my eye.' Indeed he was a charming figure; and if a very fine perſon, and a moſt comely ſet of features, adorned with youth, health, ſtrength, freſhneſs, ſpirit, and good nature, can make a man reſemble an angel, he certainly had that reſemblance.

The redeemed captive had not altogether ſo much of the human angelic ſpecies; ſhe ſeemed to be, at the leaſt, of the middle age, nor had her face much appearance of beauty; but her cloaths being torn from all the upper part of her body, her breaſts, which were well formed, and extremely white, attracted the eyes of her deliverer, and for a few moments they ſtood ſilent, and gazing at each other; till the ruffian on the ground beginning to move, Jones took the garter which had been intended for another purpoſe, and bound both his hands behind him. And now, on contemplating his face, he diſcovered, greatly to his ſurprize, and perhaps not a little to his ſatisfaction, this

Digitized by Google

this very person to be no other than ensign Northerton. Nor had the ensign forgotten his former antagonist, whom he knew the moment he came to himself. His surprize was equal to that of Jones; but I conceive his pleasure was rather less on this occasion.

Jones helped Northerton upon his legs, and then looking him stedfastly in the face, 'I fancy, Sir,' said he, 'you did not expect to meet me any more 'in this world, and I confess I had as little expecta-'tion to find you here. However, fortune, I see, 'hath brought us once more together, and hath given 'me satisfaction for the injury I have received, even 'without my own knowledge.'

'It is very much like a man of honour indeed,' answered Northerton, 'to take satisfaction by knock-'ing a man down behind his back. Neither am I 'capable of giving you satisfaction here, as I have 'no sword; but if you dare behave like a gentleman, 'let us go where I can furnish myself with one, and 'I will do by you as a man of honour ought.'

'Doth it become such a villain as you are,' cries Jones, 'to contaminate the name of honour by assuming 'it? But I shall waste no time in discourse with you.— 'Justice requires satisfaction of you now, and shall 'have it.' Then turning to the woman, he asked her, if she was near her home; or if not, whether she was acquainted with any house in the neighbourhood, where she might procure herself some decent cloaths, in order to proceed to a justice of the peace.

She answered, she was an entire stranger in that part of the world. Jones then recollecting himself, said he had a friend near, who would direct them; indeed he wondered at his not following; but, in fact, the good Man of the Hill, when our hero departed, sat himself down on the brow, where, though he had a gun in his hand, he with great patience and unconcern had attended the issue.

Jones then stepping without the wood, perceived the old man sitting as we have just described him: he presently exerted his utmost agility, and with surprizing expedition ascended the hill.

Digitized by Google

The old man advised him to carry the woman to Upton, which he said was the nearest town, and there he would be sure of furnishing her with all manner of conveniencies. Jones having received his direction to the place, took his leave of the man of the Hill, and desiring him to direct Partridge the same way, returned hastily to the wood.

Our hero, at his departure to make this enquiry of his friend, had considered, that as the ruffian's hands were tied behind him, he was incapable of executing any wicked purposes on the poor woman. Besides, he knew he should not be beyond the reach of her voice, and could return soon enough to prevent any mischief. He had moreover declared to the villain, that if he attempted the least insult, he would be himself immediately the executioner of vengeance on him. But Jones unluckily forgot, that though the hands of Northerton were tied, his legs were at liberty; nor did he lay the least injunction on the prisoner, that he should not make what use of these he pleased. Northerton therefore having given no parole of that kind, thought he might, without any breach of honour, depart, not being obliged, as he imagined, by any rules, to wait for a formal discharge. He therefore took up his legs, which were at liberty, and walked off through the wood, which favoured his retreat; nor did the woman, whose eyes were perhaps rather turned towards her deliverer, once think of his escape, or give herself any concern or trouble to prevent it.

Jones therefore, at his return, found the woman alone. He would have spent some time in searching for Northerton; but she would not permit him; earnestly entreating that he would accompany her to the town whither they had been directed. 'As to the 'fellow's escape,' said she, 'it gives me no uneasi'ness: for philosophy and christianity both preach 'up forgiveness of injuries. But for you, Sir, I am 'concerned at the trouble I give you; nay indeed my 'nakedness may well make me ashamed to look you 'in the face; and if it was not for the sake of your 'protection, I should wish to go alone.'

Jones

Jones offered her his coat; but, I know not for what reason, she absolutely refused the most earnest solicitations to accept it. He then begged her to forget both the causes of her confusion. 'With regard to the 'former,' says he, 'I have done no more than my 'duty in protecting you; and as for the latter, I will 'entirely remove it, by walking before you all the 'way; for I would not have my eyes offend you, and 'I could not answer for my power of resisting the at-'tractive charms of so much beauty.'

Thus our hero and the redeemed lady walked in the same manner as Orpheus and Eurydice marched heretofore: but though I cannot believe that Jones was designedly tempted by his fair one to look behind him, yet as she frequently wanted his assistance to help her over stiles, and had besides many trips and other accidents, he was often obliged to turn about. However, he had better fortune than what attended poor Orpheus; for he brought his companion, or rather follower, safe into the famous town of Upton.

CHAP. III.

The arrival of Mr Jones, with his lady, at the inn, with a very full description of the battle of Upton.

THOUGH the reader, we doubt not, is very eager to know who this lady was, and how she fell into the hands of Mr Northerton; we must beg him to suspend his curiosity for a short time, as we are obliged, for some very good reasons, which hereafter perhaps he may guess, to delay his satisfaction a little longer.

Mr Jones and his fair companion no sooner entered the town, than they went directly to that inn which, in their eyes, presented the fairest appearance to the street. Here Jones, having ordered a servant to shew a room above stairs, was ascending, when the dishevelled fair hastily following, was laid hold on by the master of the house, who cried, 'Hey-day, where 'is that beggar wench going? Stay below stairs, I 'desire you;' but Jones at that instant thundered from

above, 'Let the lady come up,' in so authoritative a voice, that the good man instantly withdrew his hands, and the lady made the best of her way to the chamber.

Here Jones wished her joy of her safe arrival, and then departed, in order, as he promised, to send the landlady up with some clothes. The poor woman thanked him heartily for all his kindness, and said, she hoped she should see him again soon, to thank him a thousand times more. During this short conversation, she covered her white bosom as well as she could possibly with her arms: for Jones could not avoid stealing a sly peep or two, though he took all imaginable care to avoid giving any offence.

Our travellers had happened to take up their residence at a house of exceeding good repute, whither Irish ladies of strict virtue, and many northern lasses of the same predicament, were accustomed to resort in their way to Bath. The landlady therefore would by no means have admitted any conversation of a disreputable kind to pass under her roof. Indeed so foul and contagious are all such proceedings, that they contaminate the very innocent scenes where they are committed, and give the name of a bad house, or of a house of ill repute, to all those where they are suffered to be carried on.

Not that I would intimate that such strict chastity as was preserved in the temple of Vesta can possibly be maintained at a public inn. My good landlady did not hope for such a blessing, nor would any of the ladies I have spoken of, or indeed any others of the most rigid note, have expected or insisted on any such thing. But to exclude all vulgar concubinage, and to drive all whores in rags from within the walls, is within the power of every one. This my landlady very strictly adhered to; and this her virtuous guests, who did not travel in rags, would very reasonably have expected of her.

Now it required no very blameable degree of suspicion to imagine that Mr Jones and his ragged companion had certain purposes in their intention, which, though tolerated in some Christian countries,

con-

Digitized by Google

connived at in others, and practiſed in all, are, however, as expreſsly forbidden as murder, or any other horrid vice, by that religion which is univerſally believed in thoſe countries. The landlady therefore had no ſooner received an intimation of the entrance of the above-ſaid perſons, than ſhe began to meditate the moſt expeditious means for their expulſion. In order to this, ſhe had provided herſelf with a long and deadly inſtrument, with which, in time of peace, the chambermaid was wont to demoliſh the labours of the induſtrious ſpider. In vulgar phraſe, ſhe had taken up the broom-ſtick, and was juſt about to ſally from the kitchen, when Jones accoſted her with a demand of a gown and other veſtments, to cover the half-naked woman above ſtairs.

Nothing can be more provoking to the human temper, nor more dangerous to that cardinal virtue, patience, than ſolicitations of extraordinary offices of kindneſs, on behalf of thoſe very perſons with whom we are highly incenſed. For this reaſon Shakeſpeare hath artfully introduced his Deſdemona ſoliciting favours for Caſſio of her huſband, as the means of inflaming not only his jealouſy, but his rage, to the higheſt pitch of madneſs; and we find the unfortunate Moor leſs able to command his paſſion on this occaſion, than even when he beheld his valued preſent to his wife in the hands of his ſuppoſed rival. In fact, we regard theſe efforts as inſults on our underſtanding; and to ſuch the pride of man is very difficultly brought to ſubmit.

My landlady, though a very good-tempered woman, had, I ſuppoſe, ſome of this pride in her compoſition; for Jones had ſcarce ended his requeſt, when ſhe fell upon him with a certain weapon, which though it be neither long, nor ſharp, nor hard, nor indeed threatens from its appearance with either death or wound, hath been however held in great dread and abhorrence by many wiſe men; nay, by many brave ones; inſomuch that ſome who have dared to look into the mouth of a loaded cannon, have not dared to look into a mouth where this weapon was brandiſhed; and rather than run the hazard of its execution, have contented themſelves

Digitized by Google

themſelves with making a moſt pitiful and ſneaking figure in the eyes of all their acquaintance.

To confeſs the truth, I am afraid Mr Jones was one of theſe; for though he was attacked and violently belaboured with the aforeſaid weapon, he could not be provoked to make any reſiſtance; but in a moſt cowardly manner applied, with many entreaties, to his antagoniſt to deſiſt from purſuing her blows: in plain Engliſh, he only begged her with the utmoſt earneſtneſs to hear him: but, before he could obtain his requeſt, my landlord himſelf entered into the fray, and embraced that ſide of the cauſe which ſeemed to ſtand very little in need of aſſiſtance.

There are a ſort of heroes who are ſuppoſed to be determined in their chuſing or avoiding a conflict, by the character and behaviour of the perſon whom they are to engage. Theſe are ſaid to know their men, and Jones, I believe, knew his woman; for, though he had been ſo ſubmiſſive to her, he was no ſooner attacked by her huſband, than he demonſtrated an immediate ſpirit of reſentment, and enjoined him ſilence, under a very ſevere penalty; no leſs than that, I think, of being converted into fuel for his own fire.

The huſband, with great indignation, but with a mixture of pity, anſwered, 'You muſt pray firſt to 'be made able; I believe, I am a better man than 'yourſelf; ay, every way, that I am;' and preſently proceeded to diſcharge half a dozen whores at the lady above ſtairs, the laſt of which had ſcarce iſſued from his lips, when a ſwinging blow from the cudgel that Jones carried in his hand, aſſaulted him over the ſhoulders.

It is a queſtion whether the landlord or the landlady was the moſt expeditious in returning this blow. My landlord, whoſe hands were empty, fell to with his fiſt, and the good-wife, uplifting her broom, and aiming at the head of Jones, had probably put an immediate end to the fray, and to Jones likewiſe, had not the deſcent of this broom been prevented,—not by the miraculous intervention of any heathen deity,

Digitized by Google

deity, but be a very natural, though fortunate accident; viz. by the arrival of Partridge, who entered the houſe at that inſtant, (for fear had cauſed him to run every ſtep from the hill), and who, ſeeing the danger which threatened his maſter, or companion, (which you chuſe to call him), prevented ſo ſad a cataſtrophe, by catching hold of the landlady's arm, as it was brandiſhed aloft in the air.

The landlady ſoon perceived the impediment which prevented her blow; and, being unable to relcue her arm from the hands of Partridge, ſhe let fall the broom; and then, leaving Jones to the diſcipline of her huſband, ſhe fell with the utmoſt fury on that poor fellow, who had already given ſome intimation of himſelf, by crying, 'Zounds! do you intend to kill 'my friend?'

Partridge, though not much addicted to battle, would not however ſtand ſtill when his friend was attacked; nor was he much diſpleaſed with that part of the combat which fell to his ſhare: he therefore returned my landlady's blows as ſoon as he received them; and now the fight was obſtinately maintained on all parts, and it ſeemed doubtful to which ſide fortune would incline, when the naked lady, who had liſtened at the top of the ſtairs to the dialogue which preceded the engagement, deſcended ſuddenly from above, and, without weighing the unfair inequality of two to one, fell upon the poor woman who was boxing with Partridge; nor did that great champion deſiſt, but rather redoubled his fury, when he found freſh ſuccours were arrived to his aſſiſtance.

Victory muſt now have fallen to the ſide of the travellers, (for the braveſt troops muſt yield to numbers), had not Suſan the chambermaid come luckily to ſupport her miſtreſs. This Suſan was as two-handed a wench (according to the phraſe), as any in the country, and would, I believe, have beat the famed Thaleſtris herſelf, or any of her ſubject Amazons; for her form was robuſt and manlike, and every way made for ſuch encounters. As her hands and arms were formed to give blows with great miſchief to an enemy, ſo

Digitized by Google

ſo was her face as well contrived to receive blows without any great injury to herſelf: her noſe being already flat to her face; her lips were ſo large, that no ſwelling could be perceived in them, and moreover they were ſo hard, that a fiſt could hardly make any impreſſion on them. Laſtly, her cheek-bones ſtood out, as if nature had intended them for two baſtions to defend her eyes in thoſe encounters for which ſhe ſeemed ſo well calculated, and to which ſhe was moſt wonderfully well inclined.

This fair creature, entering the field of battle, immediately filed to that wing where her miſtreſs maintained ſo unequal a fight with one of either ſex. Here ſhe preſently challenged Partridge to ſingle combat. He accepted the challenge, and a moſt deſperate fight began between them.

Now the dogs of war being let looſe began to lick their bloody lips; now Victory with golden wings hung hovering in the air. Now Fortune, taking her ſcales from her ſhelf, began to weigh the fates of Tom Jones, his female companion, and Partridge, againſt the landlord, his wife, and maid; all which hung in exact balance before her; when a good-natured accident put ſuddenly an end to the bloody fray, with which half of the combatants had already ſufficiently feaſted. This accident was the arrival of a coach and four; upon which my landlord and landlady immediately deſiſted from fighting, and at their entreaty obtained the ſame favour of their antagoniſts; but Suſan was not ſo kind to Partridge; for that Amazonian fair having overthrown and beſtrid her enemy, was now cuffing him luſtily with both hands, without any regard to his requeſt of a ceſſation of arms, or to thoſe loud exclamations of murder which he roared forth.

No ſooner, however, had Jones quitted the landlord, than he flew to the reſcue of his defeated companion, from whom he with much difficulty drew off the enraged chambermaid; but Partridge was not immediately ſenſible of his deliverance; for he ſtill lay flat on the floor, guarding his face with his hands, nor did he ceaſe roaring, till Jones had forced him

Digitized by Google

him to look up, and to perceive that the battle was at an end.

The landlord, who had no viſible hurt, and the landlady hiding her well ſcratched face with her handkerchief, ran both haſtily to the door to attend the coach, from which a young lady and her maid now alighted. Theſe the landlady preſently uſhered into that room where Mr Jones had at firſt depoſited his fair prize, as it was the beſt apartment in the houſe. Hither they were obliged to paſs through the field of battle, which they did with the utmoſt haſte, covering their faces with their handkerchiefs, as deſirous to avoid the notice of any one. Indeed their caution was quite unneceſſary: for the poor unfortunate Helen, the fatal cauſe of all the bloodſhed, was entirely taken up in endeavouring to conceal her own face, and Jones was no leſs occupied in reſcuing Partridge from the fury of Suſan; which being happily effected, the poor fellow immediately departed to the pump to waſh his face, and to ſtop that bloody torrent which Suſan had plentifully ſet a-flowing from his noſtrils.

CHAP. IV.

In which the arrival of a man of war puts a final end to hoſtilities, and cauſes the concluſion of a firm and laſting peace between all parties.

A SERJEANT and a file of muſqueteers, with a deſerter in their cuſtody, arrived about this time. The ſerjeant preſently enquired for the principal magiſtrate of the town, and was informed by my landlord, that he himſelf was veſted in that office. He then demanded his billets, together with a mug of beer, and complaining it was cold, ſpread himſelf before the kitchen fire.

Mr Jones was at this time comforting the poor diſtreſſed lady, who ſat down at a table in the kitchen, and leaning her head upon her arm, was bemoaning her misfortunes; but leſt my fair readers ſhould be in pain concerning a particular circumſtance, I think proper here to acquaint them, that before ſhe had quitted

Digitized by Google

quitted the room above ſtairs, ſhe had ſo well covered herſelf with a pillowbeer which ſhe there found, that her regard to decency was not in the leaſt violated by the preſence of ſo many men as were now in the room.

One of the ſoldiers now went up to the ſerjeant, and whiſpered ſomething in his ear; upon which he ſtedfaſtly fixed his eyes on the lady, and having looked at her for near a minute, he came up to her, ſaying, 'I 'aſk pardon, Madam, but I am certain I am not de-'ceived, you can be no other perſon than Captain 'Waters's lady'

The poor woman, who in her preſent diſtreſs had very little regarded the face of any perſon preſent, no ſooner looked at the ſerjeant, than ſhe preſently recollected him, and calling him by his name, anſwered, 'that ſhe was indeed the unhappy perſon he imagined 'her to be;' but added, 'I wonder any one ſhould 'know me in this diſguiſe.' To which the ſerjeant replied, 'he was very much ſurprized to ſee her lady-'ſhip in ſuch a dreſs, and was afraid ſome accident 'had happened to her.' 'An accident hath happened 'to me, indeed,' ſays ſhe, 'and I am highly obliged 'to this gentleman, (pointing to Jones), that it was 'not a fatal one, or that I am now living to mention 'it.' 'Whatever the gentleman hath done,' cries the ſerjeant, 'I am ſure the Captain will make him amends 'for it; and if I can be of any ſervice, your Ladyſhip 'may command me, and I ſhall think myſelf very hap-'py to have it in my power to ſerve your Ladyſhip; 'and ſo indeed may any one, for I know the Captain 'will well reward them for it.'

The landlady, who heard from the ſtairs all that paſt between the ſerjeant and Mrs Waters, came haſtily down, and running directly up to her, began to aſk pardon for the offences ſhe had committed, begging that all might be imputed to ignorance of her quality: for 'Lud, Madam,' ſays ſhe, 'how ſhould I have ima-'gined that a lady of your faſhion would appear in 'ſuch a dreſs? I am ſure, Madam, if I had once ſuſ-'pected that your Ladyſhip was your Ladyſhip, I would 'ſooner have burnt my tongue out, than have ſaid what 'I have

Digitized by Google

'have said: and I hope your ladyship will accept 'of a gown, till you can get your own cloaths.'

'Prithee, woman,' says Mrs Waters, 'cease your 'impertinence: how can you imagine I should con- 'cern myself about any thing which comes from the 'lips of such low creatures as yourself? But I am 'surprized at your assurance in thinking, after what 'is past, that I will condescend to put on any of your 'dirty things. I would have you know, creature, I 'have a spirit above that.'

Here Jones interfered, and begged Mrs Waters to forgive the landlady, and to accept her gown: 'For 'I must confess,' cries he, 'our appearance was a 'little suspicious when first we came in: and I am 'well assured, all this good woman did was, as she 'professed, out of regard to the reputation of her 'house.'

'Yes, upon my truly was it,' says she, 'the gen- 'tleman speaks very much like a gentleman, and I 'see very plainly is so; and to be certain the house 'is well known to be a house of as good reputation 'as any on the road, and, though I say it, is fre- 'quented by gentry of the best quality, both Irish 'and English. I defy any body to say black is my 'eye, for that matter. And, as I was saying, if I 'had known your ladyship to be your ladyship, I 'would as soon have burnt my fingers as have af- 'fronted your ladyship; but truly, where gentry come 'and spend their money, I am not willing that they 'should be scandalized by a set of poor shabby ver- 'min, that where-ever they go, leave more lice than 'money behind them; such folks never raise my com- 'passion: for, to be certain, it is foolish to have any 'for them, and, if our justices did as they ought, 'they would be all whipt out of the kingdom; for, 'to be certain, it is what is most fitting for them. 'But, as for your ladyship, I am heartily sorry your 'ladyship hath had a misfortune, and, if your lady- 'ship will do me the honour to wear my cloaths till 'you can get some of your ladyship's own, to be cer- 'tain the best I have is at your ladyship's service.'

Whether cold, shame, or the persuasions of Mr

Digitized by Google

Jones prevailed moſt on Mrs Waters, I will not determine; but ſhe ſuffered herſelf to be pacified by this ſpeech of my landlady, and retired with that good woman, in order to apparel herſelf in a decent manner.

My landlord was likewiſe beginning his oration to Jones, but was preſently interrupted by that generous youth, who ſhook him heartily by the hand; and aſſured him of entire forgiveneſs, ſaying, 'If you are 'ſatisfied, my worthy friend, I promiſe you I am;' and indeed in one ſenſe the landlord had the better reaſon to be ſatisfied: for he had received a belly-full of drubbing, whereas Jones had ſcarce felt a ſingle blow.

Partridge, who had been all this time waſhing his bloody noſe at the pump, returned into the kitchen at the inſtant when his maſter and the landlord were ſhaking hands with each other. As he was of a peaceable diſpoſition, he was pleaſed with thoſe ſymptoms of reconciliation; and, though his face bore ſome marks of Suſan's fiſt, and many more of her nails, he rather choſe to be contented with his fortune in the laſt battle, than to endeavour at bettering it in another.

The heroic Suſan was likewiſe well contented with her victory, though it had coſt her a black eye, which Partridge had given her at the firſt onſet. Between theſe two, therefore, a league was ſtruck, and thoſe hands, which had been the inſtruments of war, became now the mediators of peace.

Matters were thus reſtored to a perfect calm, at which the ſerjeant, though it may ſeem ſo contrary to the principles of his profeſſion, teſtified his approbation. 'Why now, that's friendly,' ſaid he; 'd—n 'me, I hate to ſee two people bear ill-will to one 'another, after they have had a tuſſel. The only 'way when friends quarrel, is to ſee it out fairly in 'a friendly manner, as a man may call it, either with 'a fiſt, or ſword, or piſtol, according as they like, 'and then let it be all over: for my own part, d—n 'me if ever I love my friend better than when I am 'fighting with him. To bear malice is more like a 'Frenchman than an Engliſhman.'

He

Digitized by Google

He then propoſed a libation as a neceſſary part of the ceremony at all treaties of this kind. Perhaps the reader may here conclude, that he was well verſed in ancient hiſtory; but this, though highly probable, as he cited no authority to ſupport the cuſtom, I will not affirm with any confidence. Moſt likely indeed it is, that he founded his opinion on very good authority, ſince he confirmed it with many violent oaths.

Jones no ſooner heard the propoſal, than, immediately agreeing with the learned ſerjeant, he ordered a bowl, or rather a large mug, filled with the liquor uſed on theſe occaſions, to be brought in, and then began the ceremony himſelf. He placed his right hand in that of the landlord, and, ſeizing the bowl with his left, uttered the uſual words, and then made his libation. After which the ſame was obſerved by all preſent. Indeed there is very little need of being particular in deſcribing the whole form, as it differed ſo little from thoſe libations of which ſo much is recorded in ancient authors, and their modern tranſcribers. The principal difference lay in two inſtances: for firſt the preſent company poured the liquor only down their throats; and, 2dly, the ſerjeant, who officiated as prieſt, drank the laſt; but he preſerved, I believe, the ancient form in ſwallowing much the largeſt draught of the whole company, and in being the only perſon preſent who contributed nothing towards the libation, beſides his good offices in aſſiſting at the performance.

The good people now ranged themſelves round the kitchen fire, where good humour ſeemed to maintain an abſolute dominion, and Partridge not only forgot his ſhameful defeat, but converted hunger into thirſt, and ſoon became extremely facetious. We muſt, however, quit this agreeable aſſembly for a while, and attend Mr Jones to Mrs Waters's apartment, where the dinner which he had now beſpoke was on the table. Indeed it took no long time in preparing, having been all dreſſed three days before, and required nothing more from the cook than to warm it over again.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. V.

An apology for all heroes who have good stomachs, with a description of a battle of the amorous kind.

HEROES, notwithstanding the high ideas which by the means of flatterers they may entertain of themselves, or the world may conceive of them, have certainly more of mortal than divine about them. However elevated their minds may be, their bodies at least (which is much the major part of most) are liable to the worst infirmities, and subject to the vilest offices of human nature. Among these latter the act of eating, which hath by several wise men been considered as extremely mean and derogatory from the philosophic dignity, must be in some measure performed by the greatest prince, hero, or philosopher upon earth; nay, sometimes nature hath been so frolicsome as to exact of these dignified characters a much more exorbitant share of this office, than she hath obliged those of the lowest order to perform.

To say the truth, as no known inhabitant of this globe is really more than man, so none need be ashamed of submitting to what the necessities of man demand; but when those great personages I have just mentioned, condescend to aim at confining such low offices to themselves; as when by hoarding or destroying, they seem desirous to prevent any others from eating, they then surely become very low and despicable.

Now, after this short preface, we think it no disparagement to our hero to mention the immoderate ardour with which he laid about him at this season. Indeed it may be doubted whether Ulysses, who by the way seems to have had the best stomach of all the heroes in that eating poem of the Odyssey, ever made a better meal. Three pounds at least of that flesh which formerly had contributed to the composition of an ox, was now honoured with becoming part of the individual Mr Jones.

This particular we thought ourselves obliged to mention, as it may account for our hero's temporary neglect

neglect of his fair companion; who ate but very little, and was indeed employed in considerations of a very different nature, which passed unobserved by Jones, till he had entirely satisfied that appetite which a fast of twenty-four hours had procured him; but his dinner was no sooner ended, than his attention to other matters revived; with these matters, therefore, we shall now proceed to acquaint the reader.

Mr Jones, of whose personal accomplishments we have hitherto said very little, was in reality one of the handsomest young fellows in the world. His face, besides being the picture of health, had in it the most apparent marks of sweetness and good nature. These qualities were indeed so characteristical in his countenance, that while the spirit and sensibility in his eyes, though they must have been perceived by an accurate observer, might have escaped the notice of the less discerning, so strongly was this good-nature painted in his look, that it was remarked by almost every one who saw him.

It was, perhaps, as much owing to this, as to a very fine complexion, that his face had a delicacy in it almost inexpressible, and which might have given him an air rather too effeminate, had it not been joined to a most masculine person and mien; which latter had as much in them of the Hercules, as the former had of the Adonis. He was, besides, active, genteel, gay and good-humoured, and had a flow of animal spirits, which enlivened every conversation where he was present.

When the reader hath duly reflected on these many charms which all centered in our hero, and considers at the same time the fresh obligations which Mrs Waters had to him, it will be a mark of more prudery than candour to entertain a bad opinion of her, because she conceived a very good opinion of him.

But whatever censures may be passed upon her, it is my business to relate matters of fact with veracity. Mrs Waters had, in truth, not only a good opinion of our hero, but a very great affection for him. To speak out boldly at once, she was in love, according to the present universally received sense of that phrase;

Digitized by Google

by which love is applied indiscriminately to the desirable object of all our passions, appetites and senses, and is understood to be that preference which we give to one kind of food rather than to another.

But though the love to these several objects may possibly be one and the same in all cases, its operations however must be allowed to be different: for how much soever we may be in love with an excellent surloin of beef, or bottle of Burgundy; with a damask rose, or Cremona fiddle; yet do we never smile nor ogle, nor dress, nor flatter, nor endeavour by any other arts or tricks to gain the affection of the said beef, &c. Sigh indeed we sometimes may; but it is generally in the absence, not in the presence of the beloved object. For otherwise we might possibly complain of their ingratitude and deafness, with the same reason as Pasiphae doth of her bull, whom she endeavoured to engage by all the coquetry practised with good success in the drawing room, on the much more sensible as well as tender hearts of the fine gentlemen there.

The contrary happens in that love, which operates between persons of the same species, but of different sexes. Here we are no sooner in love, than it becomes our principal care to engage the affections of the object beloved. For what other purpose indeed are our youth instructed in all the arts of rendering themselves agreeable? If it was not with a view to this love, I question whether any of those trades, which deal in setting off and adorning the human person, would procure a livelihood. Nay, those great polishers of our manners, who are by some thought to teach what principally distinguishes us from the brute creation, even dancing-masters themselves, might possibly find no place in society. In short, all the graces which young ladies and young gentlemen too learn from others; and the many improvements which, by the help of a looking-glass, they add of their own, are in reality those very *spicula & faces amoris*, so often mentioned by Ovid; or, as they are sometimes called in our own language, The whole artillery of love.

Now

Digitized by Google

Now Mrs Waters and our hero had no sooner sat down together, than the former began to play this artillery upon the latter. But here, as we are about to attempt a description hitherto unessayed either in prose or verse, we think proper to invoke the assistance of certain aerial beings, who will, we doubt not, come kindly to our aid on this occasion.

'Say then, ye graces, you that inhabit the heavenly mansions of Seraphina's countenance; for you 'are truly divine, are always in her presence, and 'well know all the arts of charming; say, what were 'the weapons now used to captivate the heart of Mr 'Jones?'

'First, from two lovely blue eyes, whose bright 'orbs flashed lightning at their discharge, flew forth 'two pointed ogles: but, happily for our hero, hit 'only a vast piece of beef which he was then conveying into his plate, and harmless spent their force. 'The fair warrior perceived their miscarriage, and immediately from her fair bosom drew forth a deadly 'sigh: a sigh, which none could have heard unmoved, and which was sufficient at once to have 'swept off a dozen beaus; so soft, so sweet, so tender, that the insinuating air must have found its subtle way to the heart of our hero, had it not luckily 'been driven from his ears by the coarse bubbling 'of some bottled ale, which at that time he was pouring forth. Many other weapons did she essay; but 'the god of eating (if there be any such deity; for I 'do not confidently assert it) preserved his votary; or 'perhaps it may not be *dignus vindice nodus*, and the 'present security of Jones may be accounted for by 'natural means: for as love frequently preserves from 'the attacks of hunger, so may hunger possibly, in 'some cases, defend us against love.

'The fair one, enraged at her frequent disappointments, determined on a short cessation of arms; 'which interval she employed in making ready every 'engine of amorous warfare for the renewing of the 'attack when dinner should be over.

'No sooner then was the cloth removed, than she 'again began her operations. First, having planted

'her

Digitized by Google

her right eye ſide-ways againſt Mr Jones, ſhe ſhot from its corner a moſt penetrating glance; which, though great part of its force was ſpent before it reached our hero, did not vent itſelf abſolutely without effect. This the fair one perceiving, haſtily withdrew her eyes, and levelled them downwards, as if ſhe was concerned for what ſhe had done: though by this means ſhe deſigned only to draw him from his guard, and indeed to open his eyes, through which ſhe intended to ſurpriſe his heart. And now, gently lifting up thoſe two bright orbs which had already begun to make an impreſſion on poor Jones, ſhe diſcharged a volley of ſmall charms at once from her whole countenance in a ſmile. Not a ſmile of mirth, nor of joy; but a ſmile of affection, which moſt ladies have always ready at their command, and which ſerves them to ſhow at once their good humour, their pretty dimples, and their white teeth.

'This ſmile our hero received full in his eyes, and was immediately ſtaggered with its force. He then began to ſee the deſigns of the enemy, and indeed to feel their ſucceſs. A parley was now ſet on foot between the parties; during which the artful fair ſo ſlily and imperceptibly carried on her attack, that ſhe had almoſt ſubdued the heart of our hero, before ſhe again repaired to acts of hoſtility. To confeſs the truth, I am afraid Mr Jones maintained a kind of Dutch defence, and treacherouſly delivered up the garriſon, without duly weighing his allegiance to the fair Sophia. In ſhort, no ſooner had the amorous parley ended, and the lady had unmaſked the royal battery, by careleſsly letting her handkerchief drop from her neck, than the heart of Mr Jones was entirely taken, and the fair conqueror enjoyed the uſual fruits of her victory.'

Here the graces think proper to end this deſcription, and here we think proper to end the chapter.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VI.

A friendly converſation in the kitchen, which had a very common, though not very friendly concluſion.

WHILE our lovers were entertaining themſelves in the manner which is partly deſcribed in the foregoing chapter, they were likewiſe furniſhing out an entertainment for their good friends in the kitchen. And this in a double ſenſe, by affording them matter for their converſation, and, at the ſame time, drink to enliven their ſpirits.

There were now aſſembled round the kitchen fire, beſides my landlord and landlady, who occaſionally went backward and forward, Mr Partridge, the ſerjeant, and the coachman who drove the young lady and her maid.

Partridge having acquainted the company with what he had learnt from the Man of the Hill, concerning the ſituation in which Mrs Waters had been found by Jones, the ſerjeant proceeded to that part of her hiſtory which was known to him. He ſaid, ſhe was the wife of Mr Waters, who was a captain in their regiment, and had often been with him at quarters. 'Some folks,' ſays he, 'uſed indeed to 'doubt whether they were lawfully married in a 'church or no. But, for my part, that's no buſi-'neſs of mine; I muſt own, if I was put to my cor-'poral oath, I believe ſhe is little better than one of 'us; and I fancy the captain may go to heaven 'when the ſun ſhines upon a rainy day. But if he 'does, that is neither here nor there; for he won't 'want company. And the lady, to give the devil 'his due, is a very good ſort of lady, and loves the 'cloth, and is always deſirous to do ſtrict juſtice to 'it; for ſhe hath begged off many a poor ſoldier, 'and, by her good will, would never have any of 'them puniſhed. But yet, to be ſure, enſign Nor-'therton and ſhe were very well acquainted together, 'at our laſt quarters, that is the very right and truth 'of the matter. But the captain he knows nothing 'about

'about it; and as long as there is enough for him too, 'what does it signify? He loves her not a bit the 'worse, and I am certain would run any man through 'the body that was to abuse her, therefore I won't 'abuse her, for my part. I only repeat what other 'folks say; and to be certain, what every body says, 'there must be some truth in.' 'Ay, ay, a great 'deal of truth, I warrant you,' cries Partridge; '*Veritas odium parit*' 'All a parcel of scandalous 'stuff,' answered the mistress of the house. 'I am 'sure, now she is dress, she looks like a very good 'sort of lady, and she behaves herself like one; for 'she gave me a guinea for the use of my clothes.' 'A very good lady, indeed, cries the landlord; 'and 'if you had not been a little too hasty, you would 'not have quarrelled with her as you did at first.' 'You need mention that with my truly,' answered she. 'if it had not been for your nonsense, nothing had 'happened. You must be meddling with what did 'not belong to you, and throw in your fool's dis-'course.' 'Well, well,' answered he, 'what's past 'cannot be mended, so there's an end of the matter.' 'Yes,' cries she, 'for this once; but will it be mend-'ed ever the more hereafter? This is not the first 'time I have suffered for your numscull's prate. I wish 'you would always hold your tongue in the house, 'and meddle only in matters without doors which con-'cern you. Don't you remember what happened about 'seven years ago?'—'Nay, my dear,' returned he, 'don't rip up old stories. Come, come, all's well; and 'I am sorry for what I have done.' The landlady was going to reply, but was prevented by the peace-making serjeant, sorely to the displeasure of Partridge, who was a great lover of what is called fun, and a great promoter of those harmless quarrels which tend rather to the production of comical than tragical incidents.

The serjeant asked Partridge whither he and his master were travelling? 'None of your magisters,' answered Partridge; 'I am no man's servant, I as-'sure you; for though I have had misfortunes in 'the world, I write gentleman after my name; and

'as

'as poor and simple as I may appear now, I have 'taught grammar school in my time. *Sed hei mihi! 'non sum quod fui.*' 'No offence I hope, Sir,' said the serjeant: 'where then, if I may venture to 'so bold, may you and your friend be travelling?' —'You have now denominated us right,' says Partridge. '*Amici sumus.* And I promise you my friend 'is one of the greatest gentlemen in the kingdom.' (At which words both landlord and landlady pricked up their ears). 'He is the heir of 'squire All-'worthy.' 'What, the 'squire who doth so much 'good all over the country?' cries my landlady, 'Even he,' answered Partridge. 'Then I warrant,' says she, 'he'll have a swinging great estate here-'after.' 'Most certainly,' answered Partridge. 'Well,' replied the landlady, 'I thought the first moment I 'saw him he looked like a good sort of gentleman; 'but my husband here, to be sure, is wiser than any 'body.' 'I own, my dear,' cries he, 'it was a mis-'take.' 'A mistake indeed!' answered she; 'but 'when did you ever know me to make such mis-'takes?'—'But how comes it, Sir,' cries the landlord, 'that such a great gentleman walks about the 'country afoot!' 'I don't know,' returned Partridge; 'great gentlemen have humours sometimes. He hath 'now a dozen of horses and servants at Gloucester; and 'nothing would serve him, but last night, it being 'very hot weather, he must cool himself with a walk 'to yon high hill, whither I likewise walked with him 'to bear him company; but if ever you catch me there 'again; for I was never so frightened in all my life. 'We met with the strangest man there.' 'I'll be 'hanged,' cries the landlord, 'if it was not the Man 'of the Hill, as they call him; if indeed he be a 'man; but I know several people who believe it is the 'devil that lives there.' 'Nay, nay, like enough,' says Partridge: 'and now you put me in the head 'of it, I verily and sincerely believe it was the devil; 'though I could not perceive his cloven feet, but per-'haps he might have the power given him to hide that, 'since evil spirits can appear in what shapes they 'please,' 'And pray, Sir,' says the serjeant, 'no of-'fence

'fence I hope; but pray what ſort of a gentleman is 'the devil? for I have heard ſome of our officers 'ſay, there is no ſuch perſon; and that it is only a 'trick of the parſons, to prevent their being broke; 'for if it was publickly known that there was no de-'vil, the parſons would be of no more uſe than we are 'in time of peace.' 'Thoſe officers,' ſays Partridge, 'are very great ſcholars, I ſuppoſe.' 'Not much 'of ſchollards neither,' anſwered the ſerjeant: 'they 'have not half your learning, Sir, I believe; and 'to be ſure, I thought there muſt be a devil, not-'withſtanding what they ſaid, though one of them 'was a captain: for methought, thinks I to myſelf, 'if there be no devil, how can wicked people be ſent 'to him? and I have read all that upon a book.' 'Some of your officers,' quoth the landlord, 'will 'find there is a devil, to their ſhame, I believe. I 'don't queſtion but he'll pay off ſome old ſcores, 'upon my account. Here was one quartered upon 'me half a year, who had the conſcience to take 'up one of my beſt beds, though he hardly ſpent 'a ſhilling a day in the houſe, and ſuffered his men 'to roaſt cabbages at the kitchen fire, becauſe I 'would not give them a dinner on a Sunday Every 'good Chriſtian muſt deſire there ſhould be a devil 'for the puniſhment of ſuch wretches.' 'Harkee, 'landlord,' ſaid the ſerjeant, 'don't abuſe the cloth; 'for I won't take it.' 'D—n the cloth,' anſwered the landlord. 'I have ſuffered enough by them.' 'Bear witneſs, gentlemen,' ſays the ſerjeant, 'he curſes 'the king, and that's high treaſon' 'I curſe the 'king! you villain,' ſays the landlord. 'Yes, you 'did,' cries the ſerjeant, 'you curſed the cloth, and 'that's curſing the king. It's all one and the ſame; 'for every man who curſes the cloth, would curſe 'the king if he durſt: ſo for matter o'that it's all 'one and the ſame thing.' 'Excuſe me there, Mr 'ſerjeant,' quoth Partridge, 'that's a *non ſequitur*.' 'None of your outlandiſh linguo,' anſwered the ſer-jeant, leaping from his ſeat; 'I will not ſit ſtill and 'hear the cloth abuſed.'—'You miſtake me, friend,' cries Partridge, 'I did not mean to abuſe the cloth:

Digitized by Google

'only said your conclusion was a *non sequitur* *.' 'You are another,' cries the serjeant, 'an you come 'to that. No more a *sequitur* than yourself. You 'are a pack of rascals, and I'll prove it; for I will 'fight the best man of you all for twenty pound.' This challenge effectually silenced Partridge, whose stomach for drubbing did not so soon return after the hearty meal which he had lately been treated with; but the coachman, whose bones were less sore, and whose appetite for fighting was somewhat sharper, did not so easily brook the affront, of which he conceived some part at least fell to his share. He started therefore from his seat, and advancing to the serjeant, swore he looked on himself to be as good a man as any in the army, and offered to box for a guinea. The military man accepted the combat, but refused the wager; upon which both immediately stript and engaged, till the driver of horses was so well mauled by the leader of men, that he was obliged to exhaust his small remainder of breath in begging for quarter.

The young lady was now desirous to depart, and had given orders for her coach to be prepared; but all in vain, for the coachman was disabled from performing his office for that evening. An ancient heathen would perhaps have imputed this disability to the god of drink, no less than to the god of war; for, in reality, both the combatants had sacrificed as well to the former deity as to the latter. To speak plainly, they were both dead drunk, nor was Partridge in a much better situation. As for my landlord, drinking was his trade: and the liquor had no more effect on him, than it had on any other vessel in his house.

The mistress of the inn being summoned to attend Mr Jones and his companion, at their tea, gave a full relation of the latter part of the foregoing scene; and at the same time expressed great concern for the young lady, 'who,' she said, 'was 'under the utmost uneasiness at being prevented

* This word, which the serjeant unhappily mistook for an affront, is a term in logic, and means that the conclusion doth not follow from the premises.

Digitized by Google

'from purſuing her journey. She is a ſweet pretty 'creature,' added ſhe, 'and I am certain I have 'ſeen her face before. I fancy ſhe is in love, and 'is running away from her friends. Who knows but 'ſome young gentleman or other may be expecting 'her, with a heart as heavy as her own?'

Jones fetched a hearty ſigh at thoſe words; of which, though Mrs Waters obſerved it, ſhe took no notice while the landlady continued in the room; but after the departure of that good woman, ſhe could not forbear giving our hero certain hints of her ſuſpecting ſome very dangerous rival in his affections. The aukward behaviour of Mr Jones on this occaſion convinced her of the truth, without his giving her a direct anſwer to any of her queſtions; but ſhe was not nice enough in her amours to be greatly concerned at the diſcovery. The beauty of Jones highly charmed her eye; but, as ſhe could not ſee his heart, ſhe gave herſelf no concern about it. She could feaſt heartily at the table of love, without reflecting that ſome other had already been, or hereafter might be, feaſted with the ſame repaſt. A ſentiment which, if it deals but little in refinement, deals however much in ſubſtance; and is leſs capricious, and perhaps leſs ill-natured and ſelfiſh than the deſires of thoſe females who can be contented enough to abſtain from the poſſeſſion of their lovers, provided they are ſufficiently ſatisfied that no one elſe poſſeſſes them.

CHAP. VII.

Containing a fuller account of Mrs Waters, and by what means ſhe came into that diſtreſsful ſituation from which ſhe was reſcued by Jones.

THOUGH nature hath by no means mixed up an equal ſhare either of curioſity or vanity in every human compoſition, there is perhaps no individual to whom ſhe hath not allotted ſuch a proportion of both, as requires much arts and pains too, to ſubdue and keep under. A conqueſt, however,

Digitized by Google

ever, absolutely necessary to every one who would in any degree deserve the characters of wisdom or good-breeding.

As Jones therefore might very justly be called a well-bred man, he had stifled all that curiosity which the extraordinary manner in which he had found Mrs Waters, must be supposed to have occasioned. He had indeed at first thrown out some few hints to the lady; but when he perceived her industriously avoiding any explanation, he was contented to remain in ignorance, the rather as he was not without suspicion, that there were some circumstances which must have raised her blushes, had she related the whole truth.

Now, since it is possible that some of our readers may not so easily acquiesce under the same ignorance, and as we are very desirous to satisfy them all, we have taken uncommon pains to inform ourselves of the real fact, with the relation of which we shall conclude this book.

This lady then had lived some years with one Captain Waters, who was a Captain in the same regiment to which Mr Northerton belonged. She past for that gentleman's wife, and went by his name; and yet, as the serjeant said, there were some doubts concerning the reality of their marriage, which we shall not at present take upon us to resolve.

Mrs Waters, I am sorry to say it, had for some time contracted an intimacy with the above-mentioned ensign, which did no great credit to her reputation. That she had a remarkable fondness for that young fellow is most certain; but whether she indulged this to any very criminal lengths, is not so extremely clear, unless we will suppose that women never grant every favour to a man but one, without granting him that one also.

The division of the regiment to which Captain Waters belonged, had two days preceded the march of that company to which Mr Northerton was the ensign; so that the former had reached Worcester, the very day after the unfortunate rencounter be-

Digitized by Google

tween Jones and Northerton, which we have before recorded.

Now it had been agreed between Mrs Waters and the Captain, that she would accompany him in his march as far as Worcester, where they were to take their leave of each other, and she was thence to return to Bath, where she was to stay till the end of the winter's campaign against the rebels.

With this agreement Mr Northerton was made acquainted. To say the truth, the lady had made him an assignation at this very place, and promised to stay at Worcester till his division came thither; with what view, and for what purpose, must be left to the reader's divination; for though we are obliged to relate facts, we are not obliged to do a violence to our nature by any comments to the disadvantage of the loveliest part of the creation.

Northerton no sooner obtained a release from his captivity, as we have seen, than he hasted away to overtake Mrs Waters; which, as he was a very active nimble fellow, he did at the last-mentioned city, some few hours after Captain Waters had left her: at his first arrival he made no scruple of acquainting her with the unfortunate accident, which he made appear very unfortunate indeed; for he totally extracted every particle of what could be called fault, at least in a court of honour, though he left some circumstances which might be questionable in a court of law.

Women, to their glory be it spoken, are more generally capable of that violent and apparently disinterested passion of love, which seeks only the good of its object, than men. Mrs Waters, therefore, was no sooner apprized of the danger to which her lover was exposed, than she lost every consideration besides that of his safety; and this being a matter equally agreeable to the gentleman, it became the immediate subject of debate between them.

After much consultation on this matter, it was at length agreed, that the ensign should go across the country to Hereford, whence he might find some conveyance to one of the sea-ports in Wales, and thence

migh

Digitized by Google

might make his escape abroad. In all which expedition Mrs Waters declared she would bear him company; and for which she was able to furnish him with money, a very material article to Mr Northerton, she having then in her pocket three bank notes to the amount of 90 l. besides some cash, and a diamond ring of pretty considerable value on her finger. All which she with the utmost confidence revealed to this wicked man, little suspecting she should by these means inspire him with a design of robbing her. Now, as they must, by taking horses from Worcester, have furnished any pursuers with the means of hereafter discovering their rout, the ensign proposed, and the lady presently agreed, to make their first stage on foot, for which purpose the hardness of the frost was very seasonable.

The main part of the lady's baggage was already at Bath, and she had nothing with her at present besides a very small quantity of linen, which the gallant undertook to carry in his own pockets. All things, therefore, being settled in the evening, they arose early the next morning, and at five o'clock departed from Worcester, it then being above two hours before day. But the moon, which was then at the full, gave them all the light she was capable of affording.

Mrs Waters was not of that delicate race of women who are obliged to the invention of vehicles for the capacity of removing themselves from one place to another, and with whom consequently a coach is reckoned among the necessaries of life. Her limbs were indeed full of strength and agility, and as her mind was no less animated with spirit, she was perfectly able to keep pace with her nimble lover.

Having travelled on for some miles in a high road which Northerton said he was informed led to Hereford, they came at the break of day to the side of a large wood, where he suddenly stopped, and affecting to meditate a moment with himself, expressed some apprehensions from travelling any longer in so public a way. Upon which he easily persuaded his fair companion to strike with him into a path which seemed to lead directly through the wood, and

Digitized by Google

which at length brought them both to the bottom of Mazard-hill.

Whether the execrable ſcheme, which he now attempted to execute, was the effect of previous deliberation, or whether it now firſt came into his head, I cannot determine. But being arrived in this lonely place, where it was very improbable he ſhould meet with any interruption, he ſuddenly ſlipped his garter from his leg, and laying violent hands on the poor woman, endeavoured to perpetrate that dreadful and deteſtable fact, which we have before commemorated, and which the providential appearance of Jones did ſo fortunately prevent.

Happy was it for Mrs Waters, that ſhe was not of the weakeſt order of females; for no ſooner did ſhe perceive, by his tying a knot in his garter, and by his declarations, what his helliſh intentions were, than ſhe ſtood ſtoutly to her defence, and ſo ſtrongly ſtruggled with her enemy, ſcreaming all the while for aſſiſtance, that ſhe delayed the execution of the villain's purpoſe ſeveral minutes, by which means Mr Jones came to her relief, at that very inſtant when her ſtrength failed, and ſhe was totally overpowered, and delivered her from the ruffian's hands, with no other loſs than that of her cloaths, which were torn from her back, and of the diamond ring, which, during the contention, either dropped from her finger, or was wrenched from it by Northerton.

Thus, reader, we have given thee the fruits of a very painful enquiry, which, for thy ſatisfaction, we have made into this matter. And here we have opened to thee a ſcene of folly, as well as villany, which we could ſcarce have believed a human creature capable of being guilty of; had we not remembered that this fellow was at that time firmly perſuaded, that he had already committed a murder, and had forfeited his life to the law. As he concluded therefore that his only ſafety lay in flight, he thought the poſſeſſing himſelf of this poor woman's money and ring, would make him amends for the additional burden he was to lay on his conſcience.

And

Digitized by Google

And here, reader, we must strictly caution thee, that thou dost not take any occasion, from the misbehaviour of such a wretch as this, to reflect on so worthy and honourable a body of men, as are the officers of our army in general. Thou wilt be pleased to consider, that this fellow, as we have already informed thee, had neither the birth nor education of a gentleman, nor was a proper person to be inrolled among the number of such. If therefore his baseness can justly reflect on any besides himself, it must be only on those who gave him his commission.

THE

Digitized by Google

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK X.

In which the hiſtory goes forward about twelve hours.

CHAP. I.

Containing inſtructions very neceſſary to be peruſed by modern critics.

READER, it is impoſſible we ſhould know what ſort of perſon thou wilt be: for perhaps, thou may'ſt be as learned in human nature as Shakeſpeare himſelf was, and perhaps thou may'ſt be no wiſer than ſome of his editors. Now, leſt this latter ſhould be the caſe, we think proper, before we go any farther together, to give thee a few wholeſome admonitions; that thou may'ſt not as groſsly miſunderſtand and miſrepreſent us, as ſome of the ſaid editors have miſunderſtood and miſrepreſented their author.

Firſt then, we warn thee not too haſtily to condemn any of the incidents in this our hiſtory, as impertinent and foreign to our main deſign, becauſe thou doſt not immediately conceive in what manner ſuch incident may conduce to that deſign. This work may, indeed, be conſidered as a great creation of our own; and for a little reptile of a critic to preſume to find fault with

Digitized by Google

with any of its parts, without knowing the manner in which the whole is connected, and before he comes to the final catastrophe, is a most presumptuous absurdity. The allusion and metaphor we have here made use of, we must acknowledge to be infinitely too great for our occasion; but there is, indeed, no other, which is at all adequate to express the difference between an author of the first rate, and a critic of the lowest.

Another caution we would give thee, my good reptile, is, that thou dost not find out too near a resemblance between certain characters here introduced; as for instance, between the landlady who appears in the seventh book, and her in the ninth. Thou art to know, friend, that there are certain characteristics, in which most individuals of every profession and occupation agree. To be able to preserve these characteristics, and at the same time to diversify their operations, is one talent of a good writer. Again, to mark the nice distinction between two persons actuated by the same vice or folly is another; and as this last talent is found in very few writers, so is the true discernment of it found in as few readers; though, I believe, the observation of this forms a very principal pleasure in those who are capable of the discovery: every person, for instance, can distinguish between Sir Epicure Mammon, and Sir Fopling Flutter; but to note the difference between Sir Fopling Flutter and Sir Courtly Nice, requires a more exquisite judgment: for want of which, vulgar spectators of plays very often do great injustice in the theatre; where I have sometimes known a poet in danger of being convicted of a thief, upon much worse evidence than the resemblance of hands hath been held to be in the law. In reality, I apprehend every amorous widow on the stage would run the hazard of being condemned as a servile imitation of Dido, but that happily very few of our play-house critics understand enough of Latin to read Virgil.

In the next place, we must admonish thee, my worthy friend, (for, perhaps, thy heart may be better than thy head), not to condemn a character as a bad one, because it is not perfectly a good one. If thou dost delight in these models of perfection, there are books

Digitized by Google

books enow written to gratify thy taſte; but as we have not, in the courſe of our converſation, ever happened to meet with any ſuch perſon, we have not choſen to introduce any ſuch here. To ſay the truth, I a little queſtion whether mere man ever arrived at this conſummate degree of excellence, as well as whether there hath ever exiſted a monſter bad enough to verify that

——*Nulla virtute redemptum*
A vitiis—— *.

in Juvenal: nor do I, indeed, conceive the good purpoſes ſerved by inſerting characters of ſuch angelic perfection, or ſuch diabolical depravity, in any work of invention: ſince, from contemplating either, the mind of man is more likely to be overwhelmed with ſorrow and ſhame, than to draw any good uſes from ſuch patterns; for in the former inſtance he may be both concerned and aſhamed to ſee a pattern of excellence, in his nature, which he may reaſonably deſpair of ever arriving at; and, in contemplating the latter he may be no leſs affected with thoſe uneaſy ſenſations, at ſeeing the nature, of which he is a partaker, degraded into ſo odious and deteſtable a creature.

In fact, if there be enough of goodneſs in a character to engage the admiration and affection of a well-diſpoſed mind, though there ſhould appear ſome of thoſe little blemiſhes, *quas humana parùm cavit natura*, they will raiſe our compaſſion rather than our abhorrence. Indeed, nothing can be of more moral uſe than the imperfections which are ſeen in examples of this kind; ſince ſuch form a kind of ſurprize, more apt to affect and dwell upon the mind, than the faults of very vicious and wicked perſons. The foibles and vices of men, in whom there is a great mixture of good, become more glaring objects from the virtues which contraſt them, and ſhew their deformity; and, when we find ſuch vices attended with their evil conſequence to our favourite characters, we are not only taught

* Whoſe vices are not allayed with a ſingle virtue.

to

to ſhun them for their own ſake, but to hate them for the miſchiefs they have already brought on thoſe we love.

And now, my friend, having given you theſe few admonitions, we will, if you pleaſe, once more ſet forward with our hiſtory.

CHAP. II.

Containing the arrival of an Iriſh *gentleman, with very extraordinary adventures which enſued at the inn.*

NOW the little trembling hare, which the dread of all her numerous enemies, and chiefly of that cunning, cruel, carniverous animal man, had confined all the day to her lurking place, ſports wantonly o'er the lawns: now on ſome hollow tree the owl, ſhrill choriſter of the night, hoots forth notes which might charm the ears of ſome modern connoiſſeurs in muſic: now in the imagination of the half drunk clown, as he ſtaggers through the church-yard, or rather charnel-yard, to his home, fear paints the bloody hobgoblin: now thieves and ruffians are awake, and honeſt watchmen faſt aſleep: in plain Engliſh, it was now midnight; and the company at the inn, as well thoſe who have been already mentioned in this hiſtory, as ſome others who arrived in the evening, were all in bed. Only Suſan chambermaid was now ſtirring, ſhe being obliged to waſh the kitchen, before ſhe retired to the arms of the fond, expecting hoſtler

In this poſture were affairs at the inn, when a gentleman arrived there poſt. He immediately alighted from his horſe, and, coming up to Suſan, enquired of her, in a very abrupt and confuſed manner, being almoſt out of breath with eagerneſs, whether there was any lady in the houſe. The hour of night, and the behaviour of the man, who ſtared very wildly all the time, a little ſurprized Suſan, ſo that ſhe heſitated before ſhe made any anſwer: upon which the gentleman, with redoubled eagerneſs, begged her to give him a true information, ſaying, he had loſt his wife, and was come in purſuit of her. 'Upon my ſhoul,' cries he,

Digitized by Google

he, 'I have been near catching her already in two 'or three places, if I had not found her gone juſt as 'I came up with her. If ſhe be in the houſe, do 'carry me up in the dark, and ſhew her to me; and 'if ſhe be gone away before me, do tell me which 'way I ſhall go after her to meet her, and, upon my 'ſhoul, I will make you the richeſt poor woman in 'the nation.' He then pulled out a handful of guineas, a ſight which would have bribed perſons of much greater conſequence than this poor wench, to much worſe purpoſes.

Suſan, from the account ſhe had received of Mrs Waters, made not the leaſt doubt but that ſhe was the very identical ſtray whom the right owner purſued. As ſhe concluded, therefore, with great appearance of reaſon, that ſhe never could get money in an honeſter way than by reſtoring a wife to her huſband, ſhe made no ſcruple of aſſuring the gentleman, that the lady he wanted was then in the houſe; and was preſently afterwards prevailed upon (by very liberal promiſes, and ſome earneſt paid into her hands), to conduct him to the bed-chamber of Mrs Waters.

It hath been a cuſtom long eſtabliſhed in the polite world, and that upon very ſolid and ſubſtantial reaſons, that a huſband ſhall never enter his wife's apartment without firſt knocking at the door. The many excellent uſes of this cuſtom need ſcarce be hinted to a reader who hath any knowledge of the world: for by this means the lady hath time to adjuſt herſelf, or to remove any diſagreeable object out of the way; for there are ſome ſituations, in which nice and delicate women would not be diſcovered by their huſbands.

To ſay the truth, there are ſeveral ceremonies inſtituted among the poliſhed part of mankind, which, though they may to coarſer judgments, appear as matters of mere form, are found to have much of ſubſtance in them, by the more diſcerning; and lucky would it have been, had the cuſtom above-mentioned been obſerved by our gentleman in the preſent inſtance. Knock, indeed, he did at the door, but not with one of thoſe gentle raps which is uſual on ſuch occaſions. On the contrary, when he found the door

locked

Digitized by Google

locked, he flew at it with ſuch violence, that the lock immediately gave way, the door burſt open, and he fell headlong into the room.

He had no ſooner recovered his legs, than forth from the bed, upon his legs likewiſe appeared—— with ſhame and ſorrow are we obliged to proceed—— our hero himſelf, who, with a menacing voice, demanded of the gentleman who he was, and what he meant by daring to burſt open his chamber in that outragious manner.

The gentleman at firſt thought he had committed a miſtake, and was going to aſk pardon and retreat; when, on a ſudden, as the moon ſhone very bright, he caſt his eyes on ſtays, gowns, petticoats, caps, ribbons, ſtockings, garters, ſhoes, clogs, &c. all which lay in a diſordered manner on the floor. All theſe operating on the natural jealouſy of his temper, ſo enraged him, that he loſt all power of ſpeech; and without returning any anſwer to Jones, he endeavoured to approach the bed.

Jones immediately interpoſing, a fierce contention aroſe, which ſoon proceeded to blows on both ſides. And now Mrs Waters (for we muſt confeſs ſhe was in the ſame bed), being, I ſuppoſe, awakened from her ſleep, and ſeeing two men fighting in her bed-chamber, began to ſcream in the moſt violent manner, crying out murder! robbery! and more frequently rape! which laſt, ſome, perhaps, may wonder ſhe ſhould mention, who do not conſider that theſe words of exclamation are uſed by ladies in a fright, as fa, la, la, ra, da, &c. are in muſic, only as the vehicles of ſound, and without any fixed ideas.

Next to the lady's chamber was depoſited the body of an Iriſh gentleman, who arrived too late at the inn to have been mentioned before. This gentleman was one of thoſe whom the Iriſh call a *calabalaro*, or cavalier. He was a younger brother of a good family, and having no fortune at home, was obliged to look abroad in order to get one: for which purpoſe he was proceeding to Bath to try his luck with cards and the women.

This young fellow lay in bed reading one of Mrs

Digitized by Google

Behn's novels; for he had been inſtructed by a friend, that he would find no more effectual method of recommending himſelf to the ladies than the improving his underſtanding, and filling his mind with good literature. He no ſooner, therefore, heard the violent uproar in the next room, than he leapt from his bolſter, and, taking his ſword in one hand, and the candle which burnt by him in the other, he went directly to Mrs Waters's chamber.

If the ſight of another man in his ſhirt at firſt added ſome ſhock to the decency of the lady, it made her preſently amends by conſiderably abating her fears; for no ſooner had the calabalaro entered the room, than he cried out: 'Mr Fitzpatrick, what the devil 'is the meaning of this?' Upon which the other immediately anſwered, 'O, Mr Macklachlan, I am 'rejoiced you are here.—This villain hath debauched my wife, and is got into bed with her.'—'What 'wife?' cries Macklachlan, 'do not I know Mrs 'Fitzpatrick very well, and don't I ſee that the lady, 'whom the gentleman who ſtands here in his ſhirt is 'lying in bed with, is none of her?'

Fitzpatrick now perceiving, as well by the glimpſe he had of the lady, as by her voice, which might have been diſtinguiſhed at a greater diſtance than he now ſtood from her, that he had made a very unfortunate miſtake, began to aſk many pardons of the lady; and then turning to Jones he ſaid, 'I would 'have you take notice I do not aſk you pardon, for 'you have beat me; for which I am reſolved to have 'your blood in the morning.'

Jones treated this menace with much contempt; and Mr Macklachlan anſwered, 'Indeed, Mr Fitz-'patrick, you may be aſhamed of your ownſelf, to 'diſturb people at this time of night: if all the peo-'ple in the inn were not aſleep, you would have 'awakened them as you have me. The gentleman 'has ſerved you very rightly. 'Upon my conſcience, 'though I have no wife, if you had treated her ſo, 'I would have cut your throat.'

Jones was ſo confounded with his fears for his lady's reputation, that he knew neither what to ſay or do; but

Digitized by Google

but the invention of women is, as hath been obſerved, much readier than that of men. She recollected that there was a communication between her chamber and that of Mr Jones; relying, therefore, on his honour and her own aſſurance, ſhe anſwered, 'I know not 'what you mean, villains! I am wife to none of you. 'Help! Rape! Murder! Rape!'—And now the landlady coming into the room, Mrs Waters fell upon her with the utmoſt virulence, ſaying, 'She 'thought herſelf in a ſober inn, and not in a bawdy-'houſe; but that a ſet of villains had broke into her 'room, with an intent upon her honour, if not upon 'her life; and both, ſhe ſaid, were equally dear to 'her.'

The landlady now began to roar as loudly as the poor woman in bed had done before. She cried, 'She 'was undone, and that the reputation of her houſe, 'which was never blown upon before, was utterly 'deſtroyed.' Then turning to the men, ſhe cried, 'What, in the devil's name, is the reaſon of all this 'diſturbance in the lady's room?' Fitzpatrick, hanging down his head, repeated, 'That he had commit-'ted a miſtake, for which he heartily aſked pardon;' and then retired with his countryman. Jones, who was too ingenious to have miſſed the hint given him by his fair one, boldly aſſerted, 'That he had run to her 'aſſiſtance upon hearing the door broke open; with 'what deſign he could not conceive, unleſs of robbing 'the lady; which if they intended,' he ſaid, 'he had 'the good fortune to prevent.' 'I never had a rob-'bery committed in my houſe ſince I have kept it,' cries the landlady: 'I would have you to know, Sir, 'I harbour no highwaymen here; I ſcorn the word, 'tho' I ſay it. None but honeſt, good gentlefolks, 'are welcome to my houſe; and I thank good luck, 'I have always had enow of ſuch cuſtomers; indeed 'as many as I could entertain. Here hath been my 'Lord ——,' and then ſhe repeated over a catalogue of names and titles, many of which we might, perhaps, be guilty of a breach of privilege by inſerting.

Jones, after much patience, at length interrupted her by making an apology to Mrs Waters, for having

Digitized by Google

appeared before her in his ſhirt, aſſuring her, 'That 'nothing but a concern for her ſafety could have 'prevailed on him to do it.' The reader may inform himſelf of her anſwer, and, indeed, of her whole behaviour to the end of the ſcene, by conſidering the ſituation which ſhe affected, it being that of a modeſt lady, who was awakened out of her ſleep by three ſtrange men in her chamber. This was the part which ſhe undertook to perform; and, indeed, ſhe executed it ſo well, that none of our theatrical actreſſes could exceed her, in any of their performances, either on or off the ſtage.

And hence, I think, we may very fairly draw an argument, to prove how extremely natural virtue is to the fair ſex: for though there is not, perhaps, one in ten thouſand who is capable of making a good actreſs; and even among theſe we rarely ſee two who are equally able to perſonate the ſame character; yet this of virtue they can all admirably well put on; and as well thoſe individuals who have it not, as thoſe who poſſeſs it, can all act it to the utmoſt degree of perfection.

When the men were all departed, Mrs Waters, recovering from her fear, recovered likewiſe from her anger, and ſpoke in much gentler accents to the landlady, who did not ſo readily quit her concern for the reputation of the houſe, in favour of which ſhe began again to number the many great perſons who had ſlept under her roof; but the lady ſtopt her ſhort, and, having abſolutely acquitted her of having had any ſhare in the paſt diſturbance, begged to be left to her repoſe, which, ſhe ſaid, ſhe hoped to enjoy unmoleſted during the remainder of the night. Upon which the landlady, after much civility, and many court'ſies, took her leave.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. III.

A dialogue between the landlady, and Sufan *the chamber-maid, proper to be read by all innkeepers and their ſervants: with the arrival, and affable behaviour of a beautiful young lady; which may teach perſons of condition how they may acquire the love of the whole world.*

THE landlady, remembering that Sufan had been the only perſon out of bed when the door was burſt open, reſorted preſently to her, to enquire into the firſt occaſion of the diſturbance, as well as who the ſtrange gentleman was, and when and how he arrived.

Sufan related the whole ſtory, which the reader knows already, varying the truth only in ſome circumſtances, as ſhe ſaw convenient, and totally concealing the money which ſhe had received. But whereas her miſtreſs had, in the preface to her enquiry, ſpoken much in compaſſion for the fright which the lady had been in, concerning any intended depredations on her virtue, Sufan could not help endeavouring to quiet the concern which her miſtreſs ſeemed to be under on that account, by ſwearing heartily ſhe ſaw Jones leap out from her bed.

The landlady fell into a violent rage at theſe words. 'A likely ſtory truly,' cried ſhe, 'that a woman 'ſhould cry out, and endeavour to expoſe herſelf, if 'that was the caſe! I deſire to know what better 'proof any lady can give of her virtue than her cry-'ing out, which, I believe, twenty people can wit-'neſs for her ſhe did? I beg, Madam, you would 'ſpread no ſuch ſcandal of any of my gueſts: for it 'will not only reflect on them, but upon the houſe; 'and I am ſure no vagabonds, nor wicked beggarly 'people come here.'

'We l,' ſays Sufan, 'then I muſt not believe my 'own eyes.' 'No, indeed you muſt not always,' anſwered her miſtreſs, 'I would not have believed my 'own eyes againſt ſuch good gentlefolks. I have not

Digitized by Google

'had a better supper ordered this half year than they 'ordered last night; and so easy and good-humoured 'were they, that they found no fault with my Wor-'cestershire perry, which I sold them for Champaigne; 'and to be sure it is as well tasted, and as wholesome 'as the best Champaigne in the kingdom, otherwise I 'would scorn to give it 'em, and they drank me two 'bottles. No, no, I will never believe any harm of 'such sober good sort of people.'

Susan being thus silenced, her mistress proceeded to other matters. 'And so you tell me,' continued she, 'that the strange gentleman came post, and there 'is a footman without with the horses? why then, he 'is certainly some of your great gentlefolks too. Why 'did not you ask him whether he'd have any supper? 'I think, he is in the other gentleman's room; go up 'and ask whether he called. Perhaps he'll order some-'thing when he finds any body stirring in the house to 'dress it. Now don't commit any of your usual blun-'ders, by telling him the fire's out, and the fowls 'alive. And if he should order mutton, don't blab 'out, that we have none. The butcher, I know, 'killed a sheep just before I went to bed, and he never 'refuses to cut it up warm when I desire it. Go, re-'member there's all sorts of mutton and fowls; go, 'open the door, with, Gentlemen d'ye call? and if 'they say nothing, ask what his honour will be pleased 'to have for his supper. Don't forget his honour: Go; 'if you don't mind all these matters better, you'll ne-'ver come to any thing.'

Susan departed, and soon returned with an account that the two gentlemen were got both into the same bed. 'Two gentlemen,' says the landlady, 'in 'the same bed! that's impossible; they are two errant 'scrubs, I warrant them; and, I believe, young 'Squire Allworthy guessed right, that the fellow in-'tended to rob her ladyship: for if he had broke open 'the lady's door with any of the wicked designs of a 'gentleman, he would never have sneaked away to 'another room to save the expence of a supper and a 'bed to himself. They are certainly thieves, and

'their

'their ſearching after a wife is nothing but a pre-
'tence.'

In theſe cenſures my landlady did Mr Fitzpatrick great injuſtice: for he was really born a gentleman, though not worth a groat; and though, perhaps, he had ſome few blemiſhes in his heart as well as in his head, yet being a ſneaking, or a niggardly fellow, was not one of them. In reality, he was ſo generous a man, that whereas he had received a very handſome fortune with his wife, he had now ſpent every penny of it, except ſome little pittance which was ſettled upon her; and in order to poſſeſs himſelf of this, he had uſed her with ſuch cruelty, that, together with his jealouſy, which was of the bitterest kind, it had forced the poor woman to run away from him.

This gentleman then being well tired with his long journey from Cheſter in one day, with which, and ſome good dry blows he had received in the ſcuffle, his bones were ſo ſore, that added to the ſoreneſs of his mind, it had quite deprived him of any appetite for eating; and being now ſo violently diſappointed in the woman, whom, at the maid's inſtance, he had miſtaken for his wife, it never once entered into his head, that ſhe might nevertheleſs be in the houſe, though he had erred in the firſt perſon he had attacked. He therefore yielded to the diſſuaſions of his friend from ſearching any farther after her that night, and accepted the kind offer of part of his bed.

The footman and poſt-boy were in a different diſpoſition. They were more ready to order than the landlady was to provide; however, after being pretty well ſatisfied by them of the real truth of the caſe, and that Mr Fitzpatrick was no thief, ſhe was at length prevailed on to ſet ſome cold meat before them, which they were devouring with great greedineſs, when Partridge came into the kitchen. He had been firſt awaked by the hurry which we have before ſeen; and while he was endeavouring to compoſe himſelf again on his pillow, a ſcreech-owl had given him ſuch a ſerenade at his window, that he leapt in a moſt horrible affright from his bed, and huddling on his cloaths with great expe-

Digitized by Google

expedition, ran down to the protection of the company, whom he heard talking below in the kitchen.

His arrival detained my landlady from returning to her reſt: for ſhe was juſt about to leave the other two gueſts to the care of Suſan; but the friend of young 'ſquire Allworthy was not to be ſo neglected, eſpecially as he called for a pint of wine to be mulled. She immediately obeyed, by putting the ſame quantity of perry to the fire: for this readily anſwered to the name of every kind of wine.

The Iriſh footman was retired to bed, and the poſt-boy was going to follow; but Partridge invited him to ſtay, and partake of his wine, which the lad very thankfully accepted. The ſchoolmaſter was indeed afraid to return to bed by himſelf; and as he did not know how ſoon he might loſe the company of my landlady, he was reſolved to ſecure that of the boy, in whoſe preſence he apprehended no danger from the devil, or any of his adherents.

And now arrived another poſt-boy at the gate; upon which Suſan being ordered out, returned, introducing two young women in riding habits, one of which was ſo very richly laced, that Partridge and the poſt-boy inſtantly ſtarted from their chairs, and my landlady fell to her court'ſies, and her ladyſhips, with great eagerneſs.

The lady in the rich habit ſaid, with a ſmile of great condeſcenſion, 'If you will give me leave, Madam, 'I will warm myſelf a few minutes at your kitchen 'fire; for it is really very cold; but I muſt inſiſt on 'diſturbing no one from his ſeat.' This was ſpoken on account of Partridge, who had retreated to the other end of the room, ſtruck with the utmoſt awe and aſtoniſhment at the ſplendor of the lady's dreſs. Indeed, ſhe had a much better title to reſpect than this: for ſhe was one of the moſt beautiful creatures in the world.

The lady earneſtly deſired Partridge to return to his ſeat, but could not prevail. She then pulled off her gloves, and diſplayed to the fire two hands, which had every property of ſnow in them, except that of melting. Her companion, who was indeed her maid, likewiſe

Digitized by Google

wiſe pulled off her gloves, and diſcovered what bore an exact reſemblance, in cold and colour, to a piece of frozen beef.

'I wiſh, Madam,' quoth the latter, 'your lady-'ſhip would not think of going any farther to-night, 'I am terribly afraid your ladyſhip will not be able 'to bear the fatigue.'

'Why ſure,' cries the landlady, 'her ladyſhip's 'honour can never intend it. O bleſs me, farther 'to-night indeed! let me beſeech your ladyſhip not 'to think on't—But to be ſure, your ladyſhip can't. 'What will your honour be pleaſed to have for ſup-'per? I have mutton of all kinds, and ſome nice 'chicken.'

'I think, Madam,' ſaid the lady, 'it would be 'rather breakfaſt than ſupper; but I can't eat any 'thing; and if I ſtay, ſhall only ly down for an hour 'or two. However, if you pleaſe, Madam, you may 'get me a little ſack-whey made very ſmall and thin.'

'Yes, Madam,' cries the miſtreſs of the houſe, 'I 'have ſome excellent white-wine.' 'You have no 'ſack then,' ſays the lady. 'Yes, an't pleaſe your 'honour, I have; I may challenge the country for 'that---but let me beg your ladyſhip to eat ſome-'thing.'

'Upon my word, I can't eat a morſel,' anſwered the lady; 'and I ſhall be much obliged to you, if 'you will pleaſe to get my apartment ready as ſoon 'as poſſible: for I am reſolved to be on horſeback 'again in three hours.'

'Why, Suſan,' cries the landlady, 'is there a fire 'lit yet in the Wild-gooſe?————I am ſorry, Ma-'dam, all my beſt rooms are full. Several people of 'the firſt quality are now in bed. Here's a great 'young 'ſquire, and many other great gentlefolks of 'quality.'

Suſan anſwered, 'That the Iriſh gentlemen were 'got into the Wild gooſe.'

'Was ever any thing like it!' ſays the miſtreſs; 'why the devil would you not keep ſome of the beſt 'rooms for the quality, when you know ſcarce a day 'paſſes without ſome calling here?---If they be gen-

'tlemen,

Digitized by Google

'tlemen, I am certain, when they know it is for her 'ladyſhip, they will get up again.'

'Not upon my account,' ſays the lady; 'I will 'have no perſon diſturbed for me. If you have a 'room that is commonly decent, it will ſerve me 'very well, though it be never ſo plain. I beg, Ma'dam, you will not give yourſelf ſo much trouble 'on my account.' 'O, Madam,' cries the other, 'I have ſeveral very good rooms for that matter, but 'none good enough for your honour's ladyſhip. 'However, as you are ſo condeſcending to take up 'with the beſt I have, do, Suſan, get a fire in the 'Roſe this minute. Will your ladyſhip be pleaſed 'to go up now, or ſtay till the fire is lighted?' 'I 'think, I have ſufficiently warmed myſelf,' anſwered the lady: 'ſo if you pleaſe I will go now: I am 'afraid I have kept people, and particularly that 'gentleman, (meaning Partridge), too long in the 'cold already. Indeed I cannot bear to think of 'keeping any perſon from the fire this dreadful 'weather.' She then departed with her maid, the landlady marching with two lighted candles before her.

When that good woman returned, the converſation in the kitchen was all upon the charms of the young lady. There is indeed in perfect beauty a power which none almoſt can withſtand: for my landlady, though ſhe was not pleaſed at the negative given to the ſupper, declared ſhe had never ſeen ſo lovely a creature. Partridge ran out into the moſt extravagant encomiums on her face, though he could not refrain from paying ſome compliments to the gold lace on her habit: the poſt boy ſung forth the praiſes of her goodneſs, which were likewiſe echoed by the other poſt-boy, who was now come in. 'She's a true 'good lady, I warrant her,' ſays he; 'ſhe hath mercy 'upon dumb creatures; for ſhe aſked me every now 'and tan upon the journey, if I did not think ſhe 'ſhould hurt the horſes by riding too faſt; and, when 'ſhe came in, ſhe charged me to give them as much 'corn as ever they would eat.'

Such

Such charms there are in affability, and ſo ſure is it to attract the praiſes of all kinds of people. It may indeed be compared to the celebrated Mrs Huſſey *. It is equally ſure to ſet off every female perfection to the higheſt advantage, and ſto palliate and conceal every defect. A ſhort reflection which we could not forbear making in this place, where my reader hath ſeen the lovelineſs of an affable deportment; and truth will now oblige us to contraſt it, by ſhewing the reverſe.

CHAP. IV.

Containing infallible noſtrums for procuring univerſal diſeſteem and hatred.

THE lady had no ſooner laid herſelf on her pillow, than the waiting woman returned to the kitchen to regale with ſome of thoſe dainties which her miſtreſs had refuſed.

The company, at her entrance, ſhewed her the ſame reſpect which they had before paid to her miſtreſs, by riſing; but ſhe forgot to imitate her by deſiring them to ſet down again. Indeed it was ſcarce poſſible they ſhould have done ſo: for ſhe placed her chair in ſuch a poſture, as to occupy almoſt the whole fire. She then ordered a chicken to be broiled that inſtant, declaring, if it was not ready in a quarter of an hour, ſhe would not ſtay for it. Now, though the ſaid chicken was then at rooſt in the ſtable, and required the ſeveral ceremonies of catching, killing, and picking, before it was brought to the grid-iron, my landlady would nevertheleſs have undertaken to do all within the time; but the gueſt, being unfortunately admitted behind the ſcenes, muſt have been witneſs to the Fourberie: the poor woman was therefore obliged to confeſs that ſhe had none in the houſe; 'but, Madam,' ſaid ſhe, 'I can get any kind 'of mutton in an inſtant from the butcher's.'

* A celebrated mantua-maker in the Strand, famous for ſetting off the ſhapes of women.

'Do

Digitized by Google

'Do you think then,' anſwered the waiting gentlewoman, 'that I have the ſtomach of a horſe, to eat 'mutton at this time of night? Sure you people 'that keep inns imagine your betters are like your-'ſelves. Indeed I expected to get nothing at this 'wretched place. I wonder my lady would ſtop at 'it. I ſuppoſe none but tradeſmen and graſiers ever 'called here.' The landlady fired at this indignity offered to her houſe; however ſhe ſuppreſſed her temper, and contented herſelf with ſaying, 'Very 'good quality frequented it, ſhe thanked Heaven!' 'Don't tell me,' cries the other, 'of quality! I 'believe I know more of people of quality than 'ſuch as you.—But, prithee, without troubling me 'with any of your impertinence, do tell me what I 'can have for ſupper; for though I cannot eat horſe-'fleſh, I am really hungry.' 'Why truly, Madam,' anſwered the landlady, 'you could not take me again 'at ſuch a diſadvantage: for I muſt confeſs I have 'nothing in the houſe, unleſs a cold piece of beef, 'which indeed a gentleman's footman and the poſt-'boy have almoſt cleared to the bone.' 'Woman,' ſaid Mrs Abigail, (ſo for ſhortneſs we will call her), 'I intreat you not to make me ſick. If I had faſted 'a month, I could not eat what had been touched 'by the fingers of ſuch fellows: is there nothing neat 'or decent to be had in this horrid place?' 'What 'think you of ſome eggs and bacon, Madam?' ſaid the landlady—'Are your eggs new laid? are you 'certain they were laid to-day? and let me have the 'bacon cut very nice and thin; for I can't endure 'any thing that's groſs.—Prithee, try if you can do 'a little tolerably for once, and don't think you 'have a farmer's wife, or ſome of thoſe creatures in 'the houſe.'—The landlady then began to handle her knife; but the other ſtopt her, ſaying, 'Good wo-'man, I muſt inſiſt upon your firſt waſhing your 'hands: for I am extremely nice, and have been al-'ways uſed from my cradle to have every thing 'in the moſt elegant manner.'

The landlady, who governed herſelf with much difficulty, began now the neceſſary preparations; for

Digitized by Google

as to Susan, she was utterly rejected, and with such disdain, that the poor wench was as hard put to it, to restrain her hands from violence, as her mistress had been to hold her tongue. This indeed Susan did not entirely: for though she literally kept it within her teeth, yet there it muttered many 'Marry-come-ups, 'as good flesh and blood as yourself,' with other such indignant phrases.

While the supper was preparing, Mrs Abigail began to lament she had not ordered a fire in the parlour; but she said, that was now too late. 'However,' said she, 'I have novelty to recommend a kitchen; for 'I do not believe I ever ate in one before.' Then, turning to the post-boys, she asked them, 'why they 'were not in the stable with their horses? If I must 'eat my hard fare here, Madam,' cries she to the landlady, 'I beg the kitchen may be kept clear, that 'I may not be surrounded with all the blackguards 'in town: as for you, Sir,' says she to Partridge, 'you look somewhat like a gentleman, and may sit 'still if you please; I don't desire to disturb any body 'but mob.'

'Yes, yes, Madam,' cries Partridge, 'I am a 'gentleman, I do assure you, and I am not so easily 'to be disturbed. *Non semper vox casualis est verbo 'nominativus.*' This Latin she took to be some affront, and answered, 'You may be a gentleman, Sir; 'but you don't shew yourself as one to talk Latin to 'a woman.' Partridge made a gentle reply, and concluded with more Latin; upon which she tossed up her nose, and contented herself by abusing him with the name of a great scholar.

The supper being now on the table, Mrs Abigail ate very heartily, for so delicate a person; and while a second course of the same was by her order preparing, she said, 'And so, Madam, you tell me your 'house is frequented by people of great quality?'

The landlady answered in the affirmative, saying, 'there were a great many very good quality and 'gentlefolks in it now. There's young squire All-'worthy, as that gentleman there knows.'

Digitized by Google

'And pray who is this young gentleman of quality, 'this young ſquire Allworthy?' ſaid Abigail.

'Who ſhould he be,' anſwered Partridge, 'but the 'ſon and heir of the great ſquire Allworthy of Somer-'ſetſhire.'

'Upon my word,' ſaid ſhe, 'you tell me ſtrange 'news: for I know Mr Allworthy of Somerſetſhire 'very well, and I know he hath no ſon alive.'

The landlady pricked up her ears at this, and Partridge looked a little confounded. However, after a ſhort heſitation, he anſwered, 'Indeed, Madam, it is 'true every body doth not know him to be 'ſquire 'Allworthy's ſon; for he was never married to his 'mother; but his ſon he certainly is, and will be his 'heir too, as certainly as his name is *Jones*.' At that word Abigail let drop the bacon, which ſhe was conveying to her mouth, and cried out, 'You ſurpriſe 'me, Sir. Is it poſſible Mr Jones ſhould be now in 'the houſe?' '*Quare non?*' anſwered Partridge, 'it is poſſible, and it is certain.'

Abigail now made haſte to finiſh the remainder of her meal, and then repaired back to her miſtreſs, when the converſation paſſed, which may be read in the next chapter.

CHAP. V.

Shewing who the amiable lady, and her unamiable maid were.

AS in the month of June the damaſk roſe, which chance hath planted among the lillies with their candid hue mixes his vermilion; or as ſome playſome heifer, in the pleaſant month of May, diffuſes her odoriferous breath over the flowery meadows: or as, in the blooming month of April, the gentle, conſtant dove, perched on ſome fair bough, ſits meditating on her mate; ſo looking a hundred charms, and breathing as many ſweets, her thoughts being fixed on her Tommy, with a heart as good and as innocent, as her face was beautiful: Sophia (for it was ſhe herſelf) lay reclining her lovely head on her hand, when her

Digitized by Google

her maid entered the room, and, running directly to her bed, cried, 'Madam—Madam—who doth your 'Ladyship think is in the house?' Sophia, starting up, cried, 'I hope my father hath not overtaken us.' 'No, Madam, it is one worth a hundred fathers;' 'Mr Jones himself is here at this very instant.' 'Mr 'Jones,' says Sophia, 'it is impossible: I cannot be 'so fortunate.' Her maid averred the fact, and was presently detached by her mistress to order him to be called; for she said she was resolved to see him immediately.

Mrs Honour had no sooner left the kitchen in the manner we have before seen, than the landlady fell severely upon her. The poor woman had indeed been loading her heart with foul language for some time, and now it scoured out of her mouth, as filth doth from a mud-cart, when the board which confines it is removed. Partridge likewise shovelled in his share of calumny; and (what may surprize the reader), not only bespattered the maid, but attempted to sully the lilly-white character of Sophia herself. 'Never a 'barrel the better herring,' cries he. '*Noscitur a socio* is a true saying. It must be confessed indeed, 'that the lady in the fine garments is the civiller of 'the two; but I warrant neither of them are a bit 'better than they should be. A couple of Bath trulls, 'I'll answer for them; your quality don't ride about 'at this time o' night without servants.' 'Sbodlikins, 'and that's true,' cries the landlady, 'you have 'certainly hit upon the very matter; for quality 'don't come into a house without bespeaking a sup-'per, whether they eat or no.'

While they were thus discoursing, Mrs Honour returned, and discharged her commission by bidding the landlady immediately wake Mr Jones, and tell him a lady wanted to speak with him. The landlady referred her to Partridge, saying, 'he was the 'squire's 'friend; but for her part she never called men-'folks, especially gentlemen,' and then walked sullenly out of the kitchen. Honour applied herself to Partridge; but he refused; 'for my friend,' cries he, 'went to bed very late, and he would be very

'angry to be disturbed so soon.' Mrs Honour insisted still to have him called, saying, 'she was sure 'instead of being angry, that he would be to the 'highest degree delighted when he knew the occa-'sion.' 'Another time perhaps he might,' cries Partridge; 'but *non omnia possumus omnes*. One 'woman is enough at once for a reasonable man.' 'What do you mean by one woman, fellow?' cries Honour. 'None of your fellow,' answered Partridge. He then proceeded to inform her plainly, that Jones was in bed with a wench, and made use of an expression too indelicate to be here inserted which so enraged Mrs Honour, that she called him *jackanaps*, and returned in a violent hurry to her mistress, whom she acquainted with the success of her errand, and with the account she had received: which, if possible, she exaggerated, being as angry with Jones as if he had pronounced all the words that came from the mouth of Partridge. She discharged a torrent of abuse on the master, and advised her mistress to quit all thoughts of a man who had never shewn himself deserving of her. She then ripped up the story of Molly Seagrim, and gave the most malicious turn to his formerly quitting Sophia herself; which I must confess, the present incident not a little countenanced.

The spirits of Sophia were too much dissipated by concern to enable her to stop the torrent of her maid. At last, however, she interrupted her, saying, 'I never can believe this: some villain hath belied 'him. You say you had it from his friend; but surely 'it is not the office of a friend to betray such secrets.' 'I suppose,' cries Honour, 'the fellow is his pimp; 'for I never saw so ill-looked a villain. Besides, such 'profligate rakes as Mr Jones are never ashamed of 'these matters.'

To say the truth, this behaviour of Partridge was a little inexcusable; but he had not slept off the effect of the dose which he swallowed the evening before; which had, in the morning, received the addition of above a pint of wine, or indeed rather of malt spirits; for the perry was by no means pure.

Now

Digitized by Google

Now that part of his head which Nature designed for the reservoir of drink being very shallow, a small quantity of liquor overflowed it, and opened the sluices of his heart; so that all the secrets there deposited run out. These sluices were indeed naturally very ill secured. To give the best-natured turn we can to his disposition, he was a very honest man; for as he was the most inquisitive of mortals, and eternally prying into the secrets of others; so he very faithfully paid them, by communicating, in return, every thing within his knowledge.

While Sophia, tormented with anxiety, knew not what to believe, nor what resolution to take, Susan arrived with the sack-whey. Mrs Honour immediately advised her mistress, in a whisper, to pump this wench, who probably could inform her of the truth. Sophia approved it, and began as follows: 'Come hither, child, now answer me truly what 'I am going to ask you, and I promise you I will 'very well reward you. Is there a young gentleman 'in this house, a handsome young gentleman, that—' Here Sophia blushed and was confounded.—'A 'young gentleman,' cries Honour, 'that came hi-'ther in company with that saucy rascal who is now 'in the kitchen?' Susan answered, 'there was.'—— 'Do you know any thing of any lady?' continues Sophia, 'any lady! I don't ask you whether she is 'handsome or no; perhaps she is not, that's nothing 'to the purpose; but do you know of any lady?' 'La, Madam,' cries Honour, 'you will make a very 'bad examiner. Harkee, child,' says she, 'is not 'that very young gentleman now in bed with some 'nasty trull or other?' Here Susan smiled, and was silent. 'Answer the question, child,' says Sophia, 'and here's a guinea for you.' 'A guinea! Madam,' cries Susan; 'La, what's a guinea? If my mistress 'should know it, I shall certainly lose my place that 'very instant.' 'Here's another for you,' says Sophia, 'and I promise you faithfully your mistress 'shall never know it.' Susan, after a very short hesitation, took the money, and told the whole story, concluding with saying, 'If you have any great cu-

Digitized by Google

'riosity, Madam, I can steal softly into his room, 'and see whether he be in his own bed or no. She accordingly did this by Sophia's desire, and returned with an answer in the negative.

Sophia now trembled and turned pale. Mrs Honour begged her to be comforted, and not to think any more of so worthless a fellow. 'Why there,' says Susan. 'I hope, Madam, your ladyship won't 'be offended; but pray, Madam, is not your lady-'ship's name, *Madam Sophia Western?*' 'How is it 'possible you should know me?' answered Sophia. 'Why that man that the gentlewoman spoke of, who 'is in the kitchen, told about you last night. But 'I hope your ladyship is not angry with me.' 'Indeed, child,' said she, 'I am not; pray tell me 'all, and I promise you I'll reward you.' 'Why, 'Madam,' continued Susan, 'that man told us all 'in the kitchen, that Madam Sophia Western—Indeed I don't know how to bring it out.'—Here she stopped, till, having received encouragement from Sophia, and being vehemently pressed by Mrs Honour, she proceeded thus:—'He told us, Madam, 'though to be sure it is all a ly, that your ladyship 'was dying for love of the young 'squire, and that 'he was going to the wars to get rid of you. I 'thought to myself then he was a false-hearted 'wretch; but now to see such a fine, rich, beautiful 'lady as you be forsaken for such an ordinary woman; for to be sure so she is, and another man's 'wife into the bargain. It is such a strange unnatural thing, in a manner.'

Sophia gave her a third guinea, and telling her she would certainly be her friend, if she mentioned nothing of what had passed, nor informed any one who she was, dismissed the girl with orders to the post-boy to get the horses ready immediately.

Being now left alone with her maid, she told her trusty waiting-woman, 'That she never was more 'easy than at present. I am now convinced,' said she, 'he is not only a villain, but a low despicable 'wretch. I can forgive all rather than his exposing 'my name in so barbarous a manner. That renders 'him

Digitized by Google

'him the object of my contempt. Yes, Honour, I 'am now eaſy. I am indeed. I am very eaſy;' and then ſhe burſt into a violent flood of tears.

After a ſhort interval, ſpent by Sophia, chiefly in crying, and aſſuring her maid that ſhe was perfectly eaſy, Suſan arrived with an account that the horſes were ready, when a very extraordinary thought ſuggeſted itſelf to our young heroine, by which Mr Jones would be acquainted with her having been at the inn, in a way, which, if any ſparks of affection for her remained in him, would be at leaſt ſome puniſhment for his faults.

The reader will be pleaſed to remember a little muff, which hath had the honour of being more than once remembered already in this hiſtory. This muff, ever ſince the departure of Mr Jones, had been the conſtant companion of Sophia by day, and her bedfellow by night; and this muff ſhe had at this very inſtant upon her arm; whence ſhe took it off with great indignation, and, having writ her name with her pencil upon a piece of paper which ſhe pinned to it, ſhe bribed the maid to convey it into the empty bed of Mr Jones, in which if he did not find it, ſhe charged her to take ſome method of conveying it before his eyes in the morning.

Then having paid for what Mrs Honour had eaten, in which bill was included an account for what ſhe herſelf might have eaten, ſhe mounted her horſe, and, once more aſſuring her companion that ſhe was perfectly eaſy, continued her journey.

CHAP. VI.

Containing, among other things, the ingenuity of Partridge, the madneſs of Jones, and the folly of Fitzpatrick.

IT was now paſt five in the morning, and other company began to riſe and come to the kitchen, among whom were the ſerjeant and the coachman, who, being thoroughly reconciled, made a libation, or, in the Engliſh phraſe, drank a hearty cup together.

In

Digitized by Google

In this drinking nothing more remarkable happened than the behaviour of Partridge, who, when the ſerjeant drank a health to King George, repeated only the word *King:* nor could he be brought to utter more; for though he was going to fight againſt his own cauſe, yet he could not be prevailed upon to drink againſt it.

Mr Jones, being now returned to his own bed, (but from whence he returned we muſt beg to be excuſed from relating), ſummoned Partridge from this agreeable company, who, after a ceremonious preface, having obtained leave to offer his advice, delivered himſelf as follows:

'It is, Sir, an old ſaying, and a true one, that a 'wiſe man may ſometimes learn counſel from a fool; 'I wiſh therefore I might be ſo bold as to offer you 'my advice, which is to return home again, and 'leave theſe *horrida bella*, theſe bloody wars, to fel'lows who are contented to ſwallow gunpowder, be'cauſe they have nothing elſe to eat. Now every 'body knows your honour wants for nothing at home; 'when that's the caſe, why ſhould any man travel 'abroad?

'Partridge,' cries Jones, 'thou art certainly a cow'ard; I wiſh therefore thou wouldſt return home 'thyſelf, and trouble me no more.'

'I aſk your Honour's pardon,' cries Partridge, 'I 'ſpoke on your account more than my own; for as 'to me, Heaven knows my circumſtances are bad 'enough; and I am ſo far from being afraid, that I 'value a piſtol, or a blunderbuſs, or any ſuch thing, 'no more than a pop-gun. Every man muſt die once, 'and what ſignifies the manner how? beſides, per'haps, I may come off with the loſs only of an arm 'or a leg. I aſſure you, Sir, I was never leſs afraid 'in my life; and ſo, if your Honour is reſolved to go 'on, I am reſolved to follow you. But, in that caſe, 'I wiſh I might give my opinion. To be ſure it is a 'ſcandalous way of travelling, for a great gentleman 'like you to walk a foot. Now here are two or three 'good horſes in the ſtable, which the landlord will 'certainly make no ſcruple of trulling you with: but,

'if

Digitized by Google

'if he ſhould, I can eaſily contrive to take them; 'and let the worſt come to the worſt, the King 'would certainly pardon you, as you are going to 'fight in his cauſe.'

Now as the honeſty of Partridge was equal to his underſtanding, and both dealt only in ſmall matters, he would never have attempted a roguery of this kind, had he not imagined it altogether ſafe; for he was one of thoſe who have more conſideration of the gallows than of the fitneſs of things; but, in reality, he thought he might have committed this felony without any danger: for beſides that he doubted not but the name of Mr Allworthy would ſufficiently quiet the landlord, he conceived they ſhould be altogether ſafe, whatever turn affairs might take; as Jones, he imagined, would have friends enough on one ſide, and as his friends would as well ſecure him on the other.

When Mr Jones found that Partridge was in earneſt in this propoſal, he very ſeverely rebuked him, and that in ſuch bitter terms, that the other attempted to laugh it off, and preſently turned the diſcourſe to other matters, ſaying, he believed they were then in a bawdy-houſe, and that he had with much ado prevented two wenches from diſturbing his Honour in the middle of the night. 'Heyday!' ſays he, 'I believe 'they got into your chamber whether I would or no; 'for here lies the muff of one of them on the ground.' Indeed, as Jones returned to his bed in the dark, he had never perceived the muff on the quilt, and in leaping into his bed he had tumbled it on the floor. This Partridge now took up, and was going to put into his pocket, when Jones deſired to ſee it. The muff was ſo very remarkable, that our hero might poſſibly have recollected it without the information annexed. But his memory was not put to that hard office; for at the ſame inſtant he ſaw and read the words *Sophia Weſtern* upon the paper which was pinned to it. His looks now grew frantic in a moment, and he eagerly cried out, 'Oh Heavens, how came 'this muff here?' 'I know no more than your 'Honour,' cried Partridge; 'but I ſaw it upon the 'arm of one of the women who would have diſturbed 'you,

Digitized by Google

'you, if I would have suffered them.' 'Where are 'they?' cries Jones, jumping out of bed, and laying hold of his clothes. 'Many miles off, I believe, 'by this time,' said Partridge. And now Jones, upon further enquiry, was sufficiently assured that the bearer of this muff was no other than the lovely Sophia herself.

The behaviour of Jones on this occasion, his thoughts, his looks, his words, his actions, were such as beggar all description. After many bitter execrations on Partridge, and not fewer on himself, he ordered the poor fellow, who was frightened out of his wits, to run down and hire him horses at any rate; and, a very few minutes afterwards, having shuffled on his clothes, he hastened down stairs to execute the orders himself, which he had just before given.

But, before we proceed to what passed on his arrival in the kitchen, it will be necessary to recur to what had there happened since Partridge had first left it on his master's summons.

The serjeant was just marched off with his party, when the two Irish gentlemen arose, and came down stairs; both complaining, that they had been so often waked by the noises in the inn, that they had never once been able to close their eyes all night.

The coach, which had brought the young lady and her maid, and which, perhaps, the reader may hitherto concluded was her own, was indeed a returned coach belonging to Mr King of Bath, one of the worthiest and honestest men that ever dealt in horse-flesh, and whose coaches we heartily recommend to all our readers who travel that road. By which means they may, perhaps, have the pleasure of riding in the very coach, and being driven by the very coachman, that is recorded in this history.

The coachman, having but two passengers, and, hearing Mr Maclachlan was going to Bath, offered to carry him thither at a very moderate price. He was induced to this by the report of the hostler, who said, that the horse which Mr Maclachlan had hired from Worcester, would be much more pleased with returning to his friends there, than to prosecute a long journey;

Digitized by Google

ney; for that the said horse was rather a two-legged than a four-legged animal.

Mr Maclachlan immediately closed with the proposal of the coachman, and, at the same time, persuaded his friend Fitzpatrick to accept of the fourth place in the coach. This conveyance the soreness of his bones made more agreeable to him than a horse; and, being well assured of meeting with his wife at Bath, he thought a little delay would be of no consequence.

Maclachlan, who was much the sharper man of the two, no sooner heard that this lady came from Chester, with the other circumstances, which he learned from the hostler, than it came into his head that she might possibly be his friend's wife; and presently acquainted him with this suspicion, which had never once occurred to Fitzpatrick himself. To say the truth, he was one of those compositions which nature makes up in too great a hurry, and forgets to put any brains into their head.

Now it happens to this sort of men, as to bad hounds, who never hit off a fault themselves; but no sooner doth a dog of sagacity open his mouth, than they immediately do the same, and, without the guidance of any scent, run directly forwards as fast as they are able. In the same manner, the very moment Mr Maclachlan had mentioned his apprehension, Mr Fitzpatrick instantly concurred, and flew directly up stairs to surprise his wife, before he knew where she was; and unluckily (as Fortune loves to play tricks with those gentlemen who put themselves entirely under her conduct), ran his head against several doors and posts to no purpose. Much kinder was she to me, when she suggested that simile of the hounds, just before inserted; since the poor wife may, on these occasions, be so justly compared to a hunted hare. Like that little wretched animal, she pricks up her ears to listen after the voice of her pursuer; like her, flies away trembling when she hears it; and, like her, is generally overtaken and destroyed in the end.

This was not however the case at present; for, after a long fruitless search, Mr Fitzpatrick returned to the

Digitized by Google

the kitchen, where, as if this had been a real chace, entered a gentleman hallowing as hunters do when the hounds are at a fault. He was just alighted from his horse, and many attendants at his heels.

Here, reader, it may be necessary to acquaint thee with some matters, which, if thou dost know already, thou art wiser than I take thee to be. And this information thou shalt receive in the next chapter.

CHAP. VII.

In which are concluded the adventures that happened at the inn at Upton.

IN the first place then, this gentleman just arrived was no other person than 'squire Western himself, who was come hither in pursuit of his daughter; and, had he fortunately been two hours earlier, he had not only found her, but his niece into the bargain; for such was the wife of Mr Fitzpatrick, who had run away with her five years before, out of the custody of that sage lady Madam Western.

Now this lady had departed from the inn much about the same time with Sophia: for, having been waked by the voice of her husband, she had sent up for the landlady, and, being by her apprized of the matter, had bribed the good woman, at an extravagant price, to furnish her with horses for her escape. Such prevalence had money in this family; and tho' the mistress would have turned away her maid for a corrupt hussy, if she had known as much as the reader, yet she was no more proof against corruption herself than poor Susan had been.

Mr Western and his nephew were not known to one another; nor indeed would the former have taken any notice of the latter, if he had known him; for this being a stolen match, and consequently an unnatural one in the opinion of the good 'squire, he had, from the time of her committing it, abandoned the poor young creature, who was then no more than eighteen, as a monster, and had never since suffered her to be named in his presence.

The kitchen was now a scene of universal confusion,

Digitized by Google

Western enquiring after his daughter, and Fitzpatrick as eagerly after his wife, when Jones entered the room, unfortunately having Sophia's muff in his hand.

As soon as Western saw Jones, he set up the same holla as is used by sportsmen when their game is in view. He then immediately run up and laid hold of Jones, crying, 'We have got the dog-fox, I warrant 'the bitch is not far off.' The jargon which followed for some minutes, where many spoke different things at the same time, as it would be very difficult to describe, so would it be no less unpleasant to read.

Jones having, at length shaken Mr Western off, and some of the company having interfered between them, our hero protested his innocence as to knowing any thing of the lady; when parson Supple stepped up, and said, 'It is folly to deny it; for why, the 'marks of guilt are in thy hands. I will myself asseverate and bind it by an oath, that the muff thou 'bearest in thy hand belongeth unto Madam Sophia; 'for I have frequently observed her, of later days, 'to bear it about her.' 'My daughter's muff!' cries the 'squire in a rage; 'hath he got my daughter's 'muff? Bear witness, the goods are found upon him. 'I'll have him before a justice of the peace this instant. 'Where is my daughter, villain?' 'Sir,' said Jones, 'I beg you would be pacified. The muff, I acknow-'ledge, is the young lady's; but, upon my honour, 'I have never seen her.' At these words Western lost all patience, and grew inarticulate with rage.

Some of the servants had acquainted Fitzpatrick who Mr Western was. The good Irishman therefore, thinking he had now an opportunity to do an act of service to his uncle, and by that means might possibly obtain his favour, stept up to Jones, and cried out, 'Upon my conscience, Sir, you may be ashamed of 'denying your having seen the gentleman's daughter 'before my face, when you know I found you there 'upon the bed together.' Then, turning to Western, he offered to conduct him immediately to the room where his daughter was; which offer being accepted, he, the 'squire, the parson, and some others ascended directly to Mrs Waters's chamber, which they entered

Digitized by Google

with no leſs violence than Mr Fitzpatrick had done before.

The poor lady ſtarted from her ſleep with as much amazement as terror, and beheld at her bedſide a figure which might very well be ſuppoſed to have eſcaped out of Bedlam: ſuch wildneſs and confuſion were in the looks of Mr Weſtern; who no ſooner ſaw the lady, than he ſtarted back, ſhewing ſufficiently by his manner, before he ſpoke, that this was not the perſon ſought after.

So much more tenderly do women value their reputation than their perſons, that though the latter ſeemed now in more danger than before; yet, as the former was ſecure, the lady ſcreamed not with ſuch violence as ſhe had done on the other occaſion. However, ſhe no ſooner found herſelf alone, than ſhe abandoned all thoughts of further repoſe; and, as ſhe had ſufficient reaſon to be diſſatisfied with her preſent lodging, ſhe dreſſed herſelf with all poſſible expedition.

Mr Weſtern now proceeded to ſearch the whole houſe, but to as little purpoſe as he had diſturbed poor Mrs Waters. He then returned diſconſolate into the kitchen, where he found Jones in the cuſtody of his ſervants.

This violent uproar had raiſed all the people in the houſe, though it was yet ſcarcely day-light. Among theſe was a grave gentleman, who had the honour to be in the commiſſion of the peace for the county of Worceſter. Of which Mr Weſtern was no ſooner informed, than he offered to lay his complaint before him. The juſtice declined executing his office, as he ſaid he had no clerk preſent, nor no book about juſtice buſineſs; and that he could not carry all the law in his head about ſtealing away daughters, and ſuch ſort of things.

Here Mr Fitzpatrick offered to lend him his aſſiſtance: informing the company that he had been himſelf bred to the law. (And indeed he had ſerved three years as clerk to an attorney in the north of Ireland, when, chuſing a genteeler walk in life, he quitted his maſter, came over to England, and ſet up that buſineſs which

Digitized by Google

which requires no apprenticeſhip, namely, that of a gentleman, in which he had ſucceeded as hath been already partly mentioned).

Mr Fitzpatrick declared that the law concerning daughters was out of the preſent caſe; that ſtealing a muff was undoubtedly felony; and the goods, being found upon the perſon, were ſufficient evidence of the fact.

The magiſtrate, upon the encouragement of ſo learned a coadjutor, and upon the violent interceſſion of the 'ſquire, was at length prevailed upon to ſeat himſelf in the chair of juſtice, where being placed, upon viewing the muff, which Jones ſtill held in his hand, and upon the parſon's ſwearing it to be the property of Mr Weſtern, he deſired Mr Fitzpatrick to draw up a commitment, which he ſaid he would ſign.

Jones now deſired to be heard, which was at laſt, with difficulty, granted him. He then produced the evidence of Mr Partridge, as to the finding it; but, what was ſtill more, Suſan depoſed, that Sophia herſelf had delivered the muff to her, and had ordered her to convey it into the chamber where Mr Jones had found it.

Whether a natural love of juſtice, or the extraordinary comelineſs of Jones, had wrought on Suſan to make the diſcovery, I will not determine; but ſuch were the effects of her evidence, that the magiſtrate, throwing himſelf back in his chair, declared that the matter was now altogether as clear on the ſide of the priſoner, as it had been before againſt him; with which the parſon concurred, ſaying, The Lord forbid he ſhould be inſtrumental in committing an innocent perſon to durance. The juſtice then aroſe, acquitted the priſoner, and broke up the court.

Mr Weſtern now gave every one preſent a hearty curſe, and immediately ordering his horſes, departed in purſuit of his daughter, without taking the leaſt notice of his nephew Fitzpatrick, or returning any anſwer to his claim of kindred, notwithſtanding all the obligations he had juſt received from that gentleman. In the violence, moreover, of his hurry, and of his paſſion, he luckily forgot to demand the muff of

Digitized by Google

Jones: I say luckily; for he would have died on the spot rather than have parted with it.

Jones likewise, with his friend Partridge, set forward the moment he had paid his reckoning, in quest of his lovely Sophia, whom he now resolved never more to abandon the pursuit of. Nor could he bring himself even to take leave of Mrs Waters; of whom he detested the very thoughts, as she had been, tho' not designedly, the occasion of his missing the happiest interview with Sophia, to whom he now vowed eternal constancy.

As for Mrs. Waters, she took the opportunity of the coach which was going to Bath; for which place she set out in company with the two Irish gentlemen, the landlady kindly lending her, her clothes; in return for which she was contented only to receive about double their value, as a recompence for the loan. Upon the road she was perfectly reconciled to Mr Fitzpatrick, who was a very handsome fellow, and indeed did all she could to console him in the absence of his wife.

Thus ended the many odd adventures which Mr Jones encountred at his inn at Upton, where they talk to this day, of the beauty and lovely behaviour of the charming Sophia, by the name of *the Somersetshire angel*.

CHAP. VIII.

In which the history goes backward.

BEFORE we proceed any farther in our history, it may be proper to look a little back, in order to account for the extraordinary appearance of Sophia and her father at the inn at Upton.

The reader may be pleased to remember, that, in the ninth chapter of the seventh book of our history, we left Sophia, after a long debate between love and duty, deciding the cause, as it usually, I believe, happens, in favour of the former.

This debate had arisen, as we have there shewn, from a visit which her father had just before made her in

Digitized by Google

in order to force her consent to a marriage with Blifil: and which he understood to be fully implied in her acknowledgment, 'that she neither must nor could 'refuse any absolute command of his.'

Now from this visit the 'squire retired to his evening potation, overjoyed at the success he had gained with his daughter; and as he was of a social disposition, and willing to have partakers in his happiness, the beer was ordered to flow very liberally into the kitchen; so that before eleven in the evening, there was not a single person sober in the house, except only Mrs Western herself, and the charming Sophia.

Early in the morning a messenger was dispatched to summon Mr Blifil: for though the 'squire imagined that young gentleman had been much less acquainted than he really was, with the former aversion of his daughter; as he had not, however, yet received her consent, he longed impatiently to communicate it to him, not doubting but that the intended bride herself would confirm it with her lips. As to the wedding, it had the evening before been fixed by the male parties, to be celebrated on the next morning save one.

Breakfast was now set forth in the parlour, where Mr Blifil attended, and where the 'squire and his sister likewise were assembled; and now Sophia was ordered to be called.

O Shakespeare, had I thy pen! O Hogarth, had I thy pencil! then would I draw the picture of the poor serving man, who with pale countenance, staring eyes, chattering teeth, faultering tongue, and trembling limbs,

"(E'en such a man, so faint, so spiritless,
"So dull, so dead in look, so woe-be-gone,
"Drew Priam's curtains in the dead of night,
"And would have told him, half his Troy was "burn'd)",

entered the room and declared,——That Madam Sophia was not to be found.

Digitized by Google

'Not to be found!' cries the ſquire, ſtarting from his chair: 'Zounds and damnation! blood and fury! 'Where, when, how, what,——Not to be found! 'Where?'

'La, brother,' ſaid Mrs Weſtern, with true political coldneſs, 'you are always throwing yourſelf into 'ſuch violent paſſions for nothing. My niece, I ſup- 'poſe, is only walked out into the garden. I proteſt 'you are grown ſo unreaſonable, that it is impoſſible 'to live in the houſe with you.'

'Nay, nay,' anſwered the ſquire, returning as ſuddenly to himſelf, as he had gone from himſelf; 'if 'that be all the matter, it ſignifies not much; but, 'upon my ſoul, my mind miſgave me, when the fel- 'low ſaid ſhe was not to be found.' He then gave orders for the bell to be rung in the garden, and ſat himſelf contentedly down.

No two things could be more the reverſe of each other than were the brother and ſiſter, in moſt inſtances, particularly in this, that as the brother never foreſaw any thing at a diſtance, but was moſt ſagacious in immediately ſeeing every thing the moment it had happened; ſo the ſiſter eternally foreſaw at a diſtance, but was not ſo quick-ſighted to objects before her eyes. Of both theſe the reader may have obſerved examples: and, indeed, both their ſeveral talents were exceſſive: for as the ſiſter often foreſaw what never came to paſs, ſo the brother often ſaw much more than was actually the truth.

This was not however the caſe at preſent. The ſame report was brought from the garden, as before had been brought from the chamber, that Madam Sophia was not to be found.

The 'ſquire himſelf now ſallied forth, and began to roar forth the name of Sophia as loudly, and in as hoarſe a voice, as whilome did Hercules that of Hylas: and as the poet tells us, that the whole ſhore echoed back the name of that beautiful youth; ſo did the houſe, the garden, and all the neighbouring fields, reſound nothing but the name of Sophia, in the hoarſe voices of the men, and in the ſhrill pipes of the women; while Echo ſeemed ſo pleaſed to repeat the beloved

Digitized by Google

loved sound, that, if there is really such a person, I believe Ovid hath belied her sex.

Nothing reigned for a long time but confusion; till at last the 'squire, having sufficiently spent his breath, returned to the parlour, where he found Mrs Western and Mr Blifil, and threw himself, with the utmost dejection in his countenance, into a great chair.

Here Mrs Western began to apply the following consolation:

'Brother, I am sorry for what hath happened; 'and that my niece should have behaved herself in 'a manner so unbecoming her family; but it is all 'your own doings, and you have no body to thank 'but yourself. You know she hath been educated 'always in a manner directly contrary to my advice, 'and now you see the consequence. Have I not a 'thousand times argued with you about giving my 'niece her own will? But you know I never could 'prevail upon you; and when I had taken so much 'pains to eradicate her headstrong opinions, and 'to rectify your errors in policy, you know she was 'taken out of my hands; so that I have nothing to 'answer for. Had I been trusted entirely with the 'care of her education, no such accident as this 'had ever befallen you: so that you must comfort 'yourself by thinking it was all your own doing; 'and indeed what else could be expected from such 'indulgence?'——

'Zounds! sister,' answered he, 'you are enough 'to make one mad. Have I indulged her? Have I 'given her her will? ——It was no longer ago than 'last night that I threatened, if she disobeyed me, 'to confine her to her chamber, upon bread and 'water, as long as she lived.—You would provoke 'the patience of Job.'

'Did ever mortal hear the like?' replied she. 'Brother, if I had not the patience of fifty Jobs, 'you would make me forget all decency and deco-'rum. Why would you interfere? Did I not beg 'you, did I not intreat you, to leave the whole con-'duct to me? You have defeated all the operations 'of

Digitized by Google

'of the campaign by one falſe ſtep. Would any 'man in his ſenſes have provoked a daughter by 'ſuch threats as theſe? How often have I told you, 'that Engliſh women are not to be treated like Ci-'racaſſian * ſlaves. We have the protection of the 'world: we are to be won by gentle means only, 'and not to be hectored, and bullied, and beat into 'compliance. I thank Heaven, no Salique law go-'verns here. Brother, you have a roughneſs in your 'manner which no woman but myſelf would bear. 'I do not wonder that my niece was frightened and ter-'rified into taking this meaſure; and, to ſpeak ho-'neſtly, I think my niece will be juſtified to the 'world for what ſhe hath done. I repeat it to you 'again, brother, you muſt comfort yourſelf, by re-'membering that it is all your own fault. How often 'have I adviſed—' Here Weſtern roſe haſtily from his chair, and, venting two or three horrid imprecations, ran out of the room.

When he was departed, his ſiſter expreſſed more bitterneſs (if poſſible) againſt him, than ſhe had done while he was preſent; for the truth of which ſhe appealed to Mr Blifil, who, with great complacence, acquieſced entirely in all ſhe ſaid; but excuſed all the faults of Mr Weſtern, 'as they muſt be conſidered,' he ſaid, 'to have proceeded from the too inordinate 'fondneſs of a father, which muſt be allowed the 'name of an amiable weakneſs.' 'So much the more 'inexcuſable,' anſwered the lady; 'for whom doth 'he ruin by his fondneſs, but his own child?' To which Blifil immediately agreed.

Mrs Weſtern then began to expreſs great confuſion on the account of Mr Blifil, and of the uſage which he had received from a family to which he intended ſo much honour. On this ſubject ſhe treated the folly of her niece with great ſeverity; but concluded with throwing the whole on her brother, who, ſhe ſaid, was inexcuſable to have proceeded ſo far without better aſſurances of his daughter's conſent: 'But he was,' ſays ſhe, 'always of a violent, headſtrong temper; and

* Poſſibly Circaſſian.

'I

Digitized by Google

'I can ſcarce forgive myſelf for all the advice I have 'thrown away upon him.'

After much of this kind of converſation, which, perhaps, would not greatly entertain the reader, was it here particularly related, Mr Blifil took his leave, and returned home, not highly pleaſed with his diſappointment; which however the philoſophy which he had acquired from Square, and the religion infuſed into him by Thwackum, together with ſomewhat elſe, taught him to bear rather better than more paſſionate lovers bear theſe kind of evils.

CHAP. IX.

The eſcape of Sophia.

IT is now time to look after Sophia; whom the reader, if he loves her half ſo well as I do, will rejoice to find her eſcaped from the clutches of her paſſionate father, and from thoſe of her diſpaſſionate lover.

Twelve times did the iron regiſter of time beat on the ſonorous bell-metal, ſummoning the ghoſts to riſe, and walk their nightly round.—In plainer language, it was twelve o'clock, and all the family, as we have ſaid, lay buried in drink and ſleep, except only Mrs Weſtern, who was deeply engaged in reading a political pamphlet, and except our heroine, who now ſoftly ſtole down ſtairs, and, having unbarred and unlocked one of the houſe-doors, ſallied forth, and haſtened to the place of appointment.

Notwithſtanding the many pretty arts, which ladies ſometimes practiſe to diſplay their fears on every little occaſion, (almoſt as many as the other ſex uſes to conceal theirs) certainly there is a degree of courage, which not only becomes a woman, but is often neceſſary to enable her to diſcharge her duty It is, indeed, the idea of fierceneſs, and not of bravery, which deſtroys the female character: for who can read the ſtory of the juſtly celebrated Arria, without conceiving as high an opinion of her gentleneſs and tenderneſs, as of her fortitude? At the ſame time, perhaps many a woman, who

Digitized by Google

who ſhrieks at a mouſe or a rat, may be capable of poiſoning a huſband; or, what is worſe, of driving him to poiſon himſelf.

Sophia, with all the gentleneſs which a woman can have, had all the ſpirit which ſhe ought to have. When, therefore, ſhe came to the place of appointment, and inſtead of meeting her maid, as was agreed, ſaw a man ride directly up to her, ſhe neither ſcreamed out nor fainted away: not that her pulſe then beat with its uſual regularity; for ſhe was at firſt under ſome ſurpriſe and apprehenſion, but theſe were relieved almoſt as ſoon as raiſed, when the man pulling off his hat, aſked her in a very ſubmiſſive manner, 'If her 'ladyſhip did not expect to meet another lady?' And then proceeded to inform her, that he was ſent to conduct her to that lady.

Sophia could have no poſſible ſuſpicion of any falſhood in this account: ſhe therefore mounted reſolutely behind the fellow, who conveyed her ſafe to a town about five miles diſtant, where ſhe had the ſatisfaction of finding the good Mrs Honour: for as the ſoul of the waiting-woman was wrapt up in thoſe very habiliments which uſed to enwrap her body, ſhe could by no means bring herſelf to truſt them out of her ſight. Upon theſe, therefore, ſhe kept guard in perſon, while ſhe detached the aforeſaid fellow after her miſtreſs, having given him all proper inſtructions.

They now debated what courſe to take, in order to avoid the purſuit of Mr Weſtern, who, they knew, would ſend after them in a few hours. The London road had ſuch charms for Honour, that ſhe was deſirous of going on directly; alledging, that as Sophia could not be miſſed till eight or nine the next morning, her purſuers would not be able to overtake her, even though they knew which way ſhe had gone. But Sophia had too much at ſtake to venture any thing to chance; nor did ſhe dare truſt too much to her tender limbs, in a conteſt which was to be decided only by ſwiftneſs. She reſolved, therefore, to travel acroſs the country, for at leaſt twenty or thirty miles, and then to take the direct road to London. So, having

Digitized by Google

ing hired horſes to go twenty miles one way, when ſhe intended to go twenty miles the other, ſhe ſet forward with the ſame guide, behind whom ſhe had ridden from her father's houſe; the guide having now taken up behind him, in the room of Sophia, a much heavier, as well as much leſs lovely burden; being, indeed, a huge portmanteau, well ſtuffed with thoſe outſide ornaments by means of which the fair Honour hoped to gain many conqueſts, and finally to make her fortune in London city.

When they had gone about two hundred paces from the inn, on the London road, Sophia rode up to the guide, and with a voice much fuller of honey than was ever that of Plato, though his mouth is ſuppoſed to have been a bee-hive, begged him to take the firſt turning which led towards Briſtol.

Reader, I am not ſuperſtitious, nor any great believer of modern miracles. I do not, therefore, deliver the following as a certain truth; for, indeed, I can ſcarce credit it myſelf: but the fidelity of an hiſtorian obliges me to relate what hath been confidently aſſerted. The horſe then, on which the guide rode, is reported to have been ſo charmed by Sophia's voice, that he made a full ſtop, and expreſſed an unwillingneſs to proceed any farther.

Perhaps, however, the fact may be true, and leſs miraculous than it hath been repreſented; ſince the natural cauſe ſeems adequate to the effect: for as the guide at that moment deſiſted from a conſtant application of his armed right heel, (for, like Hudibras, he wore but one ſpur), it is more than poſſible that this omiſſion alone might occaſion the beaſt to ſtop, eſpecially as this was very frequent with him at other times.

But, if the voice of Sophia had really an effect on the horſe, it had very little on the rider. He anſwered ſomewhat ſurlily, 'That maſter had ordered 'him to go a different way, and that he ſhould loſe 'his place, if he went any other way than that he 'was ordered.'

Sophia, finding all her perſuaſions had no effect, began now to add irreſiſtible charms to her voice; charms,

Digitized by Google

charms, which, according to the proverb, makes the old mare trot, inſtead of ſtanding ſtill; charms! to which modern ages have attributed all that irreſiſtible force, which the ancients imputed to perfect oratory. In a word, ſhe promiſed ſhe would reward him to his utmoſt expectation.

The lad was not totally deaf to theſe promiſes; but he diſliked their being indefinite: for though perhaps he had never heard that word, yet that in fact was his objection. He ſaid, 'Gentlevolks did not 'conſider the caſe of poor volks; that he had like to 'have been turned away the other day, for riding 'about the country with a gentleman from 'ſquire 'Allworthy's, who did not reward him as he ſhould 'have done.'

'With whom?' ſays Sophia eagerly.—'With a 'gentleman from 'ſquire Allworthy's,' repeated the lad; 'the 'ſquire's ſon, I think, they call 'un.'—'Whi-'ther, which way did he go?' ſays Sophia. 'Why, a 'little o' one ſide o' Briſtol, about twenty miles off,' anſwered the lad.—'Guide me,' ſays Sophia, 'to the 'ſame place, and I'll give thee a guinea, or two, 'if one is not ſufficient.' 'To be certain,' ſaid the boy, 'it is honeſtly worth two, when your Ladyſhip 'conſiders what a riſk I run; but however, if your 'Ladyſhip will promiſe me the two guineas, I'll e'en 'venture to be certain it is a ſinful thing to ride about 'my maſter's horſes; but one comfort is, I can only 'be turned away, and two guineas will partly make 'me amends.'

The bargain being thus ſtruck, the lad turned aſide into the Briſtol road, and Sophia ſet forward in purſuit of Jones, highly contrary to the remonſtrances of Mrs Honour, who had much more deſire to ſee London, than to ſee Mr Jones; for indeed ſhe was not his friend with her miſtreſs, as he had been guilty of ſome neglect in certain pecuniary civilities, which are by cuſtom due to the waiting-gentlewoman in all love affairs, and more eſpecially in thoſe of a clandeſtine kind. This we impute rather to the careleſſneſs of his temper, than to any want of generoſity: but perhaps ſhe derived it from the latter motive: certain it is,

Digitized by Google

that she hated him very bitterly on that account, and resolved to take every opportunity of injuring him with her mistress. It was therefore highly unlucky for her, that she had gone to the very same town and inn whence Jones had started, and still more unlucky was she in having stumbled on the same guide, and on this accidental discovery which Sophia had made.

Our travellers arrived at Hambrook * at the break of day, where Honour was against her will charged to enquire the route which Mr Jones had taken. Of this, indeed, the guide himself could have informed them; but Sophia, I know not for what reason, never asked him the question.

When Mrs Honour had made her report from the landlord, Sophia with much difficulty procured some indifferent horses, which brought her to the inn, where Jones had been confined rather by the misfortune of meeting with a surgeon, than by having met with a broken head.

Here Honour being again charged with a commission of enquiry, had no sooner applied herself to the landlady, and had described the person of Mr Jones, than that sagacious woman began, in the vulgar phrase, to smell a rat. When Sophia therefore entered the room, instead of answering the maid, the landlady, addressing herself to the mistress, began the following speech: 'Good-lack-a-day! why there 'now, who would have thought it? I protest the 'loveliest couple that ever eye beheld. I-fackins, Ma-'dam, it is no wonder the 'squire run on so about 'your Ladyship. He told me indeed you was the 'finest lady in the world, and to be sure so you be. 'Mercy on him, poor heart, I bepitied him, so I 'did, when he used to hug his pillow, and call it his 'dear madam Sophia.—I did all I could to dissuade 'him from going to the wars: I told him there were 'men enow that were good for nothing else but to be 'killed, that had not the love of such fine ladies.' 'Sure,' says Sophia, 'the good woman is distracted.' 'No, no,' cries the landlady, 'I am not distracted.'

* This was the village where Jones met the Quaker

Digitized by Google

'What, doth your Ladyship think I don't know then? 'I assure you he told me all.' 'What saucy fellow,' cries Honour, 'told you any thing of my lady?' 'No 'saucy fellow,' answered the landlady, 'but the 'young gentleman you enquired after, and a very 'pretty young gentleman he is, and he loves Madam 'Sophia Western to the bottom of his soul.' 'He 'love my lady! I'd have you to know, woman, she 'is meat for his master —' Nay, Honour,' said Sophia, interrupting her, 'don't be angry with the good 'woman; she intends no harm.' 'No, marry don't 'I,' answered the landlady, emboldened by the soft accents of Sophia, and then launched into a long narrative too tedious to be here set down, in which some passages dropt, that gave a little offence to Sophia, and much more to her waiting-woman, who hence took occasion to abuse poor Jones to her mistress the moment they were alone together, saying, 'that he 'must be a very pitiful fellow, and could have no love 'for a lady, whose name he would thus prostitute in 'an alehouse.'

Sophia did not see his behaviour in so very disadvantageous a light, and was perhaps more pleased with the violent raptures of his love, (which the landlady exaggerated as much as she had done every other circumstance), than she was offended with the rest; and indeed she imputed the whole to the extravagance, or rather ebullience of his passion, and to the openness of his heart.

This incident, however, being afterwards revived in her mind, and placed in the most odious colours by Honour, served to heighten and give credit to those unlucky occurrences at Upton, and assisted the waiting-woman in her endeavours to make her mistress depart from that inn, without seeing Jones.

The landlady finding Sophia intended to stay no longer than till her horses were ready, and that without either eating or drinking, soon withdrew; when Honour began to take her mistress to task, (for indeed she used great freedom), and after a long harangue, in which she reminded her of her intention to go to London, and gave frequent hints of the impropriety

of

Digitized by Google

of purſuing a young fellow, ſhe at laſt concluded with this ſerious exhortation: 'For Heaven's ſake, Ma-'dam, conſider what you are about, and whither you 'are going.'

This advice to a lady who had already rode near forty miles, and in no very agreeable ſeaſon, may ſeem fooliſh enough. It may be ſuppoſed ſhe had well conſidered and reſolved this already; nay, Mrs Honour, by the hints ſhe threw out, ſeemed to think ſo; and this, I doubt not, is the opinion of many readers, who have, I make no doubt, been long ſince well convinced of the purpoſe of our heroine, and have heartily condemned her for it as a wanton baggage.

But in reality this was not the caſe. Sophia had been lately ſo diſtracted between hope and fear, her duty and love to her father, her hatred to Blifil, her compaſſion, and (why ſhould we not confeſs the truth?) her love for Jones; which laſt the behaviour of her father, of her aunt, of every one elſe, and more particularly of Jones himſelf, had blown into a flame, that her mind was in that confuſed ſtate, which may be truly ſaid to make us ignorant of what we do, or whither we go, or rather indeed indifferent as to the conſequence of either.

The prudent and ſage advice of her maid produced, however, ſome cool reflection; and ſhe at length determined to go to Glouceſter, and thence to proceed directly to London.

But unluckily, a few miles before ſhe entered that town, ſhe met the hack-attorney, who, as is before mentioned, had dined there with Mr Jones. This fellow, being well known to Mrs Honour, ſtopt and ſpoke to her; of which Sophia at that time took little notice, more than to enquire who he was.

But having had a more particular account from Honour of this man afterwards at Glouceſter, and hearing of the great expedition he uſually made in travelling, for which (as hath been before obſerved), he was particularly famous; recollecting likewiſe, that ſhe had overheard Mrs Honour inform him, that they were going to Glouceſter, ſhe began to fear leſt her father might, by this fellow's means, be able

Digitized by Google

to trace her to that city; wherefore, if she should there strike into the London road, she apprehended he would certainly be able to overtake her. She therefore altered her resolution; and having hired horses to go a week's journey, a way which she did not intend to travel, she again set forward after a light refreshment, contrary to the desire and earnest entreaties of her maid, and to the no less vehement remonstrances of Mrs Whitefield, who from good-breeding, or perhaps from good-nature, (for the poor young lady appeared much fatigued), pressed her very heartily to stay that evening at Gloucester.

Having refreshed herself only with some tea, and with lying about two hours on the bed, while her horses were getting ready, she resolutely left Mrs Whitefield's about eleven at night, and, striking directly into the Worcester road, within less than four hours arrived at that very inn where we last saw her.

Having thus traced our heroine very particularly back from her departure, till her arrival at Upton, we shall in a very few words bring her father to the same place; who having received the first scent from the post boy, who conducted his daughter to Hambrook, very easily traced her afterwards to Gloucester; whence he pursued her to Upton, as he had learned Mr Jones had taken that route, (for Partridge, to use the 'squire's expression, left every where a strong scent behind him), and he doubted not in the least but Sophia travelled, or, as he phrased it, ran the same way. He used indeed a very coarse expression, which need not be here inserted; as fox-hunters, who alone would understand it, will easily suggest it to themselves.

THE

Digitized by Google

THE

HISTORY

OF A

FOUNDLING.

BOOK XI.

Containing about three days.

CHAP. I.

A cruſt for the critics.

IN our laſt initial chapter, we may be ſuppoſed to have treated that formidable ſet of men, who are called *critics*, with more freedom than becomes us; ſince they exact, and indeed generally receive, great condeſcenſion from authors. We ſhall in this, therefore, give the reaſons of our conduct to this auguſt body; and here we ſhall perhaps place them in a light, in which they have not hitherto been ſeen.

This word *critic* is of Greek derivation, and ſignifies *judgment*. Hence I preſume ſome perſons who have not underſtood the original, and have ſeen the Engliſh tranſlation of the primitive, have concluded, that it meant judgment in the legal ſenſe, in which it is frequently uſed as equivalent to condemnation.

I am the rather inclined to be of that opinion, as the greateſt number of critics hath of late years been found amongſt the lawyers. Many of theſe gentlemen, from deſpair, perhaps, of ever riſing to the bench in

Digitized by Google

Weſtminſter-hall, have placed themſelves on the benches at the play-houſe, where they have exerted their judicial capacity, and have given judgment, *i. e.* condemned without mercy.

The gentlemen would perhaps be well enough pleaſed, if we were to leave them thus compared to one of the moſt important and honourable offices in the commonwealth, and, if we intended to apply to their favour, we would do ſo; but, as we deſign to deal very ſincerely and plainly too with them, we muſt remind them of another officer of juſtice of a much lower rank; to whom, as they not only pronounce, but execute their own judgment, they bear likewiſe ſome remote reſemblance.

But in reality there is another light, in which theſe modern critics may with great juſtice and propriety be ſeen; and this is that of a common ſlanderer. If a perſon who pries into the characters of others, with no other deſign but to diſcover their faults, and to publiſh them to the world, deſerves the title of *a ſlanderer of the reputation of men;* why ſhould not a critic, who reads with the ſame malevolent view, be as properly ſtiled *the ſlanderer of the reputation of books?*

Vice hath not, I believe, a more abject ſlave; ſociety produces not a more odious vermin; nor can the devil receive a gueſt more worthy of him, nor poſſibly more welcome to him, than a ſlanderer. The world, I am afraid, regards not this monſter with half the abhorrence which he deſerves; and I am more afraid to aſſign the reaſon of this criminal lenity ſhewn towards him: yet it is certain, that the thief looks innocent in the compariſon; nay, the murderer himſelf can ſeldom ſtand in competition with his guilt: for ſlander is a more cruel weapon than a ſword, as the wounds which the former gives are always incurable. One method, indeed, there is of killing, and that the baſeſt and moſt execrable of all, which bears an exact analogy to the vice here diſclaimed againſt, and that is poiſon: a means of revenge ſo baſe, and yet ſo horrible, that it was once wiſely diſtinguiſhed by our laws from all other murders, in the peculiar ſeverity of the puniſhment.

Beſides

Digitized by Google

Beſides the dreadful miſchiefs done by ſlander, and the baſeneſs of the means by which they are effected, there are other circumſtances that highly aggravate its atrocious quality: for it often proceeds from no provocation, and ſeldom promiſes itſelf any reward, unleſs ſome black and infernal mind may propoſe a reward in the thoughts of having procured the ruin and miſery of another.

Shakeſpear hath nobly touched this vice, when he ſays,

" Who ſteals my purſe ſteals traſh, 'tis ſomething,
" nothing;
" 'Twas mine, 'tis his, and hath been ſlave to thou-
" ſands:
" But he that filches from me my good name,
" Robs me of that WHICH NOT ENRICHES HIM,
" BUT MAKES ME POOR INDEED."

With all this my good reader will doubtleſs agree; but much of it will probably ſeem too ſevere, when applied to the ſlanderer of books. But let it here be conſidered, that both proceed from the ſame wicked diſpoſition of mind, and are alike void of the excuſe of temptation. Nor ſhall we conclude the injury done this way to be very ſlight, when we conſider a book as the Author's offſpring, and indeed as the child of his brain.

The reader who hath ſuffered his muſe to continue hitherto in a virgin ſtate, can have but a very inadequate idea of this kind of paternal fondneſs To ſuch we may parody the tender exclamation of Macduff, " Alas! thou haſt written no book." But the Author whoſe muſe hath brought forth, will feel the pathetic ſtrain, perhaps will accompany me with tears (eſpecially if his darling be already no more) while I mention the uneaſineſs with which the big muſe bears about her burthen, the painful labour with which ſhe produces it, and laſtly, the care, the fondneſs, with which the tender father nouriſhes his favourite, till it be brought to maturity, and produced into the world.

Nor is there any paternal fondneſs which ſeems leſs

to

Digitized by Google

to savour of absolute instinct, and which may so well be reconciled to worldly wisdom, as this. These children may most truly be called the riches of their father; and many of them have with true filial piety fed their parent in his old age: so that not only the affection, but the interest of the author, may be highly injured by these slanderers, whose poisonous breath brings his book to an untimely end.

Lastly, the slander of a book is, in truth, the slander of the author: for as no one can call another *bastard*, without calling the mother a *whore*; so neither can any one give the names of *sad stuff*, *horrid nonsense*, &c. to a book, without calling the author a *blockhead*; which, though in a moral sense it is a preferable appellation to that of *villain*, is perhaps rather more injurious to his worldly interest.

Now, however ludicrous all this may appear to some, others, I doubt not, will feel and acknowledge the truth of it; nay, may perhaps think, I have not treated the subject with decent solemnity; but surely a man may speak truth with a smiling countenance: In reality, to depreciate a book maliciously, or even wantonly, is at least a very ill-natured office; and a morose snarling critic may, I believe, be suspected to be a bad man.

I will therefore endeavour, in the remaining part of this chapter, to explain the marks of this character, and to shew what criticism I here intend to obviate: for I can never be understood, unless by the very persons here meant, to insinuate, that there are no proper judges of writing, or to endeavour to exclude from the commonwealth of literature any of those noble critics, to whose labours the learned world are so greatly indebted. Such were Aristotle, Horace, and Longinus, among the ancients, Dacier and Bossu among the French, and some perhaps among us; who have certainly been duly authorised to execute at least a judicial authority in *Foro Literario*.

But, without ascertaining all the proper qualifications of a critic, which I have touched on elsewhere, I think I may very boldly object to the censures of any one, past upon works which he hath not himself read.

Digitized by Google

read. Such cenſurers as theſe, whether they ſpeak from their own gueſs or ſuſpicion, or from the report and opinion of others, may properly be ſaid to ſlander the reputation of the book they condemn.

Such may likewiſe be ſuſpected of deſerving this character, who, without aſſigning any particular faults, condemn the whole in general defamatory terms; ſuch as vile, dull, da—d ſtuff, &c. and particularly by the uſe of the monoſyllable Low; a word which becomes the mouth of no critic who is not RIGHT HONOURABLE.

Again, though there may be ſome faults juſtly aſſigned in the work: yet, if thoſe are not in the moſt eſſential parts, or if they are compenſated by greater beauties, it will favour rather of the malice of a ſlanderer, than of the judgment of a true critic, to paſs a ſevere ſentence upon the whole, merely on account of ſome vicious part. This is directly contrary to the ſentiments of Horace.

'*Verum ubi plura nitent in carmine, non ego paucis*
'*Offendor maculis, quas aut incuria fudit,*
'*Aut humana parum cavit natura* ——

"But where the beauties, more in number, ſhine,
"I am not angry when a caſual line,
"(That with ſome trivial faults unequal flows),
"A careleſs hand, or human frailty ſhows."

Mr FRANCIS.

For, as Martial ſays, *Aliter non fit, avite, liber.* No book can be otherwiſe compoſed. All beauty of character, as well as of countenance, and indeed of every thing human, is to be tried in this manner. Cruel indeed would it be, if ſuch a work as this hiſtory, which hath employed ſome thouſands of hours in the compoſing, ſhould be liable to be condemned, becauſe ſome particular chapter, or perhaps chapters, may be obnoxious to very juſt and ſenſible objections. And yet nothing is more common than the moſt rigorous ſentence upon books ſupported by ſuch objections, which, if they were rightly taken, (and that they

Digitized by Google

they are not always), do by no means go to the merit of the whole. In the theatre eſpecially, a ſingle expreſſion, which doth not coincide with the taſte of the audience, or with any individual critic of that audience, is ſure to be hiſſed; and one ſcene, which ſhould be diſapproved, would hazard the whole piece. To write within ſuch ſevere rules as theſe, is as impoſſible as to live up to ſome ſplenetic opinions; and, if we judge according to the ſentiments of ſome critics and of ſome Chriſtians, no author will be ſaved in this world, and no man in the next.

CHAP. II.

The adventures which Sophia met with after her leaving Upton.

OUR hiſtory, juſt before it was obliged to turn about, and travel backwards, had mentioned the departure of Sophia and her maid from the inn; we ſhall now therefore purſue the ſteps of that lovely creature, and leave her unworthy lover a little longer to bemoan his ill luck, or rather his ill conduct.

Sophia having directed her guide to travel through bye-roads acroſs the country, they now paſſed the Severn, and had ſcarce got a mile from the inn, when the young lady looking behind her, ſaw ſeveral horſes coming after on full ſpeed. This greatly alarmed her fears, and ſhe called to the guide to put on as faſt as poſſible.

He immediately obeyed her, and away they rode at full gallop. But the faſter they went, the faſter were they followed; and as the horſes behind were ſomewhat ſwifter than thoſe before, ſo the former were at length overtaken; a happy circumſtance for poor Sophia, whoſe fears, joined to her fatigue, had almoſt overpowered her ſpirits; but ſhe was now inſtantly relieved by a female voice, that greeted her in the ſofteſt manner, and with the utmoſt civility. This greeting, Sophia, as ſoon as ſhe could recover her breath, with like civility, and with the higheſt ſatisfaction to herſelf, returned.

The

Digitized by Google

The travellers who joined Sophia, and who had given her such terror, consisted, like her own company, of two females and a guide. The two parties proceeded three full miles together before any one offered again to open their mouths; when our heroine, having pretty well got the better of her fear, (but yet being somewhat surprised that the other still continued to attend her, as she pursued no great road, and had already passed through several turnings), accosted the strange lady in a most obliging tone; and said, 'She 'was very happy to find they were both travelling the 'same way.' The other, who, like a ghost, only wanted to be spoke to, readily answered. 'That the 'happiness was entirely hers; that she was a perfect 'stranger in that country, and was so overjoyed at 'meeting a companion of her own sex, that she had 'perhaps been guilty of an impertinence which re-'quired great apology, in keeping pace with her.' More civilities passed between these two ladies; for Mrs Honour had now given place to the fine habit of the stranger, and had fallen into the rear. But though Sophia had great curiosity to know why the other lady continued to travel on through the same bye-roads with herself, nay, though this gave her some uneasiness; yet fear, or modesty, or some other consideration, restrained her from asking the question.

The strange lady now laboured under a difficulty, which appears almost below the dignity of history to mention. Her bonnet had been blown from her head not less than five times within the last mile; nor could she come at any ribbon or handkerchief to tie it under her chin. When Sophia was informed of this, she immediately supplied her with a handkerchief for this purpose; which, while she was pulling from her pocket, she perhaps too much neglected the management of her horse; for the beast, now unluckily making a false step, fell upon his fore-legs, and threw his fair rider from his back.

Though Sophia came head foremost to the ground, she happily received not the least damage: and the same circumstances, which had perhaps contributed to her fall, now preserved her from confusion; for the lane

Digitized by Google

lane which they were then paſſing, was, narrow and very much over-grown with trees, ſo that the moon could here afford very little light, and was moreover, at preſent, ſo obſcured in a cloud, that it was almoſt perfectly dark. By theſe means the young lady's modeſty, which was extremely delicate, eſcaped as free from injury as her limbs, and ſhe was once more reinſtated in her ſaddle, having received no other harm than a little fright by her fall.

Day light at length appeared in its full luſtre; and now the two ladies, who were riding over a common ſide by ſide, looking ſtedfaſtly at each other, at the ſame moment both their eyes became fixed; both their horſes ſtopt, and both, ſpeaking together, with equal joy pronounced, the one the name of *Sophia*, the other that of *Harriet*.

This unexpected encounter ſurpriſed the ladies much more than I believe it will the ſagacious reader, who muſt have imagined that the ſtrange lady could be no other than Mrs Fitzpatrick, the couſin of Miſs Weſtern, whom we before mentioned to have ſallied from the inn a few minutes after her.

So great was the ſurprize and joy which theſe two couſins conceived at this meeting, (for they had formerly been moſt intimate acquaintance and friends, and had long lived together with their aunt Weſtern), that it is impoſſible to recount half the congratulations which paſſed between them, before either aſked a very natural queſtion of the other, namely, whither ſhe was going?

This at laſt, however, came firſt from Mrs Fitzpatrick; but eaſy and natural as the queſtion may ſeem, Sophia found it difficult to give it a very ready and certain anſwer. She begged her couſin therefore to ſuſpend all curioſity till they arrived at ſome inn, 'which I ſuppoſe,' ſays ſhe, 'can hardly be far diſtant: and believe me, Harriet, I ſuſpend as much 'curioſity on my ſide: for indeed I believe our aſtoniſhment is pretty equal.'

The converſation which paſſed between the ladies on the road was, I apprehend, little worth relating; and leſs certainly was that between the two waiting-

Digitized by Google

women: for they likewiſe began to pay their compliments to each other. As for the guides, they were debarred from the pleaſure of diſcourſe, the one being placed in the van, and the other obliged to bring up the rear.

In this poſture they travelled many hours, till they came into a wide and well-beaten road, which, as they turned to the right, ſoon brought them to a very fair promiſing inn; where they all alighted: but ſo fatigued was Sophia, that, as ſhe had ſat her horſe during the laſt five or ſix miles with great difficulty, ſo was ſhe now incapable of diſmounting from him without aſſiſtance. This the landlord, who had hold of her horſe, preſently perceiving, offered to liſt her in his arms from her ſaddle; and ſhe too readily accepted the tender of his ſervice. Indeed Fortune ſeems to have reſolved to put Sophia to the bluſh that day, and the ſecond malicious attempt ſucceeded better than the firſt; for my landlord had no ſooner received the young lady in his arms, than his feet, which the gout had lately very ſeverely handled, gave way, and down he tumbled; but at the ſame time, with no leſs dexterity than gallantry, contrived to throw himſelf under his charming burden, ſo that he alone received any bruiſe from the fall; for the great injury which happened to Sophia, was a violent ſhock given to her modeſty, by an immoderate grin, which, at her riſing from the ground, ſhe obſerved in the countenances of moſt of the by-ſtanders. This made her ſuſpect what had really happened, and what we ſhall not here relate for the indulgence of thoſe readers who are capable of laughing at the offence given to a young lady's delicacy. Accidents of this kind we have never regarded in a comical light; nor will we ſcruple to ſay, that he muſt have a very inadequate idea of the modeſty of a beautiful young woman, who would wiſh to ſacrifice it to ſo paultry a ſatisfaction as can ariſe from laughter.

This fright and ſhock, joined to the violent fatigue which both her mind and body had undergone, almoſt overcame the excellent conſtitution of Sophia, and ſhe had ſcarce ſtrength ſufficient to totter into the inn, leaning on the arm of her maid. Here ſhe was no

Digitized by Google

ſooner ſeated than ſhe called for a glaſs of water; but Mrs Honour, very judiciouſly, in my opinion, changed it into a glaſs of wine.

Mrs Fitzpatrick, hearing from Mrs Honour, that Sophia had not been in bed during the two laſt nights, and obſerving her to look very pale and wan with fatigue, earneſtly entreated her to refreſh herſelf with ſome ſleep. She was yet a ſtranger to her hiſtory, or her apprehenſions; but, had ſhe known both, ſhe would have given the ſame advice; for reſt was viſibly neceſſary for her; and their long journey through by-roads ſo entirely removed all danger of purſuit, that ſhe was herſelf perfectly eaſy on that account.

Sophia was eaſily prevailed on to follow the counſel of her friend, which was heartily ſeconded by her maid. Mrs Fitzpatrick likewiſe offered to bear her couſin company, which Sophia, with much complaiſance, accepted.

The miſtreſs was no ſooner in bed, than the maid prepared to follow her example. She began to make many apologies to her ſiſter Abigail for leaving her alone in ſo horrid a place as an inn; but the other ſtopped her ſhort, being as well inclined to a nap as herſelf, and deſired the honour of being her bedfellow. Sophia's maid agreed to give her a ſhare of her bed, but put in her claim to all the honour. So, after many court'ſies and compliments, to bed together went the waiting-women, as their miſtreſſes had done before them.

It was uſual with my landlord (as indeed it is with the whole fraternity), to enquire particularly of all coachmen, footmen, poſtboys, and others, into the names of all his gueſts; what their eſtate was, and where it lay. It cannot therefore be wondered at, that the many particular circumſtances which attended our travellers, and eſpecially their retiring all to ſleep at ſo extraordinary and unuſual an hour as ten in the morning, ſhould excite his curioſity. As ſoon therefore as the guides entered the kitchen, he began to examine who the ladies were, and whence they came; but the guides, though they faithfully related all they knew, gave him very little ſatisfaction. On the contrary,

Digitized by Google

trary, they rather inflamed his curiosity than extinguished it.

This landlord had the character, among all his neighbours, of being a very sagacious fellow. He was thought to see farther and deeper into things than any man in the parish, the parson himself not excepted. Perhaps his look had contributed not a little to procure him this reputation; for there was in this something wonderfully wise and significant, especially when he had a pipe in his mouth; which, indeed, he seldom was without. His behaviour, likewise, greatly assisted in promoting the opinion of his wisdom. In his deportment he was solemn, if not sullen; and when he spoke, which was seldom, he always delivered himself in a slow voice; and though his sentences were short, they were still interrupted with many hum's and ha's, ay ays, and other expletives; so that though he accompanied his words with certain explanatory gestures, such as shaking or nodding the head, or pointing with his fore-finger, he generally left his hearers to understand more than he expressed; nay, he commonly gave them a hint, that he knew much more than he thought proper to disclose. This last circumstance alone, may indeed, very well account for his character of wisdom; since men are strangely inclined to worship what they do not understand. A grand secret, upon which several impostors on mankind have totally relied for the success of their frauds.

This polite person, now taking his wife aside, asked her, 'what she thought of the ladies lately arrived;' 'Think of them?' said the wife, 'why, what should 'I think of them?' 'I know,' answered he, 'what 'I think. The guides tell strange stories. One 'pretends to come from Gloucester, and the other 'from Upton; and neither of them, for what I can 'find, can tell whither they are going. But what 'people ever travel across the country from Upton 'hither, especially to London? And one of the 'maid servants, before she alighted from her horse, 'asked, if this was not the London road? Now I 'have put all these circumstances together, and whom 'do you think I have found them out to be?' 'Nay,'

Digitized by Google

anſwered ſhe, 'you know I never prétend to gueſs 'at your diſcoveries.'—'It is a good girl,' replied he, chucking her under the chin; 'I muſt own you 'have always ſubmitted to my knowledge of theſe 'matters. Why then depend upon it; mind what 'I ſay;—depend upon it they are certainly ſome of 'the rebel ladies, who, they ſay, travel with the 'young Chevalier; and have taken a round-about 'way to eſcape the Duke's army.'

'Huſband,' quoth the wife, 'you have certainly 'hit it; for one of them is dreſt as fine as any prin-'ceſs; and, to be ſure, ſhe looks for all the world 'like one. But yet when I conſider one thing.' —'When you conſider,' cries the landlord contemptuouſly——'Come, pray let's hear what you con-'ſider.'——'Why, it is,' anſwered the wife, 'that 'ſhe is too humble to be any very great lady; for, 'while our Betty was warming the bed, ſhe called her 'nothing but child, and my dear, and ſweetheart; 'and when Betty offered to pull off her ſhoes and 'ſtockings, ſhe would not ſuffer her, ſaying, ſhe would 'not give her the trouble.'

'Pugh!' anſwered the huſband, 'that's nothing. 'Doſt think, becauſe you have ſeen ſome great ladies 'rude and uncivil to perſons below them, that none 'of them know how to behave themſelves when they 'come before their inferiors? I think I know people 'of faſhion when I ſee them. I think I do. Did not 'ſhe call for a glaſs of water when ſhe came in? 'Another ſort of woman would have called for a 'dram; you know they would. If ſhe be not a wo-'man of very great quality, ſell me for a fool; and, 'I believe, thoſe who buy me will have a bad bargain. 'Now, would a woman of her quality travel without 'a footman, unleſs upon ſome ſuch extraordinary oc-'caſion?' 'Nay, to be ſure, huſband,' cries ſhe, 'you know theſe matters better than I, or moſt folk.' 'I think I do know ſomething,' ſaid he. 'To be 'ſure,' anſwered the wife, 'the poor little heart 'looked ſo piteous, when ſhe ſat down in the chair, 'I proteſt I could not help having a compaſſion for 'her almoſt as much as if ſhe had been a poor body.

'But

Digitized by Google

'But what's to be done, husband? If an she be a rebel, I suppose you intend to betray her up to the court. Well, she's a sweet tempered, good humoured lady, be what she will, and I shall hardly refrain from crying, when I hear she is hanged or beheaded.' 'Pooh!' answered the husband!—— 'But as to what's to be done, it is not so easy a matter to determine. I hope, before she goes away, we shall have the news of a battle: for, if the Chevalier should get the better, she may gain us interest at court, and make our fortunes without betraying her.' Why that's true,' replied the wife; 'and I heartily hope she will have it in her power. Certainly she's a sweet good lady: it would go horribly against me to have her come to any harm.' 'Pooh,' cries the landlord, 'women are always so tender-hearted. Why, you would not harbour rebels, would you?' 'No certainly,' answered the wife; 'and as for betraying her, come what will on't, nobody can blame us. It is what any body would do in our case.'

While our politic landlord, who had not, we see, undeservedly the reputation of great wisdom among his neighbours, was engaged in debating this matter with himself, (for he paid little attention to the opinion of his wife), news arrived that the rebels had given the Duke the slip, and had got a day's march towards London; and soon after arrived a famous Jacobite 'squire, who with great joy in his countenance, shook the landlord by the hand, saying, 'All's our own, boy; ten thousand honest Frenchmen are landed in Suffolk. Old England for ever! ten thousand French, my brave lad! I am going to tap away directly.'

This news determined the opinion of the wise man, and he resolved to make his court to the young lady, when she arose; for he had now (he said), discovered, that she was no other than Madam Jenny Cameron herself.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. III.

A very short chapter, in which however is a sun, a moon, a star, and an angel.

THE sun (for he keeps very good hours at this time of the year), had been some time retired to rest, when Sophia arose greatly refreshed by her sleep; which, short as it was, nothing but her extreme fatigue could have occasioned: for though she had told her maid, and perhaps herself too, that she was perfectly easy when she left Upton; yet it is certain her mind was a little affected with that malady which is attended with all the restless symptoms of a fever, and is perhaps the very distemper which physicians mean (if they mean any thing), by the fever on the spirits.

Mrs Fitzpatrick likewise left her bed at the same time; and, having summoned her maid, immediately dressed herself. She was really a very pretty woman, and, had she been in any other company but that of Sophia, might have been thought beautiful; but, when Mrs Honour of her own accord attended, (for her mistress would not suffer her to be waked), and had equipped our heroine, the charms of Mrs Fitzpatrick, who had performed the office of the morning-star, and had preceded greater glories, shared the fate of that star, and were totally eclipsed the moment those glories shone forth.

Perhaps Sophia never looked more beautiful than she did at this instant. We ought not therefore to condemn the maid of the inn for her hyperbole, who when she descended, after having lighted the fire, declared, and ratified it with an oath, that, if ever there was an angel upon earth, she was now above stairs.

Sophia had acquainted her cousin with her design to go to London; and Mrs Fitzpatrick had agreed to accompany her; for the arrival of her husband at Upton had put an end to her design of going to Bath, or to her aunt Western. They had therefore no sooner finished their tea, than Sophia proposed to set out, the moon then shining extremely bright, and, as for the frost,

Digitized by Google

froſt, ſhe defied it; nor had ſhe any of thoſe apprehenſions, which many young ladies would have felt at travelling by night; for ſhe had, as we have before obſerved, ſome little degree of natural courage; and this her preſent ſenſation, which bordered ſomewhat on deſpair, greatly increaſed. Beſides, as ſhe had already travelled twice with ſafety, by the light of the moon, ſhe was the better emboldened to truſt to it a third time.

The diſpoſition of Mrs Fitzpatrick was more timorous; for though the greater terrors had conquered the leſs, and the preſence of her huſband had driven her away at ſo unſeaſonable an hour from Upton; yet, being now arrived at a place where ſhe thought herſelf ſafe from his purſuit, theſe leſſer terrors of I know not what, operated ſo ſtrongly, that ſhe earneſtly intreated her couſin to ſtay till the next morning, and not expoſe herſelf to the dangers of travelling by night.

Sophia, who was yielding to an exceſs, when ſhe could neither laugh nor reaſon her couſin out of theſe apprehenſions, at laſt gave way to them. Perhaps, indeed, had ſhe known of her father's arrival at Upton, it might have been more difficult to have perſuaded her: for as to Jones, ſhe had, I am afraid, no great horror at the thoughts of being overtaken by him; nay, to confeſs the truth, I believe ſhe rather wiſhed than feared it; though I might honeſtly enough have concealed this wiſh from the reader, as it was one of thoſe ſecret ſpontaneous emotions of the ſoul, to which the reaſon is often a ſtranger.

When our young ladies had determined to remain all that evening in their inn, they were attended by the landlady, who deſired to know what their ladyſhips would be pleaſed to eat Such charms were there in the voice, in the manner, and in the affable deportment of Sophia, that ſhe raviſhed the landlady to the higheſt degree; and that good woman, concluding that ſhe had attended Jenny Cameron, became in a moment a ſtaunch Jacobite. and wiſhed heartily well to the young Pretender's cauſe, from the great ſweetneſs and affability with which ſhe had been treated by his ſuppoſed miſtreſs.

The

Digitized by Google

The two couſins began now to impart to each other their reciprocal curioſity, to know what extraordinary accidents on both ſides occaſioned this ſo ſtrange and unexpected meeting. At laſt Mrs Fitzpatrick, having obtained of Sophia a promiſe of communicating likewiſe in her turn, began to relate what the reader, if he is deſirous to know her hiſtory, may read in the enſuing chapter.

CHAP. IV.

The hiſtory of Mrs Fitzpatrick.

MRS Fitzpatrick, after a ſilence of a few moments, fetching a deep ſigh, thus began:

'It is natural to the unhappy to feel a ſecret concern in recollecting thoſe periods of their lives which 'have been moſt delightful to them. The remembrance of paſt pleaſures affects us with a kind of tender grief, like what we ſuffer for departed friends; 'and the ideas of both may be ſaid to haunt our imaginations.

'For this reaſon, I never reflect without ſorrow on 'thoſe days (the happieſt far of my life), which we 'ſpent together, when both were under the care of my 'aunt Weſtern. Alas! why are Miſs Graveairs and 'Miſs Giddy no more? You remember, I am ſure, 'when we knew each other by no other names. Indeed 'you gave me the latter appellation with too much 'cauſe. I have ſince experienced how much I deſerved it. You, my Sophia, was always my ſuperior in 'every thing, and I heartily hope you will be ſo in 'your fortune. I ſhall never forget the wiſe and matronly advice you once gave me, when I lamented 'being diſappointed of a ball, though you could not be 'then fourteen years old.——O my Sophy, how bleſt 'muſt have been my ſituation when I could think ſuch 'a diſappointment a misfortune; and when indeed it 'was the greateſt I had ever known!'

'And yet, my dear Harriet,' anſwered Sophia, 'it 'was then a ſerious matter with you. Comfort yourſelf therefore with thinking, that whatever you now 'lament

Digitized by Google

'lament may hereafter appear as trifling and contemptible as a ball would at this time.'

'Alas, my Sophia,' replied the other lady, 'you 'yourself will think otherwise of my present situation; 'for greatly must that tender heart be altered, if my 'misfortunes do not draw many a sigh, nay, many a 'tear from you. The knowledge of this should perhaps deter me from relating what I am convinced 'will so much affect you.'——Here Mrs Fitzpatrick stopt, till, at the repeated entreaties of Sophia, she thus proceeded:

'Though you must have heard much of my marriage; yet as matters may probably have been misrepresented, I will set out from the very commencement of my unfortunate acquaintance with my present husband; which was at Bath, soon after you 'left my aunt, and returned home to your father.

'Among the gay young fellows, who were at this 'season at Bath, Mr Fitzpatrick was one. He was 'handsome, degagé, extremely gallant, and in his 'dress exceeded most others. In short, my dear, if 'you was unluckily to see him now, I could describe 'him no better than by telling you he was the very 'reverse of every thing which he is: for he hath rusticated himself so long, that he is become an absolute 'wild Irishman. But to proceed in my story; the 'qualifications which he then possessed, so well recommended him, that though the people of quality at 'that time lived separate from the rest of the company, and excluded them from all their parties, Mr 'Fitzpatrick found means to gain admittance. It was 'perhaps no easy matter to avoid him; for he required very little or no invitation; and as being 'handsome and genteel, he found it no very difficult 'matter to ingratiate himself with the ladies; so, he 'having frequently drawn his sword, the men did not 'care publicly to affront him. Had it not been for 'some such reason, I believe he would have been 'soon expelled by his own sex; for surely he had no 'strict title to be preferred to the English gentry; 'nor did they seem inclined to shew him any extraordinary favour. They all abused him behind his

'back,

Digitized by Google

'back, which might probably proceed from envy; 'for by the women he was well received, and very 'particularly distinguished by them.

'My aunt, though no person of quality herself, as 'she had always lived about the court, was enrolled 'in that party: for by whatever means you get into 'the polite circle, when you are once there, it is suf- 'ficient merit for you that you are there. This ob- 'servation, young as you was, you could scarce a- 'void making from my aunt, who was free, or re- 'served, with all people, just as they had more or 'less of this merit.

'And this merit, I believe, it was, which princi- 'pally recommended Mr Fitzpatrick to her favour. 'In which he so well succeeded, that he was always 'one of her private parties. Nor was he backward 'in returning such distinction: for he soon grew so 'very particular in his behaviour to her, that the 'scandal club first began to take notice of it, and the 'better disposed persons made a match between them. 'For my own part, I confess, I made no doubt but 'that his designs were strictly honourable, as the 'phrase is; that is, to rob a lady of her fortune by 'way of marriage. My aunt was, I conceived, nei- 'ther young enough nor handsome enough, to attract 'much wicked inclination; but she had matrimonial 'charms in great abundance.

'I was the more confirmed in this opinion from 'the extraordinary respect which he shewed to my- 'self, from the first moment of our acquaintance. 'This I understood as an attempt to lessen, if possi- 'ble, that disinclination which my interest might be 'supposed to give me towards the match; and I know 'not but in some measure it had that effect: for as I 'was well contented with my own fortune, and of 'all people the least a slave to interested views; so I 'could not be violently the enemy of a man with 'whose behaviour to me I was greatly pleased; and 'the more so, as I was the only object of such re- 'spect; for he behaved at the same time to many wo- 'men of quality without any respect at all.

'Agreeable as this was to me, he soon changed it 'into

Digitized by Google

'into another kind of behaviour, which was perhaps 'more ſo. He now put on much ſoftneſs and tender-'neſs, and languiſhed and ſighed abundantly. At 'times, indeed, whether from art or nature I will not 'determine, he gave his uſual looſe to gaiety and 'mirth; but this was always in general company, 'and with other women; for even in a country-'dance, when he was not my partner, he became 'grave; and put on the ſofteſt look imaginable, the 'moment he approached me. Indeed he was in all 'things ſo very particular towards me, that I muſt 'have been blind not to have diſcovered it. And, 'and, and—' 'And you was more pleaſed ſtill, my 'dear Harriet,' cries Sophia; 'you need not be 'aſhamed,' added ſhe ſighing; 'for ſure there are 'irreſiſtible charms in tenderneſs, which too many 'men are able to affect.' 'True,' anſwered her cou-ſin, 'men, who in all other inſtances want common 'ſenſe, are very Machiavels in the art of loving. I 'wiſh I did not know an inſtance.——Well, ſcandal 'now began to be as buſy with me as it had before 'been with my aunt; and ſome good ladies did not 'ſcruple to affirm, that Mr Fitzpatrick had an in-'trigue with us both.

'But what may ſeem aſtoniſhing; my aunt never 'ſaw, nor in the leaſt ſeemed to ſuſpect that which 'was viſible enough, I believe, from both our beha-'viours. One would indeed think, that love quite 'puts out the eyes of an old woman. In fact they 'ſo greedily ſwallow the addreſſes which are made 'to them, that, like an outrageous glutton, they are 'not at leiſure to obſerve what paſſes amongſt others 'at the ſame table. This I have obſerved in more 'caſes than my own; and this was ſo ſtrongly verifi-'ed by my aunt, that, though ſhe often found us to-'gether at her return from the pump, the leaſt cant-'ing word of his, pretending impatience at her ab-'ſence, effectually ſmothered all ſuſpicion. One ar-'tifice ſucceeded with her to admiration. This was 'his treating me like a little child, and never calling 'me by any other name in her preſence, but that of '*pretty miſs*. This indeed did him ſome diſſervice

'with

Digitized by Google

'with your humble servant; but I soon saw through it, especially as in her absence he behaved to me, as I have said, in a different manner. However, if I was not greatly displeased by a conduct of which I had discovered the design, I smarted very severely for it; for my aunt really conceived me to be what her lover (as he thought him) called me, and treated me, in all respects, as a perfect infant. To say the truth, I wonder she had not insisted on my again wearing leading-strings.

'At last, my lover (for so he was), thought proper, in a most solemn manner, to disclose a secret which I had known long before. He now placed all the love which he had pretended to my aunt to my account. He lamented, in very pathetic terms, the encouragement she had given him, and made a high merit of the tedious hours, in which he had undergone her conversation.—What shall I tell you, my dear Sophia?—Then I will confess the truth, I was pleased with my man. I was pleased with my conquest. To rival my aunt delighted me; to rival so many other women charmed me. In short, I am afraid, I did not behave as I should do, even upon the very first declaration.—I wish I did not almost give him positive encouragement before we parted.

'The Bath now talked loudly, I might almost say, roared against me. Several young women affected to shun my acquaintance, not so much perhaps from any real suspicion, as from a desire of banishing me from a company, in which I too much ingrossed their favourite man. And here I cannot omit expressing my gratitude to the kindness intended me by Mr Nash; who took me one day aside, and gave me advice, which if I had followed, I had been a happy woman. 'Child,' says he, 'I am sorry to see the "familiarity which subsists between you and a fellow "who is altogether unworthy of you, and I am afraid "will prove your ruin. As for your old stinking "aunt, if it was to be no injury to you, and my "pretty Sophy Western, (I assure you I repeat his "words), I should be heartily glad that the fellow "was in possession of all that belongs to her. I ne-

Digitized by Google

" ver adviſe old women: for, if they take it into " their heads to go to the devil, it is no more poſſi- " ble, than worth while, to keep them from him. " Innocence, and youth, and beauty, are worthy a " better fate, and I would ſave them from his clutch- " es. Let me adviſe you therefore, dear child, never " ſuffer this fellow to be particular with you again.' ' —Many more things he ſaid to me, which I have ' now forgotten, and indeed I attended very little to ' them at that time: for inclination contradicted all ' he ſaid; and beſides, I could not be perſuaded, that ' women of quality would condeſcend to familiarity ' with ſuch a perſon as he deſcribed.

' But I am afraid, my dear, I ſhall tire you with a ' detail of ſo many minute circumſtances. To be con- ' ciſe therefore, imagine me married; imagine me ' with my huſband, at the feet of my aunt; and then ' imagine the maddeſt woman in Bedlam in a raving ' fit; and your imagination will ſuggeſt to you no ' more than what really happened.

' The very next day my aunt left the place, partly ' to avoid ſeeing Mr Fitzpatrick or myſelf, and as ' much perhaps to avoid ſeeing any one elſe; for, ' though I am told ſhe hath ſince denied every thing ' ſtoutly, I believe ſhe was then a little confounded at ' her diſappointment. Since that time I have written ' to her many letters; but never could obtain an an- ' ſwer, which I muſt own ſits ſomewhat the heavier, ' as ſhe herſelf was, though undeſignedly, the occa- ' ſion of all my ſufferings: for had it not been under ' the colour of paying his addreſſes to her, Mr Fitz- ' patrick would never have found ſufficient opportu- ' nities to have engaged my heart, which, in other ' circumſtances, I ſtill flatter myſelf would not have ' been an eaſy conqueſt to ſuch a perſon. Indeed, I ' believe, I ſhould not have erred ſo groſsly in my ' choice, if I had relied on my own judgment; but I ' truſted totally to the opinion of others, and very ' fooliſhly took the merit of a man for granted, whom ' I ſaw ſo univerſally well received by the women. ' What is the reaſon, my dear, that we who have un- ' derſtandings, equal to the wiſeſt and greateſt of the

Digitized by Google

'other sex, so often make choice of the silliest fellows for companions and favourites? It raises my 'indignation to the highest pitch, to reflect on the 'numbers of women of sense who have been undone 'by fools.' Here she paused a moment; but, Sophia making no answer, she proceeded as in the next chapter.

CHAP. V.

In which the history of Mrs Fitzpatrick is continued.

'WE remained at Bath no longer than a fort'night after our wedding: for, as to any re'conciliation with my aunt, there were no hopes; 'and of my fortune, not one farthing could be 'touched till I was of age, of which I now wanted 'more than two years. My husband, therefore, was 'resolved to set out for Ireland; against which I re'monstrated very earnestly, and insisted on a promise 'which he had made me before our marriage, that 'I should never take this journey against my consent; 'and indeed I never intended to consent to it; nor 'will any body, I believe, blame me for that reso'lution; but this, however, I never mentioned to 'my husband, and petitioned only for the reprieve 'of a month; but he had fixed the day, and to that 'day he obstinately adhered.

'The evening before our departure, as we were 'disputing this point with great eagerness on both 'sides, he started suddenly from his chair, and left 'me abruptly, saying he was going to the rooms. 'He was hardly out of the house, when I saw a pa'per lying on the floor, which, I suppose, he had 'carelessly pulled from his pocket, together with his 'handkerchief. This paper I took up, and, finding 'it to be a letter, I made no scruple to open and 'read it; and indeed I read it so often, that I can 'repeat it to you almost word for word. This then 'was the letter.'

To

Digitized by Google

'To Mr Brian Fitzpatrick.

'SIR,

'YOURS received, and am surprised you should 'use me in this manner, as have never seen any 'of your cash, unless for one linsey-woolsey coat, 'and your bill now is upwards of 150 l. Consider, 'Sir, how often you have fobbed me off with your 'being shortly to be married to this lady, and t'other 'lady, but I can neither live on hopes or promises, 'nor will my woolen-draper take any such in pay-'ment. You tell me you are secure of having either 'the aunt or the niece, and that you might have 'married the aunt before this, whose jointure you 'say is immense, but that you prefer the niece on ac-'count of her ready money. Pray, Sir, take a fool's 'advice for once, and marry the first you can get. 'You will pardon my offering my advice, as you know 'I sincerely wish you well. Shall draw on you *per* 'next post, in favour of Mess. John Drugget and com-'pany, at fourteen days, which doubt not your ho-'nouring, and am,

'SIR,

'Your humble servant,

'SAM. COSGREVE.'

'This was the letter word for word. Guess, my 'dear girl, guess how this letter affected me. You 'prefer the niece on account of her ready money! If 'every one of these words had been a dagger, I could 'with pleasure have stabbed them into his heart; but 'I will not recount my frantic behaviour on the occa-'sion. I had pretty well spent my tears before his re-'turn home; but sufficient remains of them appeared 'in my swollen eyes. He threw himself sullenly into 'his chair, and for a long time we were both silent. 'At length in a haughty tone he said, 'I hope, Ma-"dam, your servants have packed up all your things; "for the coach will be ready by six in the morning." 'My patience was totally subdued by this provoca-

Digitized by Google

'tion, and I answered, 'No, Sir, there is a letter still "remains unpacked;' and then throwing it on the 'table, I fell to upbraiding him with the most bitter 'language I could invent.

'Whether guilt, or shame, or prudence, restrained 'him, I cannot say; but, though he is the most pas-'sionate of men, he exerted no rage on this occasion. 'He endeavoured, on the contrary, to pacify me by the 'most gentle means. He swore the phrase in the let-'ter, to which I principally objected, was not his, nor 'had he ever written any such. He owned, indeed, 'the having mentioned his marriage, and that prefe-'rence which he had given to myself, but denied with 'many oaths the having assigned any such reason. 'And he excused the having mentioned any such mat-'ter at all, on account of the straits he was in for 'money, arising, he said, from his having too long 'neglected his estate in Ireland. And this, he said, 'which he could not bear to discover to me, was the 'only reason of his having so strenuously insisted on 'our journey. He then used several very endearing 'expressions, and concluded by a very fond caress, 'and many violent protestations of love.

'There was one circumstance, which, though he 'did not appeal to it, had much weight with me in 'his favour, and that was the word *jointure* in the 'taylor's letter, whereas my aunt never had been 'married, and this Mr Fitzpatrick well knew——— 'As I imagined therefore, that the fellow must have 'inserted this of his own head, or from hearsay, I 'persuaded myself he might have ventured likewise 'on that odious line on no better authority. What 'reasoning was this, my dear? was I not an advocate 'rather than a judge?—— But why do I mention such 'a circumstance as this, or appeal to it for the justi-'fication of my forgiveness?——In short, had he been 'guilty of twenty times as much, half the tenderness 'and fondness which he used, would have prevailed 'on me to have forgiven him. I now made no far-'ther objections to our setting out, which we did the 'next morning, and in a little more than a week, ar-'rived at the seat of Mr Fitzpatrick.

'Your

Digitized by Google

'Your curiosity will excuse me from relating any 'occurrences which past during our journey: for it 'would indeed be highly disagreeable to travel it o-'ver again, and no less so to you to travel it over 'with me.

'This seat then is an ancient mansion-house: it 'was in one of those merry humours, in which you 'have so often seen me, I could describe it to you ri-'diculously enough. It looked as if it had been for-'merly inhabited by a gentleman. Here was room 'enough, and not the less room on account of the 'furniture: for indeed there was very little in it. An 'old woman, who seemed coeval with the building, 'and greatly resembled her whom Chamont mentions 'in the Orphan, received us at the gate, and in a 'howl scarce human, and to me unintelligible, wel-'comed her master home. In short, the whole scene 'was so gloomy and melancholy, that it threw my 'spirits into the lowest dejection; which my husband 'discerning, instead of relieving, increased by two 'or three malicious observations. 'There are good "houses, Madam,' says he, 'as you find, in other "places besides England; but perhaps you had ra-"ther be in a dirty lodging at Bath.'

'Happy, my dear, is the woman, who in any state 'of life, hath a chearful good-natured companion to 'support and comfort her; but why do I reflect on 'happy situations only to aggravate my own misery! 'My companion, far from clearing up the gloom of 'solitude, soon convinced me, that I must have been 'wretched with him in any place, and in any condi-'tion. In a word, he was a surly fellow, a character 'perhaps you have never seen; for indeed no woman 'ever sees it exemplified, but in a father, a brother, 'or a husband; and, though you have a father, he is 'not of that character. This surly fellow had for-'merly appeared to me the very reverse, and so he did 'still to every other person. Good Heaven! how is 'it possible for a man to maintain a constant lie in 'his appearance abroad and in company, and to con-'tent himself with shewing disagreeable truth only 'at home? Here, my dear, they make themselves

'amends for the uneaſy reſtraint which they put on 'their tempers in the world; for I have obſerved the 'more merry, and gay, and good-humoured my 'huſband hath at any time been in company, the 'more ſullen and moroſe he was ſure to become at 'our next private meeting. How ſhall I deſcribe his 'barbarity? To my fondneſs he was cold and inſen-'ſible My little comical ways, which you, my So-'phy, and which others have called ſo agreeable, he 'treated with contempt. In my moſt ſerious moments 'he ſung and whiſtled; and, whenever I was tho-'roughly dejected and miſerable, he was angry and 'abuſed me: for though he was never pleaſed with 'my good humour, nor aſcribed it to my ſatisfaction 'in him; yet my low ſpirits always offended him, 'and thoſe he imputed to my repentance of having '(as he ſaid), married an Iriſhman.

'You will eaſily conceive, my dear Graveairs, (I 'aſk your pardon, I really forgot myſelf), that when 'a woman makes an imprudent match in the ſenſe 'of the world; that is, when ſhe is not an arrant 'proſtitute to pecuniary intereſt, ſhe muſt neceſſarily 'have ſome inclination and affection for her man. 'You will as eaſily believe that this affection may 'poſſibly be leſſened; nay, I do aſſure you, contempt 'will wholly eradicate it. This contempt I now 'began to entertain for my huſband, whom I now 'diſcovered to be—I muſt uſe the expreſſion—— an 'arrant blockhead. Perhaps you will wonder I did 'not make this diſcovery long before; but women 'will ſuggeſt a thouſand excuſes to themſelves for 'the folly of thoſe they like: beſides, give me leave 'to tell you, it requires a moſt penetrating eye to 'diſcern a fool through the diſguiſes of gaiety and 'good-breeding.

'It will be eaſily imagined, that when I once de-'ſpiſed my huſband, as I confeſs to you I ſoon did, 'I muſt conſequently diſlike his company; and in-'deed I had the happineſs of being very little trou-'bled with it; for our houſe was now moſt elegantly 'furniſhed, our cellars well ſtocked, and dogs and 'horſes provided in great abundance. As my gen-

'tleman

Digitized by Google

'tleman therefore entertained his neighbours with 'great hoſpitality; ſo his neighbours reſorted to him 'with great alacrity; and ſports and drinking con-'ſumed ſo much of his time, that a ſmaller part of his 'converſation, that is to ſay, of his ill-humours, fell 'to my ſhare.

'Happy would it have been for me, if I could as 'eaſily have avoided all other diſagreeable company; 'but alas! I was confined to ſome which conſtantly 'tormented me; and the more, as I ſaw no proſpect 'of being relieved from them. Theſe companions 'were my own racking thoughts, which plagued, 'and in a manner haunted me night and day. In 'this ſituation I paſt through a ſcene, the horrors of 'which can neither be painted nor imagined. Think, 'my dear, figure, if you can, to yourſelf what I 'muſt have undergone. I became a mother by the 'man I ſcorned, hated, and deteſted. I went through 'all the agonies and miſeries of a lying-in, (ten times 'more painful in ſuch a circumſtance, than the worſt 'labour can be, when one endures it for a man one 'loves), in a deſert, or rather indeed a ſcene of riot 'and revel, without a friend, without a companion, 'or without any of thoſe agreeable circumſtances, 'which often alleviate, and, perhaps, ſometimes more 'than compenſate the ſufferings of our ſex at that 'ſeaſon.'

CHAP. VI.

In which the miſtake of the landlord throws Sophia into a dreadful conſternation.

MRS Fitzpatrick was proceeding in her narrative, when ſhe was interrupted by the entrance of dinner, greatly to the concern of Sophia: for the misfortunes of her friend had raiſed her anxiety, and left her no appetite, but what Mrs Fitzpatrick was to ſatisfy by her relation.

The landlord now attended with a plate under his arm, and with the ſame reſpect in his countenance and

Digitized by Google

and addreſs which he would have put on, had the ladies arrived in a coach and ſix.

The married lady ſeemed leſs affected with her own misfortunes than was her couſin: for the former ate very heartily, whereas the latter could hardly ſwallow a morſel. Sophia likewiſe ſhewed more concern and ſorrow in her countenance than appeared in the other lady; who, having obſerved theſe ſymptoms in her friend, begged her to be comforted, ſaying, 'Perhaps all may yet end better than either you or I 'expect.'

Our landlord thought he had now an opportunity to open his mouth, and was reſolved not to omit it. 'I am ſorry, Madam,' cries he, 'that your ladyſhip 'can't eat; for to be ſure you muſt be hungry after 'ſo long faſting. I hope your ladyſhip is not un-'eaſy at any thing; for, as madam there ſays, all 'may end better than any body expects. A gentle-'man who was here juſt now brought excellent news; 'and perhaps ſome folks, who have given other folks 'the ſlip, may get to London before they are over-'taken; and, if they do, I make no doubt but they 'will find people who will be very ready to receive 'them.'

All perſons, under the apprehenſion of danger, convert whatever they ſee and hear into the objects of that apprehenſion. Sophia therefore immediately concluded from the foregoing ſpeech, that ſhe was known and purſued by her father. She was now ſtruck with the utmoſt conſternation, and for a few minutes deprived of the power of ſpeech; which ſhe no ſooner recovered, than ſhe deſired the landlord to ſend his ſervants out of the room, and then, addreſſing herſelf to him, ſaid; 'I perceive, Sir, you know 'who we are; but I beſeech you;—nay, I am con-'vinced, if you have any compaſſion or goodneſs, you 'will not betray us.'

'I betray your ladyſhip!' quoth the landlord; 'no; (and then he ſwore ſeveral very hearty oaths); 'I would ſooner be cut into ten thouſand pieces. I 'hate all treachery. I! I never betrayed any one in 'my life yet, and I am ſure I ſhall not begin with

'ſo

Digitized by Google

'so sweet a lady as your ladyship. All the world 'would very much blame me if I should, since it will 'be in your ladyship's power so shortly to reward me. 'My wife can witness for me, I knew your ladyship 'the moment you came into the house: I said it was 'your honour, before I lifted you from your horse, 'and I shall carry the bruises I got in your ladyship's 'service to the grave; but what signified that, as long 'as I saved your ladyship? To be sure some people 'this morning would have thought of getting a re-'ward; but no such thought ever entered into my 'head. I would sooner starve than take any reward 'for betraying your ladyship.'

'I promise you, Sir,' says Sophia, 'if it be ever in 'my power to reward you, you shall not lose by your 'generosity.'

'Alack-a-day, Madam!' answered the landlord, 'in your ladyship's power! Heaven put it as much 'into your will. I am only afraid your honour will 'forget such a poor man as an innkeeper; but if 'your ladyship should not, I hope you will remember 'what reward I refused——refused! that is, I would 'have refused, and to be sure it may be called refu-'sing; for I might have had it certainly; and to be 'sure you might have been in some houses; but for 'my part, I would not methinks for the world have 'your ladyship wrong me so much, as to imagine I 'ever thought of betraying you, even before I heard 'the good news.'

'What news, pray?' says Sophia, something ea-gerly.

'Hath not your ladyship heard it then?' cries the landlord, 'nay, like enough: for I heard it only a 'few minutes ago; and if I had never heard it, may 'the devil fly away with me this instant, if I would 'have betrayed your honour; no, if I would, may 'I'——Here he subjoined several dreadful imprecations, which Sophia at last interrupted, and begged to know what he meant by the news. He was going to answer, when Mrs Honour came running into the room, all pale and breathless, and cried out, 'Madam, we are all undone, all ruined, they are

'come,

Digitized by Google

'come, they are come!' theſe words almoſt froze up the blood of Sophia; but Mrs Fitzpatrick aſked Honour who were come?—— 'Who?' anſwered ſhe; 'why the French; ſeveral hundred thouſands of 'them are landed, and we ſhall be all murdered and 'raviſhed.'

As a miſer, who hath in ſome well-built city a cottage value twenty ſhillings, when at a diſtance he is alarmed with the news of a fire, turns pale and trembles at his loſs; but when he finds the beautiful palaces only are burnt, and his own cottage remains ſafe, he comes inſtantly to himſelf and ſmiles at his good fortunes: or as (for we diſlike ſomething in the former ſimile) the tender mother, when terrified with the apprehenſion that her darling boy is drowned, is ſtruck ſenſeleſs and almoſt dead with conſternation: but when ſhe is told that little maſter is ſafe, and the Victory only with twelve hundred brave men gone to the bottom, life and ſenſe again return, maternal fondneſs enjoys the ſudden relief from all its fears, and the general benevolence which at another time would have deeply felt the dreadful cataſtrophe, lies faſt aſleep in her mind.

So Sophia, than whom none was more capable of tenderly feeling the general calamity of her country, found ſuch immediate ſatisfaction from the relief of thoſe terrors ſhe had of being overtaken by her father, that the arrival of the French ſcarce made any impreſſion on her. She gently chid her maid for the fright into which ſhe had thrown her; and ſaid, 'ſhe 'was glad it was no worſe; for that ſhe had feared 'ſomebody elſe was come.'

'Ay, ay,' quoth the landlord ſmiling, 'her lady-'ſhip knows better things; ſhe knows the French are 'our very beſt friends, and come over hither only 'for our good. They are the people who are to 'make old England flouriſh again. I warrant her 'honour thought the duke was coming; and that 'was enough to put her into a fright. I was going 'to tell your Ladyſhip the news.—— His honour's ma-'jeſty, Heaven bleſs him, hath given the duke the 'ſlip; and is marching as faſt as he can to London,

'and

Digitized by Google

'and ten thousand French are landed to join him on 'the road.'

Sophia was not greatly pleased with this news, nor with the gentleman who related it; but as she still imagined he knew her (for she could not possibly have any suspicion of the real truth) she durst not shew any dislike. And now the landlord, having removed the cloth from the table, withdrew; but at his departure frequently repeated his hopes of being remembered hereafter.

The mind of Sophia was not at all easy under the supposition of being known at this house; for she still applied to herself many things which the landlord had addressed to Jenny Cameron; she therefore ordered her maid to pump out of him by what means he had become acquainted with her person, and who had offered him the reward for betraying her; she likewise ordered the horses to be in readiness by four in the morning, at which hour Mrs Fitzpatrick promised to bear her company; and then composing herself as well as she could, she desired that lady to continue her story.

CHAP. VII.

In which Mrs Fitzpatrick concludes her history.

WHILE Mrs Honour, in pursuance of the commands of her mistress, ordered a bowl of punch, and invited my landlord and landlady to partake of it, Mrs Fitzpatrick thus went on with her relation.

'Most of the officers who were quartered at a 'town in our neighbourhood were of my husband's 'acquaintance. Among these was a lieutenant, a 'very pretty sort of a man, and who was married to 'a woman so agreeable both in temper and con'versation, that from our first knowing each other, 'which was soon after my lying-in, we were almost 'inseparable companions; for I had the good for'tune to make myself equally agreeable to her.

'The

Digitized by Google

'The lieutenant, who was neither a ſot nor a 'ſportſman, was frequently of our parties; indeed 'he was very little with my huſband, and no more 'than good breeding conſtrained him to be, as he 'lived almoſt conſtantly at our houſe. My huſband 'often expreſſed much diſſatisfaction at the lieutenant's 'preferring my company to his; he was very angry 'with me on that account, and gave me many a hear-'ty curſe for drawing away his companion; ſaying, 'I ought to be d—ned for having ſpoiled one of the 'prettieſt fellows in the world, by making a milk-ſop 'of him.

'You will be miſtaken, my dear Sophia, if you 'imagine that the anger of my huſband aroſe from 'my depriving him of a companion; for the lieute-'nant was not a perſon with whoſe ſociety a fool 'could be pleaſed; and if I ſhould admit the poſſibility 'of this, ſo little right had my huſband to place the 'loſs of his companion to me, that I am convinced 'it was my converſation alone which induced him 'ever to come to the houſe. No, child, it was envy, 'the worſt and moſt rancorous kind of envy, the 'envy of ſuperiority of underſtanding. The wretch 'could not bear to ſee my converſation preferred to 'his, by a man of whom he could not entertain the 'leaſt jealouſy. O my dear Sophy, you are a woman 'of ſenſe; if you marry a man, as is moſt probable 'you will, of leſs capacity than yourſelf, make fre-'quent trials of his temper before marriage, and ſee 'whether he can bear to ſubmit to ſuch a ſuperiori-'ty.——Promiſe me, Sophy, you will take this advice; 'for you will hereafter find its importance.' 'It is very 'likely I ſhall never marry at all,' anſwered Sophia; 'I think, at leaſt, I ſhall never marry a man in whoſe 'underſtanding I ſee any defects before marriage; 'and I promiſe you I would rather give up my own, 'than ſee any ſuch afterwards.'—'Give up your un-'derſtanding!' replied Mrs Fitzpatrick, 'O fie, 'child, I will not believe ſo meanly of you. Every 'thing elſe I might myſelf be brought to give up; 'but never this. Nature would not have allotted 'this ſuperiority to the wife in ſo many inſtances, if

Digitized by Google

'she had intended we should all of us have surrendered it to the husband. This indeed men of sense never expect of us: of which the lieutenant I have just mentioned was one notable example, for though he had a very good understanding, he always acknowledged (as was really true) that his wife had a better. And this, perhaps, was one reason of the hatred my tyrant bore her.

'Before he would be so governed by a wife, he said, especially such an ugly b-- (for indeed she was not a regular beauty, but very agreeable and extremely genteel) he would see all the women upon earth at the devil, which was a very usual phrase with him. He said, he wondered what I could see in her to be so charmed with her company; since this woman, says he, hath come among us, there is an end of your beloved reading, which you pretended to like so much, that you could not afford time to return the visits of the ladies in this country: and I must confess I had been guilty of a little rudeness this way; for the ladies there are at least no better than the mere country ladies here; and I think I need make no other excuse to you for declining any intimacy with them.

'This correspondence however continued a whole year, even all the while the lieutenant was quartered in that town; for which I was contented to pay the tax of being constantly abused in the manner above-mentioned by my husband; I mean when he was at home; for he was frequently absent a month at a time at Dublin, and once made a journey of two months to London: in all which journies I thought it a very singular happiness that he never once desired my company; nay, by his frequent censures on men who could not travel, as he phrased it, without a wife tied up to their tail, he sufficiently intimated, that had I been never so desirous of accompanying him, my wishes would have been in vain; but Heaven knows, such wishes were very far from my thoughts.

'At length my friend was removed from me, and I was again left to my solitude, to the tor-

Digitized by Google

'menting converſation with my own reflections, and 'to apply to books for my only comfort. I now 'read almoſt all day long.—How many books do 'you think I read in three months?' 'I can't gueſs 'indeed, couſin,' anſwered Sophia. 'Perhaps half a 'ſcore?' 'Half a ſcore! half a thouſand, child,' anſwered the other. 'I read a good deal in Daniel's 'Engliſh Hiſtory of France; a great deal in Plutarch's Lives; the Atalantas; Pope's Homer; Dryden's Plays; Chillingworth; the Counteſs D'Anois, 'and Locke's Human Underſtanding.

'During this interval I wrote three very ſupplicating and I thought moving letters to my aunt; 'but as I received no anſwer to any of them, my diſdain would not ſuffer me to continue my applica'tion.' Here ſhe ſtopt, and looking earneſtly at Sophia, ſaid, 'Methinks, my dear, I read ſomething in 'your eyes which reproaches me of neglect in ano'ther place, where I ſhould have met with a kinder 'return.' 'Indeed, dear Harriet,' anſwered Sophia, 'your ſtory is an apology for any neglect; but indeed 'I feel that I have been guilty of a remiſſneſs, with'out ſo good an excuſe. Yet pray proceed; for I 'long, though I tremble to hear the end.'

Thus then Mrs Fitzpatrick reſumed her narrative: 'My huſband now took a ſecond journey to England, 'where he continued upwards of three months. Dur'ing the greater part of this time, I led a life which 'nothing but having led a worſe, could make me 'think tolerable: for perfect ſolitude can never be re'conciled to a ſocial mind, like mine, but when it re'lieves you from the company of thoſe you hate. 'What added to my wretchedneſs, was the loſs of 'my little infant: not that I pretend to have had for 'it that extravagant tenderneſs of which I believe I 'might have been capable under other circumſtances; 'but I reſolved, in every inſtance, to diſcharge the duty 'of the tendereſt mother; and this care prevented me 'from feeling the weight of that, heavieſt of all 'things, when it can be at all ſaid to lie heavy on 'our hands.

'I had

Digitized by Google

'I had ſpent full ten weeks almoſt entirely by myſelf, having ſeen nobody all that time, except my ſervants and a very few viſitors, when a young lady, a relation to my huſband, came from a diſtant part of Ireland to viſit me. She had ſtaid once before a week at my houſe, and then I gave her a preſſing invitation to return; for ſhe was a very agreeable woman, and had improved good natural parts by a proper education. Indeed ſhe was to me a moſt welcome gueſt.

'A few days after her arrival, perceiving me in very low ſpirits, without enquiring the cauſe, which indeed ſhe very well knew, the young lady fell to compaſſionating my caſe. She ſaid, "Though politeneſs had prevented me from complaining to my huſband's relations of his behaviour; yet they all were very ſenſible of it, and felt great concern upon that account; but none more than herſelf." And after ſome more general diſcourſe on this head, which I own I could not forbear countenancing; at laſt, after much previous precaution, and enjoined concealment, ſhe communicated to me, as a profound ſecret—that my huſband kept a miſtreſs.

'You will certainly imagine, I heard this news with the utmoſt inſenſibility—Upon my word, if you do, your imagination will miſlead you. Contempt had not ſo kept down my anger to my huſband, but that hatred roſe again on this occaſion. What can be the reaſon of this? Are we ſo abominably ſelfiſh, that we can be concerned at others having poſſeſſion even of what we deſpiſe? or are we not rather abominably vain, and is not this the greateſt injury done to our vanity? What think you, Sophia?

'I don't know, indeed,' anſwered Sophia, 'I have never troubled myſelf with any of theſe deep contemplations: but I think the lady did very ill in communicating to you ſuch a ſecret.

'And yet, my dear, this conduct is natural,' replied Mrs Fitzpatrick; 'and when you have ſeen and read as much as myſelf, you will acknowledge it to be ſo.'

'I am ſorry to hear it is natural,' returned Sophia;

Digitized by Google

'for I want neither reading nor experience to convince me, that it is very dishonourable and very ill-natured; nay, it is surely as ill-bred to tell a husband or wife of the faults of each other, as to tell them of their own.'

'Well,' continued Mrs Fitzpatrick, 'my husband at last returned; and, if I am thoroughly acquainted with my own thoughts, I hated him now more than ever; but I despised him rather less: for certainly nothing so much weakens our contempt, as an injury done to our pride or our vanity.

'He now assumed a carriage to me, so very different from what he had lately worn, and so nearly resembling his behaviour the first week of our marriage, that, had I now any spark of love remaining, he might, possibly, have rekindled my fondness for him. But, though hatred may succeed to contempt, and may perhaps get the better of it, love, I believe, cannot. The truth is, the passion of love is too restless to remain contented, without the gratification which it receives from its object: and one can no more be inclined to love without loving, than we can have eyes without seeing. When a husband, therefore, ceases to be the object of this passion, it is most probable some other man——I say, my dear, if your husband grows indifferent to you——if you once come to despise him—I say,——that is,——if you have the passion of love in you—Lud! I have bewildered myself so—but one is apt, in these abstracted considerations, to lose the concatenation of ideas, as Mr Locke says———In short, the truth is———in short, I scarce know what it is; but, as I was saying, my husband returned, and his behaviour at first greatly surprised me; but he soon acquainted me with the motive, and taught me to account for it. In a word then, he had spent and lost all the ready money of my fortune; and as he could mortgage his own estate no deeper, he was now desirous to supply himself with cash for his extravagance, by selling a little estate of mine, which he could not do without my assistance; and, to obtain

'tain this favour was the whole and ſole motive of 'all the fondneſs which he now put on.

'With this I peremptorily refuſed to comply. I 'told him, and I told him truly, that, had I been 'poſſeſſed of the Indies at our firſt marriage, he 'might have commanded it all: for it had been a 'conſtant maxim with me, that, where a woman diſ-'poſes of her heart, ſhe ſhould always depoſit her for-'tune; but as he had been ſo kind, long ago, to re-'ſtore the former into my poſſeſſion, I was reſolved 'likewiſe to retain what little remained of the latter.

'I will not deſcribe to you the paſſion into which 'theſe words, and the reſolute air in which they were 'ſpoken, threw him: nor will I trouble you with the 'whole ſcene which ſucceeded between us. Out came, 'you may be well aſſured, the ſtory of the miſtreſs; 'and out it did come, with all the embelliſhments 'which anger and diſdain could beſtow upon it.

'Mr Fitzpatrick ſeemed a little thunderſtruck 'with this, and more confuſed than I had ſeen him; 'though his ideas are always confuſed enough, Heaven 'knows. He did not, however, endeavour to excul-'pate himſelf; but took a method which almoſt 'equally confounded me. What was this but recri-'mination! He affected to be jealous;—he may, for 'ought I know, be inclined enough to jealouſy in 'his natural temper: nay, he muſt have had it from 'nature, or the devil muſt have put it into his head; 'for I defy all the world to caſt a juſt aſperſion on 'my character: nay, the moſt ſcandalous tongues 'have never dared cenſure my reputation. My fame, 'I thank Heaven, hath been always as ſpotleſs as 'my life; and let falſehood itſelf accuſe that, if it 'dare. No, my dear Graveairs, however provoked, 'however ill-treated, however injured in my love, I 'have firmly reſolved never to give the leaſt room 'for cenſure on this account.——And yet, my dear, 'there are ſome people ſo malicious, ſome tongues 'ſo venomous, that no innocence can eſcape them. 'The moſt undeſigned word, the moſt accidental 'look, the leaſt familiarity, the moſt innocent free-'dom, will be miſconſtrued, and magnified into I

Digitized by Google

'know not what, by ſome people. But I deſpiſe, my 'dear Graveairs, I deſpiſe all ſuch ſlander No ſuch 'malice, I aſſure you, ever gave me an uneaſy mo- 'ment. No, no, I promiſe you I am above all that— 'But where was I? O let me ſee; I told you my huſ- 'band was jealous—And of whom pray?—Why of 'whom but the lieutenant I mentioned to you be- 'fore? He was obliged to reſort above a year and 'more back, to find any object for this unaccountable 'paſſion, if indeed he really felt any ſuch, and was 'not an arrant counterfeit, in order to abuſe me.

'But I have tired you already with too many par- 'ticulars; I will now bring my ſtory to a very ſpee- 'dy concluſion. In ſhort, then, after many ſcenes 'very unworthy to be repeated, in which my couſin 'engaged ſo heartily on my ſide, that Mr Fitzpa- 'trick at laſt turned her out of doors; when he found 'I was neither to be ſoothed nor bullied into com- 'pliance, he took a very violent method indeed. Per- 'haps you will conclude he beat me; but this, tho' 'he hath approached very near to it, he never ac- 'tually did. He confined me to my room, without 'ſuffering me to have either pen, ink, paper, or 'book; and a ſervant every day made my bed, and 'brought me my food.

'When I had remained a week under this impriſon- 'ment, he made me a viſit, and, with the voice of a 'ſchoolmaſter, or, what is often much the ſame, of 'a tyrant, aſked me, 'If I would yet comply?' I 'anſwered very ſtoutly, 'That I would die firſt.' "Then ſo you ſhall,' and be d—ned,' cries he: 'for "you ſhall never go alive out of this room.'

'Here I remained a fortnight longer; and, to ſay 'the truth, my conſtancy was almoſt ſubdued, and I 'began to think of ſubmiſſion; when one day, in the 'abſence of my huſband, who was gone abroad for 'ſome ſhort time, by the greateſt good fortune in 'the world, an accident happened. —I—at a 'time when I began to give way to the utmoſt de- 'ſpair— every thing would be excuſable at ſuch a 'time—at that very time I received.—But it would 'take up an hour to tell you all particulars.—In one

'word,

Digitized by Google

'word, then, (for I will not tire you with circumſtances), gold, the common key to all padlocks, opened 'my door, and ſet me at liberty.

'I now made haſte to Dublin, where I immediately 'procured a paſſage to England; and was proceeding 'to Bath, in order to throw myſelf into the protection of my aunt, or of your father, or of any relation 'who would afford it me. My huſband overtook me 'laſt night at the inn where I lay, and which you left 'a few minutes before me; but I had the good luck 'to eſcape him, and to follow you.

'And thus, my dear, ends my hiſtory: a tragical 'one, I am ſure, it is to myſelf; but perhaps, I ought 'rather to apologize to you for its dullneſs.'

Sophia heaved a deep ſigh, and anſwered, 'Indeed, 'Harriet, I pity you from my ſoul!—But what could 'you expect? Why, why, would you marry an Iriſhman?'

'Upon my word,' replied her couſin, 'your cenſure is unjuſt. There are, among the Iriſh, men of 'as much worth and honour, as any among the Engliſh; nay, to ſpeak the truth, generoſity of ſpirit is 'rather more common among them. I have known 'ſome examples there too of good huſbands; and I 'believe theſe are not very plenty in England. Aſk 'me, rather, what I could expect when I married a 'fool, and I will tell you a ſolemn truth; I did not 'know him to be ſo.' 'Can no man,' ſaid Sophia in a very low and altered voice, 'do you think make a 'bad huſband, who is not a fool?' 'That,' anſwered the other, 'is too general a negative; but none, I 'believe, ſo likely as a fool to prove ſo. Among my 'acquaintance, the filleſt fellows are the worſt huſbands; and I will venture to aſſert as a fact, that a 'man of ſenſe rarely behaves very ill to a wife, who 'deſerves very well.'

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

A dreadful alarm in the inn, with the arrival of an unexpected friend of Mrs Fitzpatrick.

SOPHIA now, at the desire of her cousin, related —not what follows, but what hath gone before in this history: for which reason the reader will, I suppose, excuse me, for not repeating it over again.

One remark, however, I cannot forbear making on her narrative, namely, that she made no more mention of Jones, from the beginning to the end, than if there had been no such person alive. This I will neither endeavour to account for, nor to excuse. Indeed, if this may be called a kind of dishonesty, it seems the more inexcusable, from the apparent openness and explicit sincerity of the other lady. But so it was.

Just as Sophia arrived at the conclusion of her story, there arrived in the room where the two ladies were sitting a noise, not unlike in loudness, to that of a pack of hounds just let out from their kennel; nor, in shrillness, to cats, when caterwauling; or, to screech-owls; or indeed, more like (for what animal can resemble a human voice?) to those sounds, which, in the pleasant mansions of that gate, which seems to derive its name from a duplicity of tongues, issue from the mouths, and sometimes from the nostrils of those fair river-nymphs, ycleped of old the Naiades; in the vulgar tongue translated oyster-wenches; for when instead of the ancient libations of milk and honey, and oil, the rich distillation from the juniper berry, or perhaps from malt, hath, by the early devotion of their votaries, been poured forth in great abundance, should any daring tongue with unhallowed licence prophane; *i. e.* depreciate the delicate fat Milton oyster, the plaice sound and firm, the flounder as much alive as when in the water, the shrimp as big as a prawn, the fine cod alive but a few hours ago, or any other of the various treasures, which those water deities, who fish the sea and rivers, have committed to the care of the nymphs, the angry Naiades lift up their immortal voices,

Digitized by Google

voices, and the prophane wretch is ſtruck deaf for his impiety.

Such was the noiſe, which now burſt from one of the rooms below; and ſoon the thunder, which long had rattled at a diſtance, began to approach nearer and nearer, till, having aſcended by degrees up ſtairs, it at laſt entered the apartment where the ladies were. In ſhort, to drop all metaphor and figure,-Mrs Honour, having ſcolded violently below ſtairs, and continued the ſame all the way up, came in to her miſtreſs in a moſt outrageous paſſion, crying out, 'What 'doth your ladyſhip think? Would you imagine, 'that this impudent villain, the maſter of this houſe, 'hath had the impudence to tell me, nay, to ſtand it 'out to my face, that your ladyſhip is that naſty, 'ſtinking wh-re, (Jenny Cameron they call her), 'that runs about the country with the pretender? 'Nay, the lying, ſaucy villain, had the aſſurance to 'tell me, that your ladyſhip had owned yourſelf to 'be ſo; but I have clawed the raſcal: I have left the 'marks of my nails in his impudent face. My lady!' ſays I, 'you ſaucy ſcoundrel: my lady is meat for no 'pretenders. She is a young lady of as good faſhion, 'and family, and fortune, as any in Somerſetſhire. 'Did you never hear of the great 'ſquire Weſtern, 'ſirrah? She is his only daughter; ſhe is,-----and 'heireſs to all his great eſtate. My lady to be called 'a naſty Scotch wh—re by ſuch a varlet!—To be ſure, 'I wiſh I had knocked his brains out with the punch 'bowl.'

The principal uneaſineſs with which Sophia was affected on this occaſion, Honour had herſelf cauſed, by having in her paſſion diſcovered who ſhe was. However, as this miſtake of the landlord ſufficiently accounted for thoſe paſſages which Sophia had before miſtaken, ſhe acquired ſome eaſe on that account; nor could ſhe, upon the whole, forbear ſmiling. This enraged Honour, and ſhe cried, 'Indeed, Madam, I 'did not think your ladyſhip would have made a laugh-'ing matter of it. To be called whore by ſuch an 'impudent low raſcal. Your ladyſhip may be angry 'with me, for ought I know, for taking your part,

'ſince

Digitized by Google

'since proffered service, they say, stinks: but to be 'sure I could never bear to hear a lady of mine called 'whore. ——Nor will I bear it. I am sure your lady-'ship is as virtuous a lady as ever set foot on English 'ground, and I will claw any villain's eyes out who 'dares for to offer to presume for to say the least word 'to the contrary. Nobody could ever say the least ill 'of the character of any lady that ever I waited upon.'

Hinc illæ lachrymæ; in plain truth, Honour had as much love for her mistress as most servants have, that is to say——But, besides this, her pride obliged her to support the character of the lady she waited on; for she thought her own was in a very close manner connected with it. In proportion as the character of her mistress was raised, hers likewise, as she conceived, was raised with it; and, on the contrary, she thought the one could not be lowered without the other.

On this subject, reader, I must stop a moment to tell thee a story. 'The famous Nell Gwynn, step-'ping one day from a house, where she had made a 'short visit, into her coach, saw a great mob assembled, 'and her footman all bloody and dirty; the fellow 'being asked by his mistress, the reason of his being 'in that condition, answered, 'I have been fight-"ing, Madam, with an impudent rascal who called "your ladyship a wh-----e.' 'You blockhead,' re-'plied Mrs Gwynn, 'at this rate you must fight every "day of your life: why, you fool, all the world "knows it.' 'Do they?' cries the fellow in a mutter-'ing voice, after she had shut the coach door, 'they "shan't call me a whore's footman for all that."

Thus the passion of Mrs Honour appears natural enough, even if it were to be no otherwise accounted for: but, in reality, there was another cause of her anger; for which we must beg leave to remind our reader of a circumstance mentioned in the above simile. There are indeed certain liquors, which, being applied to our passions, or to fire, produce effects the very reverse of those produced by water, as they serve to kindle and inflame, rather than to extinguish. Among these, the generous liquor called *punch* is one. It

was

Digitized by Google

was not therefore without reaſon, that the learned Dr Cheney uſed to call drinking punch, pouring liquid fire down your throat.

Now Mrs Honour had unluckily poured ſo much of this liquid fire down her throat, that the ſmoke of it began to aſcend into her pericranium, and blinded the eyes of reaſon, which is there ſuppoſed to keep her reſidence, while the fire itſelf from the ſtomach eaſily reached the heart, and there inflamed the noble paſſion of pride: So that, upon the whole, we ſhall ceaſe to wonder at the violent rage of the waiting-woman; though at firſt ſight we muſt confeſs the cauſe ſeems inadequate to the effect.

Sophia, and her couſin both, did all in their power to extinguiſh theſe flames, which had roared ſo loudly all over the houſe. They at length prevailed; or, to carry the metaphor one ſtep farther, the fire, having conſumed all the fuel which the language affords, to wit, every reproachful term in it, at laſt went out of its own accord.

But though tranquillity was reſtored above ſtairs, it was not ſo below; where my landlady, highly reſenting the injury done to the beauty of her huſband, by the fleſh ſpades of Mrs Honour, called aloud for revenge and juſtice. As to the poor man, who had principally ſuffered in the engagement, he was perfectly quiet. Perhaps the blood which he loſt might have cool'd his anger: for the enemy had not only applied her nails to his cheeks, but likewiſe her fiſt to his noſtrils, which lamented the blow with tears of blood in great abundance. To this we may add reflections on his miſtake; but indeed nothing ſo effectually ſilenced his reſentment, as the manner in which he now diſcovered his error; for as to the behaviour of Mrs Honour, it had the more confirmed him in his opinion: but he was now aſſured by a perſon of great figure, and who was attended by a great equipage, that one of the ladies was a woman of faſhion and his intimate acquaintance.

By the orders of this perſon, the landlord now aſcended, and acquainted our fair travellers, that a great gentleman below deſired to do them the honour of

Digitized by Google

of waiting on them. Sophia turned pale, and trembled at this meſſage, though the reader will conclude it was too civil, notwithſtanding the landlord's blunder, to have come from her father; but fear hath the common fault of a juſtice of peace, and is apt to conclude haſtily from every ſlight circumſtance, without examining the evidence on both ſides.

To eaſe the reader's curioſity, therefore, rather than his apprehenſions, we proceed to inform him, that an Iriſh peer had arrived very late that evening at the inn in his way to London. This nobleman, having ſallied from his ſupper at the hurricane before commemorated, had ſeen the attendant of Mrs Fitzpatrick, and upon a ſhort enquiry was informed, that her lady, with whom ſhe was very particularly acquainted, was above. This information he had no ſooner received, than he addreſſed himſelf to the landlord, pacified him, and ſent him up ſtairs with compliments rather civiller than thoſe which were delivered.

It may perhaps be wondered at, that the waiting-woman herſelf was not the meſſenger employed on this occaſion; but we are ſorry to ſay, ſhe was not at preſent qualified for that, or indeed for any other office. The rum (for ſo the landlord choſe to call the diſtillation from malt), had baſely taken the advantage of the fatigue which the poor woman had undergone, and had made terrible depredations on her noble faculties, at a time when they were very unable to reſiſt the attack.

We ſhall not deſcribe this tragical ſcene too fully; but we thought ourſelves obliged, by that hiſtoric integrity which we profeſs, ſhortly to hint a matter, which we would otherwiſe have been glad to have ſpared. Many hiſtorians indeed, for want of this integrity, or of diligence, to ſay no worſe, often leave the reader to find out theſe little circumſtances in the dark, and ſometimes to his great confuſion and perplexity.

Sophia was very ſoon eaſed of her cauſeleſs fright by the entry of the noble peer, who was not only an intimate acquaintance of Mrs Fitzpatrick, but in reality a very particular friend of that lady. To ſay truth, it

Digitized by Google

was by his assistance, that she had been enabled to escape from her husband: for this nobleman had the same gallant disposition with those renowned knights of whom we read in heroic story, and had delivered many an imprisoned nymph from durance. He was indeed as bitter an enemy to the savage authority too often exercised by husbands and fathers, over the young and lovely of the other sex, as ever knight-errant was to the babarous power of enchanters: nay, to say truth, I have often suspected, that those very enchanters, with which romance every where abounds, were in reality no other than the husbands of those days; and matrimony itself was perhaps the enchanted castle in which the nymphs were said to be confined.

This nobleman had an estate in the neighbourhood of Fitzpatrick, and had been for some time acquainted with the lady. No sooner therefore did he hear of her confinement, than he earnestly applied himself to procure her liberty; which he presently effected, not by storming the castle, according to the example of ancient heroes; but by corrupting the governor, in conformity with the modern art of war; in which craft is held to be preferable to valour, and gold is found to be more irresistible than either lead or steel.

This circumstance, however, as the lady did not think it material enough to relate to her friend, we would not at that time impart it to the reader. We rather chose to leave him a while under a supposition, that she had found, or coined, or by some very extraordinary, perhaps supernatural means, had possessed herself of the money with which she had bribed her keeper, than to interrupt her narrative by giving a hint of what seemed to her of too little importance to be mentioned.

The peer, after a short conversation, could not forbear expressing some surprize at meeting the lady in that place; nor could he refrain from telling her, he imagined she had been gone to Bath. Mrs Fitzpatrick very freely answered, 'That she had been pre-'vented in her purpose by the arrival of a person she 'need not mention. In short,' says she, 'I was over-'taken by my husband (for I need not affect to con-

Digitized by Google

'ceal what the world knows too well already). I 'had the good fortune to escape in a most surprising 'manner, and am now going to London with this 'young lady, who is a near relation of mine, and 'who hath escaped from as great a tyrant as my 'own.'

His lordship concluding that this tyrant was likewise a husband, made a speech full of compliments to both the ladies, and as full of invectives against his own sex; nor indeed did he avoid some oblique glances at the matrimonial institution itself, and at the unjust powers given by it to man over the more sensible, and more meritorious part of the species. He ended his oration with an offer of his protection, and of his coach and six, which was instantly accepted by Mrs Fitzpatrick, and at last, upon her persuasions, by Sophia.

Matters being thus adjusted, his lordship took his leave, and the ladies retired to rest, where Mrs Fitzpatrick entertained her cousin with many high encomiums on the character of the noble peer, and enlarged very particularly on his great fondness for his wife; saying, she believed he was almost the only person of high rank, who was entirely constant to the marriage bed. 'Indeed,' added she, 'my dear So-'phy, that is a very rare virtue amongst men of con-'dition. Never expect it when you marry; for, be-'lieve me, if you do, you will certainly be deceived.'

A gentle sigh stole from Sophia at these words, which perhaps contributed to form a dream of no very pleasant kind; but as she never revealed this dream to any one, so the reader cannot expect to see it related here.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IX.

The morning introduced in some pretty writing. A stage-coach. The civility of chamber-maids. The heroic temper of Sophia. Her generosity. The return to it. The departure of the company, and their arrival at London; with some remarks for the use of travellers.

THOSE members of the society, who are born to furnish the blessings of life, now began to light their candles, in order to pursue their daily labours for the use of those who are born to enjoy these blessings. The sturdy hind now attends the levee of his fellow-labourer the ox; the cunning artificer, the diligent mechanic, spring from their hard mattress; and now the bonny housemaid begins to repair the disordered drum-room, while the riotous authors of that disorder, in broken interrupted slumbers, tumble and toss, as if the hardness of down disquieted their repose.

In simple phrase, the clock had no sooner struck seven, than the ladies were ready for their journey; and at their desire, his lordship and his equipage were prepared to attend them.

And now a matter of some difficulty arose; and this was how his lordship himself should be conveyed: for though in stage-coaches, where passengers are properly considered as so much luggage, the ingenious coachman stows half a dozen with perfect ease into the place of four: for well he contrives that the fat hostess, or well-fed alderman, may take up no more room than the slim miss, or taper master; it being the nature of guts, when well squeezed, to give way, and to lie in a narrow compass; yet in these vehicles, which are called, for distinction's sake, *gentlemen's coaches*, though they are often larger than the others, this method of packing is never attempted.

His lordship would have put a short end to the difficulty, by very gallantly desiring to mount his horse; but Mrs Fitzpatrick would by no means consent to it. It was therefore concluded, that the Abigails should by turns relieve each other on one of his

Digitized by Google

lordſhip's horſes, which was preſently equipped with a ſide-ſaddle for that purpoſe.

Every thing being ſettled at the inn, the ladies diſcharged their former guides, and Sophia made a preſent to the landlord, partly to repair the bruiſe which he had received under herſelf, and partly on account of what he had ſuffered under the hands of her enraged waiting-woman. And now Sophia firſt diſcovered a loſs which gave her ſome uneaſineſs; and this was of the hundred pound bank-bill which her father had given her at their laſt meeting; and which, within a very inconſiderable trifle, was all the treaſure ſhe was at preſent worth. She ſearched every where, and ſhook and tumbled all her things to no purpoſe; the bill was not to be found: and ſhe was at laſt fully perſuaded, that ſhe had loſt it from her pocket, when ſhe had the misfortune of tumbling from her horſe in the dark lane, as before recorded: A fact that ſeemed the more probable, as ſhe now recollected ſome diſcompoſure in her pockets which had happened at that time, and the great difficulty with which ſhe had drawn forth her handkerchief, the very inſtant before her fall, in order to relieve the diſtreſs of Mrs Fitzpatrick.

Misfortunes of this kind, whatever inconveniencies they may be attended with, are incapable of ſubduing a mind in which there is any ſtrength, without the aſſiſtance of avarice. Sophia therefore, though nothing could be worſe timed than this accident at ſuch a ſeaſon, immediately got the better of her concern, and, with her wonted ſerenity and chearfulneſs of countenance, returned to her company. His lordſhip conducted the ladies into the vehicle, as he did likewiſe Mrs Honour, who, after many civilities, and more dear Madams, at laſt yielded to the well-bred importunities of her ſiſter Abigail, and ſubmitted to be complimented with the firſt ride in the coach; in which indeed ſhe would afterwards have been contented to have purſued her whole journey, had not her miſtreſs, after ſeveral fruitleſs intimations, at length forced her to take her turn on horſeback.

The coach now, having received its company, began to move forwards, attended by many ſervants, and

Digitized by Google

and by two led captains, who had before rode with his lordſhip, and who would have been diſmiſſed from the vehicle upon a much leſs worthy occaſion, than was this of accommodating two ladies. In this they acted only as gentlemen; but they were ready at any time to have performed the office of a footman, or indeed would have condeſcended lower, for the honour of his lordſhip's company, and for the convenience of his table.

My landlord was ſo pleaſed with the preſent he had received from Sophia, that he rather rejoiced in than regretted his bruiſe, or his ſcratches. The reader will perhaps be curious to know the *quantum* of this preſent; but we cannot ſatisfy his curioſity. Whatever it was, it ſatisfied the landlord for his bodily hurt; but he lamented he had not known before how little the lady valued her money; 'For to be ſure,' ſays he, 'one might have charged every article double, and 'ſhe ſhould have made no cavil at the reckoning.'

His wife however was far from drawing this concluſion; whether ſhe really felt any injury done to her huſband more than he did himſelf, I will not ſay; certain it is, ſhe was much leſs ſatisfied with the generoſity of Sophia. 'Indeed,' cries ſhe, 'my dear, the 'lady knows better how to diſpoſe of her money than 'you imagine. She might very well think we ſhould 'not put up ſuch a buſineſs without ſome ſatisfaction, 'and the law would have coſt her an infinite deal 'more than this poor little matter, which I wonder 'you would take.' 'You are always ſo bloodily wiſe,' quoth the huſband: 'It would have coſt her more, 'would it? doſt fancy I don't know that as well as 'thee? but would any of that more, or ſo much, 'have come into our pockets? Indeed, if ſon Tom 'the lawyer had been alive, I could have been glad 'to have put ſuch a pretty buſineſs into his hands. 'He would have got a good picking out of it; but I 'have no relation now who is a lawyer, and why 'ſhould I go to law for the benefit of ſtrangers?' 'Nay, to be ſure,' anſwered ſhe, 'you muſt know 'beſt.' 'I believe I do,' replied he. 'I fancy, 'when money is to be got, I can ſmell it out as well

Digitized by Google

'as another. Every body, let me tell you, would not 'have talked people out of this. Mind that, I say; 'every body would not have cajoled this out of her, 'mind that.' The wife then joined in the applause of her husband's sagacity; and thus ended the short dialogue between them on this occasion.

We will therefore take our leave of these good people, and attend his lordship and his fair companions, who made such good expedition, that they performed a journey of ninety miles in two days, and on the second evening arrived in London, without having encountered any one adventure on the road worthy the dignity of this history to relate. Our pen, therefore, shall imitate the expedition which it describes, and our history shall keep pace with the travellers who are its subject. Good writers will indeed do well to imitate the ingenious traveller in this instance, who always proportions his stay at any place, to the beauties, elegancies, and curiosities which it affords. At Esher, at Stowe, at Wilton, at Esthury, and at Prior's Park, days are too short for the ravished imagination; while we admire the wondrous power of art in improving nature. In some of these, art chiefly engages our admiration; in others, nature and art contend for our applause; but in the last, the former seems to triumph. Here Nature appears in her richest attire, and Art, dressed with the modestest simplicity, attends her benignant mistress. Here Nature indeed pours forth the choicest treasures which she hath lavished on this world; and here human nature presents you with an object which can be exceeded only in the other.

The same taste, the same imagination, which luxuriously riots in these elegant scenes, can be amused with objects of far inferior note. The woods, the rivers, the lawns of Devon and of Dorset, attract the eye of the ingenious traveller, and retard his pace, which delay he afterwards compensates by swiftly scouring over the gloomy heath of Bagshot, or that pleasant plain which extends itself westward from Stockbridge, where no other object than one single tree only in sixteen miles presents itself to the view, unless the clouds, in compassion to our tired spirits, kindly

Digitized by Google

kindly open their variegated manſions to our proſpect.

Not ſo travels the money-meditating tradeſman, the ſagacious juſtice, the dignified doctor, the warm-clad grazier, with all the numerous offspring of wealth and dulneſs. On they jog, with equal pace, through the verdant meadows, or over the barren heath, their horſes meaſuring four miles and a half *per* hour with the utmoſt exactneſs; the eyes of the beaſt and of his maſter being alike directed forwards, and employed in contemplating the ſame objects in the ſame manner. With equal rapture the good rider ſurveys the proudeſt boaſts of the architect, and thoſe fair buildings with which ſome unknown hand hath adorned the rich cloathing town; where heaps of bricks are piled up as a kind of monument, to ſhew that heaps of money have been piled there before.

And now, reader, as we are in haſte to attend our heroine, we will leave to thy ſagacity to apply all this to the Bœotian writers, and to thoſe Authors who are their oppoſites. This thou wilt be abundantly able to perform without our aid. Beſtir thyſelf therefore on this occaſion; for though we will always lend thee proper aſſiſtance in difficult places, as we do not, like ſome others, expect thee to uſe the arts of divination to diſcover our meaning; yet we ſhall not indulge thy lazineſs where nothing but thy own attention is required; for thou art highly miſtaken if thou doſt imagine that we intended, when we began this great work, to leave thy ſagacity nothing to do; or that without ſometimes exerciſing this talent, thou wilt be able to travel through our pages with any pleaſure or profit to thyſelf.

CHAP. X.

Containing a hint or two concerning virtue, and a few more concerning ſuſpicion.

OUR company being arrived at London, were ſet down at his lordſhip's houſe. Here, while they refreſhed themſelves after the fatigue of their journey,

Digitized by Google

journey, ſervants were diſpatched to provide a lodging for the two ladies; for as her ladyſhip was not then in town, Mrs Fitzpatrick would by no means conſent to accept a bed in the manſion of a peer.

Some readers will perhaps condemn this extraordinary delicacy, as I may call it, of virtue, as too nice and ſcrupulous; but we muſt make allowances for her ſituation, which muſt be owned to have been very ticklish; and when we conſider the malice of cenſorious tongues, we muſt allow, if it was a fault, the fault was an exceſs on the right ſide, and which every woman who is in the ſelf-ſame ſituation will do well to imitate. The moſt formal appearance of virtue, when it is only an appearance, may, perhaps, in very abſtracted conſiderations, ſeem to be rather leſs commendable than virtue itſelf without this formality; but it will however be always more commended; and this, I believe, will be granted by all, that it is neceſſary, unleſs in ſome very particular caſes, for every woman to ſupport either the one or the other.

A lodging being prepared, Sophia accompanied her couſin for that evening; but reſolved early in the morning to enquire after the lady, into whoſe protection, as we have formerly mentioned, ſhe had determined to throw herſelf, when ſhe quitted her father's houſe. And this ſhe was the more eager in doing, from ſome obſervations ſhe had made during her journey in the coach.

Now as we would by no means fix the odious character of ſuſpicion on Sophia, we are almoſt afraid to open to our reader the conceits which filled her mind concerning Mrs Fitzpatrick; of whom ſhe certainly entertained at preſent ſome doubts; which as they are very apt to enter into the boſoms of the worſt of people, we think proper not to mention more plainly, till we have firſt ſuggeſted a word or two to our readers touching ſuſpicion in general.

Of this there have always appeared to me to be two degrees. The firſt of theſe I chuſe to derive from the heart, as the extreme velocity of its diſcernment ſeems to denote ſome previous inward impulſe, and the rather,

Digitized by Google

ther, as this superlative degree often forms its own objects; sees what is not, and always more than really exists. This is that quick-sighted penetration, whose hawk's eyes no symptom of evil can escape; which observes not only upon the actions, but upon the words and looks of men; and as it proceeds from the heart of the observer, so it dives into the heart of the observed, and there espies evil, as it were in the first embryo; nay sometimes before it can be said to be conceived. An admirable faculty, if it were infallible; but as this degree of perfection is not even claimed by more than one mortal being; so from the fallibility of such acute discernment have arisen many sad mischiefs and most grievous heart-aches to innocence and virtue. I cannot help therefore regarding this vast quick-sightedness into evil, as a vicious excess, and as a very pernicious evil in itself. And I am the more inclined to this opinion, as I am afraid it always proceeds from a bad heart, for the reasons I have above-mentioned, and for one more, namely, because I never knew it the property of a good one. Now from this degree of supicion I entirely and absolutely acquit Sophia.

A second degree of this quality seems to arise from the head. This is indeed no other than the faculty of seeing what is before your eyes, and of drawing conclusions from what you see. The former of these is unavoidable by those who have any eyes, and the latter is perhaps no less certain and necessary a consequence of our having any brains. This is altogether as bitter an enemy to guilt, as the former is to innocence; nor can I see it in an unamiable light, even though, through human fallibility, it should be sometimes mistaken. For instance, if a husband should accidentally surprize his wife in the lap or in the embraces of some of those pretty young gentlemen who profess the art of cuckold-making, I should not highly, I think, blame him for concluding something more than what he saw, from the familiarities which he really had seen, and which we are at least favourable enough to, when we call them innocent freedoms. The reader will easily suggest great plenty of instances to himself.

I shall

Digitized by Google

I ſhall add but one more, which, however unchriſtian it may be thought by ſome, I cannot help eſteeming to be ſtrictly juſtifiable; and this is a ſuſpicion that a man is capable of doing what he hath done already, and that it is poſſible for one who hath been a villain once, to act the ſame part again. And, to confeſs the truth, of this degree of ſuſpicion, I believe Sophia was guilty. From this degree of ſuſpicion ſhe had, in fact, conceived an opinion, that her couſin was really no better than ſhe ſhould be.

The caſe, it ſeems, was this: Mrs Fitzpatrick wiſely conſidered, that the virtue of a young lady is, in the world, in the ſame ſituation with a poor hare, which is certain, whenever it ventures abroad, to meet its enemies: for it can hardly meet any other. No ſooner therefore was ſhe determined to take the firſt opportunity of quitting the protection of her huſband, than ſhe reſolved to put herſelf under the protection of ſome other man; and whom could ſhe ſo properly chuſe to be her guardian as a perſon of quality, of fortune, of honour; and who, beſides a gallant diſpoſition, which inclines men to knight-errantry, that is, to be the champion of ladies in diſtreſs, had often declared a violent attachment to herſelf, and had already given her all the inſtances of it in his power?

But as the law hath fooliſhly omitted this office of vice-huſband, or guardian to an eloped lady; and as malice is apt to denominate him by a more diſagreeable appellation; it was concluded that his lordſhip ſhould perform all ſuch kind offices to the lady in ſecret, and without publickly aſſuming the character of her protector. Nay, to prevent any other perſon from ſeeing him in this light, it was agreed that the lady ſhould proceed directly to Bath, and that his lordſhip ſhould firſt go to London, and thence ſhould go down to that place, by the advice of his phyſicians.

Now all this Sophia very plainly underſtood, not from the lips or behaviour of Mrs Fitzpatrick, but from the peer, who was infinitely leſs expert at retaining a ſecret, than was the good lady; and perhaps the exact ſecrecy which Mrs Fitzpatrick had obſerved on this head in her narrative, ſerved not a little to heighten thoſe

Digitized by Google

thoſe ſuſpicions which were now riſen in the mind of her couſin.

Sophia very eaſily found out the lady ſhe ſought; for indeed there was not a chairman in town to whom her houſe was not perfectly well known; and as ſhe received, in return of her firſt meſſage, a moſt preſſing invitation, ſhe immediately accepted it. Mrs Fitzpatrick indeed did not deſire her couſin to ſtay with her with more earneſtneſs than civility required. Whether ſhe had diſcerned and reſented the ſuſpicion above-mentioned, or from what other motive it aroſe, I cannot ſay; but certain it is, ſhe was full as deſirous of parting with Sophia, as Sophia herſelf could be of going.

The young lady, when ſhe came to take leave of her couſin, could not avoid giving her a ſhort hint of advice. She begged her, for Heaven's ſake, to take care of herſelf, and to conſider in how dangerous a ſituation ſhe ſtood; adding, ſhe hoped ſome method would be found of reconciling her to her huſband. 'You muſt 'remember, my dear,' ſays ſhe, 'the maxim which 'my aunt Weſtern hath ſo often repeated to us both; 'That whenever the matrimonial alliance is broke, 'and war declared between huſband and wife, ſhe can 'hardly make a diſadvantageous peace for herſelf on 'any conditions. Theſe are my aunt's very words, 'and ſhe hath had a great deal of experience in the 'world.' Mrs Fitzpatrick anſwered with a contemptuous ſmile, 'Never fear me, child, take care of your-'ſelf; for you are younger than I. I will come and 'viſit you in a few days; but dear Sophy, let me 'give you one piece of advice: leave the character of 'Graveairs in the country; for believe me, it will 'ſit very aukwardly upon you in this town.'

Thus the two couſins parted, and Sophia repaired directly to lady Bellaſton, where ſhe found a moſt hearty, as well as a moſt polite welcome. The lady had taken a great fancy to her when ſhe had ſeen her formerly with her aunt Weſtern. She was indeed extremely glad to ſee her; and was no ſooner acquainted with the reaſons which induced her to leave the 'ſquire and fly to London, than ſhe highly applauded her ſenſe and reſolution; and after expreſſing the higheſt ſatisfaction

Digitized by Google

in the opinion which Sophia had declared she entertained of her ladyship, by chusing her house for an asylum, she promised her all the protection which it was in her power to give.

As we have now brought Sophia into safe hands, the reader will, I apprehend, be contented to deposit her there a while, and to look a little after other personages, and particularly poor Jones, whom we have left long enough to do penance for his past offences, which, as is the nature of vice, brought sufficient punishment upon him themselves.

THE

Digitized by Google

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK XII.

Containing the same individual time with the former.

CHAP. I.

Shewing what is to be deemed plagiarism in a modern Author, and what is to be considered as a lawful prize.

THE learned reader must have observed, that in the course of this mighty work, I have often translated passages out of the best ancient Authors, without quoting the original, or without taking the least notice of the book from whence they were borrowed.

This conduct in writing is placed in a very proper light by the ingenious Abbè Bannier, in his preface to his Mythology, a work of great erudition, and of equal judgment. "It will be easy," says he, "for "the reader to observe, that I have frequently had "greater regard to him, than to my own reputation: "for an Author certainly pays him a considerable "compliment, when for his sake he suppresses learn-"ed quotations that come in his way, and which "would have cost him but the bare trouble of tran-"scribing."

Digitized by Google

To fill up a work with these scraps may indeed be considered as a downright cheat on the learned world, who are by such means imposed upon to buy a second time in fragments and by retail what they have already in gross, if not in their memories, upon their shelves; and it is still more cruel upon the illiterate, who are drawn in to pay for what is of no manner of use to them. A writer who intermixes a great quantity of Greek and Latin with his works, deals by the ladies and fine gentlemen in the same paultry manner with which they are treated by the auctioneers, who often endeavour so to confound and mix up their lots, that in order to purchase the commodity you want, you are obliged at the same time to purchase that which will do you no service.

And yet as there is no conduct so fair and disinterested, but that it may be misunderstood by ignorance, and misrepresented by malice, I have been sometimes tempted to preserve my own reputation, at the expence of my reader, and to transcribe the original, or at least to quote chapter and verse, whenever I have made use either of the thought or expression of another. I am indeed in some doubt that I have often suffered by the contrary method; and that by suppressing the original Author's name, I have been rather suspected of plagiarism, than reputed to act from the amiable motive above assigned by that justly celebrated Frenchman.

Now to obviate all such imputations for the future, I do here confess and justify the fact. The ancients may be considered as a rich common, where every person who hath the smallest tenement in Parnassus, hath a free right to fatten his muse. Or, to place it in a clearer light, we moderns are to the ancients what the poor are to the rich. By the poor here I mean, that large and venerable body which, in English, we call the mob. Now, whoever hath had the honour to be admitted to any degree of intimacy with this mob, must well know that it is one of their established maxims to plunder and pillage their rich neighbours without any reluctance; and that this is held to be neither sin nor shame among them. And so constantly

Digitized by Google

conſtantly do they abide and act by this maxim, that in every pariſh almoſt in the kingdom, there is a kind of confederacy ever carrying on againſt a certain perſon of opulence called the 'ſquire, whoſe property is conſidered as free booty by all his poor neighbours; who, as they conclude that there is no manner of guilt in ſuch depredations, look upon it as a point of honour and moral obligation, to conceal and to preſerve each other from puniſhment on all ſuch occaſions.

In like manner are the ancients, ſuch as Homer, Virgil, Horace, Cicero, and the reſt, to be eſteemed among us writers, as ſo many wealthy 'ſquires, from whom we, the poor of Parnaſſus, claim an immemorial cuſtom of taking whatever we can come at. This liberty I demand, and this I am as ready to allow again to my poor neighbours in their turn. All I profeſs, and all I require of my brethren, is to maintain the ſame ſtrict honeſty among ourſelves, which the mob ſhew to one another. To ſteal from one another, is indeed highly criminal and indecent; for this may be ſtrictly ſtiled defrauding the poor (ſometimes perhaps thoſe who are poorer than ourſelves) or, to ſee it under the moſt opprobrious colours, robbing the ſpittal.

Since, therefore, upon the ſtricteſt examination, my own conſcience cannot lay any ſuch pitiful theft to my charge, I am contented to plead guilty to the former accuſation; nor ſhall I ever ſcruple to take to myſelf any paſſage which I ſhall find in an ancient author to my purpoſe, without ſetting down the name of the author from whence it was taken. Nay, I abſolutely claim a property in all ſuch ſentiments the moment they are tranſcribed into my writings, and I expect all readers henceforward to regard them as purely and entirely my own. This claim however I deſire to be allowed me only on condition that I preſerve ſtrict honeſty towards my poor brethren, from whom, if ever I borrow any of that little of which they are poſſeſſed, I ſhall never fail to put their mark upon it, that it may be at all times ready to be reſtored to the right owner.

Digitized by Google

The omission of this was highly blameable in one Mr Moore, who having formerly borrowed some lines of Pope and company, took the liberty to transcribe six of them into his play of the Rival Modes. Mr Pope however very luckily found them in the said play, and laying violent hands on his own property, transferred it back again into his own works; and for a further punishment, imprisoned the said Moore in the loathsome dungeon of the Dunciad, where his unhappy memory now remains, and eternally will remain, as a proper punishment for such his unjust dealings in the poetical trade.

CHAP. II.

In which, though the 'squire doth not find his daughter, something is found, which puts an end to his pursuit.

THE history now returns to the inn at Upton, whence we shall first trace the footsteps of squire Western; for as he will soon arrive at an end of his journey, we shall have then full leisure to attend our hero.

The reader may be pleased to remember, that the said squire departed from the inn in great fury, and in that fury he pursued his daughter. The hostler having informed him that she had crossed the Severn, he likewise past that river with his equipage, and rode full speed, vowing the utmost vengeance against poor Sophia, if he should but overtake her.

He had not gone far before he arrived at a cross way. Here he called a short council of war, in which, after hearing different opinions, he at last gave the direction of his pursuit to Fortune, and struck directly into the Worcester road.

In this road he proceeded about two miles, when he began to bemoan himself most bitterly, frequently crying out, 'What pity is it! Sure never was so unlucky a dog as myself!' and then burst forth a volley of oaths and execrations

The parson attempted to administer comfort to him on this occasion. 'Sorrow not, Sir,' says he, 'like those

Digitized by Google

'thoſe without hope. Howbeit we have not yet been 'able to overtake young Madam, we may account 'it ſome good fortune, that we have hitherto traced 'her courſe aright. Peradventure ſhe will ſoon be 'fatigated with her journey, and will tarry in ſome 'inn, in order to renovate her corporeal functions; 'and in that caſe, in all moral certainty, you will very 'briefly be *compos voti*.'

'Pogh! d—n the ſlut!' anſwered the ſquire, 'I 'am lamenting the loſs of ſo fine a morning for hunt-'ing: It is confounded hard to loſe one of the beſt 'ſcenting days, in all appearance, which hath been 'this ſeaſon, and eſpecially after ſo long a froſt.'

Whether fortune, who now and then ſhews ſome compaſſion in her wantoneſt tricks, might not take pity of the 'ſquire; and as ſhe had determined not to let him overtake his daughter, might not reſolve to make him amends ſome other way, I will not aſſert; but he had hardly uttered the words juſt before commemorated, and two or three oaths at their heels, when a pack of hounds began to open their melodious throats at a ſmall diſtance from them, which the 'ſquire's horſe and his rider both perceiving, both immediately pricked up their ears, and the ſquire crying, 'She's gone, ſhe's gone! Damn me if ſhe is not gone!' inſtantly clapped ſpurs to the beaſt, who little needed it, having indeed the ſame inclination with his maſter; and now the whole company croſſing into a corn field, rode directly towards the hounds, with much hallowing and hooping, while the poor parſon, bleſſing himſelf, brought up the rear.

Thus fable reports that the fair Grimalkin, whom Venus, at the deſire of a paſſionate lover, converted from a cat into a fine woman, no ſooner perceived a mouſe, than mindful of her former ſport, and ſtill retaining her priſtine nature, ſhe leapt from the bed of her huſband to purſue the little animal.

What are we to underſtand by this? Not that the bride was diſpleaſed with the embraces of her amorous bridegroom: for though ſome have remarked that cats are ſubject to ingratitude; yet women and cats too will be pleaſed and purr on certain occaſions. The

Digitized by Google

truth is, as the ſagacious Sir Roger L'Eſtrange obſerves, in his deep reflections, that, 'if we ſhut nature out at the door, ſhe will come in at the window; 'and that puſs, though a Madam, will be a mouſer 'ſtill.' In the ſame manner we are not to arraign the ſquire of any want of love for his daughter; for in reality he had a great deal: we are only to conſider, that he was a ſquire and a ſportſman, and then we may apply the fable to him, and the judicious reflections likewiſe.

The hounds ran very hard, as it is called, and the ſquire purſued over hedge and ditch with all his uſual vociferation and alacrity, and with all his uſual pleaſure; nor did the thoughts of Sophia ever once intrude themſelves to allay the ſatisfaction he enjoyed in the chace, which he ſaid was one of the fineſt he ever ſaw, and which he ſwore was very well worth going fifty miles for. As the ſquire forgot his daughter, the ſervants, we may eaſily believe, forgot their miſtreſs; and the parſon, after having expreſſed much aſtoniſhment in Latin to himſelf, at length likewiſe abandoned all further thoughts of the young lady, and, jogging on at a diſtance behind, began to meditate a portion of doctrine for the enſuing Sunday.

The 'ſquire who owned the hounds was highly pleaſed with the arrival of his brother ſquire and ſportſman; for all men approve merit in their own way, and no man was more expert in the field than Mr Weſtern, nor did any other better know how to encourage the dogs with his voice, and to animate the hunt with his holla.

Sportſmen, in the warmth of a chace, are too much engaged to attend to any manner of ceremony; nay, even to the offices of humanity: for, if any of them meet with an accident by tumbling into a ditch, or into a river, the reſt paſs on regardleſs, and generally leave him to his fate: during this time, therefore, the two ſquires, though often cloſe to each other, interchanged not a ſingle word. The maſter of the hunt, however, often ſaw and approved the great judgment of the ſtranger in drawing the dogs when they were at a fault, and hence conceived a very high opinion

Digitized by Google

opinion of his underſtanding, as the number of his attendants inſpired no ſmall reverence to his quality. As ſoon therefore as the ſport was ended by the death of the little animal which had occaſioned it, the two ſquires met, and, in all ſquire-like greeting, ſaluted each other.

The converſation was entertaining enough, and what we may perhaps relate in an appendix, or on ſome other occaſion; but, as it nowiſe concerns this hiſtory, we cannot prevail on ourſelves to give it a place here. It concluded with a ſecond chace, and that with an invitation to dinner. This, being accepted, was followed by a hearty bout of drinking, which ended in as hearty a nap on the part of ſquire Weſtern.

Our ſquire was by no means a match either for his hoſt, or for parſon Supple, at his cups that evening; for which the violent fatigue of mind as well as body, that he had undergone, may very well account, without the leaſt derogation from his honour. He was indeed, according to the vulgar phraſe, whiſtled drunk; for, before he had ſwallowed the third bottle, he became ſo entirely overpowered, that, though he was not carried off to bed till long after, the parſon conſidered him as abſent, and, having acquainted the other ſquire with all relating to Sophia, he obtained his promiſe of ſeconding thoſe arguments, which he intended to urge the next morning for Mr Weſtern's return.

No ſooner therefore had the good ſquire ſhaken off his evening, and began to call for his morning draught, and to ſummon his horſes in order to renew his purſuit, than Mr Supple began his diſſuaſives, which the hoſt ſo ſtrongly ſeconded, that they at length prevailed, and Mr Weſtern agreed to return home, being principally moved by one argument, *viz.* that he knew not which way to go, and might probably be riding farther from his daughter inſtead of towards her. He then took leave of his brother ſportſman, and, expreſſing great joy that the froſt was broken, (which might perhaps be no ſmall motive to his haſtening home), ſet forward, or rather backwards, for Somerſet-

Digitized by Google

Somersetshire; but not before he had first dispatched part of his retinue in quest of his daughter, after whom he likewise sent a volley of the most bitter execrations which he could invent.

CHAP. III.

The departure of Jones from Upton, with what past between him and Partridge on the road.

AT length we are once more come to our hero; and, to say truth, we have been obliged to part with him so long, that, considering the condition in which we left him, I apprehend many of our readers have concluded we intended to abandon him for ever; he being at present in that situation in which prudent people usually desist from enquiring any farther after their friends, lest they should be shocked by hearing such friends had hanged themselves.

But, in reality, if we have not all the virtues, I will boldly say, neither have we all the vices of a prudent character; and, though it is not easy to conceive circumstances much more miserable than those of poor Jones at present, we shall return to him, and attend upon him with the same diligence, as if he was wantoning in the brightest beams of fortune.

Mr Jones then, and his companion Partridge, left the inn a few minutes after the departure of squire Western, and pursued the same road on foot; for the hostler told them, that no horses were by any means to be at that time procured at Upton. On they marched with heavy hearts; for though their disquiet proceeded from very different reasons, yet displeased they were both; and, if Jones sighed bitterly, Partridge grunted altogether as sadly at every step.

When they came to the cross-roads where the squire had stopt to take counsel, Jones stopt likewise, and, turning to Partridge, asked his opinion which track they should pursue. 'Ah, Sir,' answered Partridge, 'I wish your honour would follow my advice.' 'Why 'should I not?' replied Jones, 'for it is now indif-'ferent to me whither I go, or what becomes of me.'

'My

'My advice then,' said Partridge, 'is, that you immediately face about and return home: for who, 'that hath such a home to return to as your honour, 'would travel thus about the country like a vagabond? I ask pardon, *sed vox ea sola reperta est.*

'Alas!' cries Jones, 'I have no home to return 'to;----but, if my friend, my father would receive 'me, could I bear the country from which Sophia is 'flown?---Cruel Sophia! Cruel! No. Let me blame 'myself---No, let me blame thee. D---nation seize 'thee, fool, blockhead! thou hast undone me, and 'I will tear thy soul from thy body.'---- At which words he laid violent hands on the collar of poor Partridge, and shook him more heartily than an ague fit, or his own fears had ever done before.

Partridge fell trembling on his knees, and begged for mercy, vowing he had meant no harm---when Jones, after staring wildly on him for a moment, quitted his hold, and discharged a rage on himself, that, had it fallen on the other, would certainly have put an end to his being, which indeed the very apprehension of it had almost effected.

We would bestow some pains here in minutely describing all the mad pranks which Jones played on this occasion, could we be well assured that the reader would take the same pains in perusing them; but as we are apprehensive that, after all the labour which we should employ in painting this scene, the said reader would be very apt to skip it entirely over, we have saved ourselves that trouble. To say the truth, we have, from this reason alone, often done great violence to the luxuriance of our genius, and have left many excellent descriptions out of our work, which would otherwise have been in it. And this suspicion, to be honest, arises, as is generally the case, from our own wicked heart; for we have, ourselves, been very often most horribly given to jumping, as we have run through the pages of volumnious historians.

Suffice it then simply to say, that Jones, after having played the part of a madman for many minutes, came by degrees to himself; which no sooner happened, than, turning to Partridge, he very earnestly begged

Digitized by Google

begged his pardon for the attack he had made on him in the violence of his paſſion; but concluded, by deſiring him never to mention his return again; for he was reſolved never to ſee that country any more.

Partridge eaſily forgave, and faithfully promiſed to obey the injunction now laid upon him. And then Jones very briſkly cried out: 'Since it is abſolutely 'impoſſible for me to purſue any farther the ſteps of 'my angel—I will purſue thoſe of glory. Come on, 'my brave lad, now for the army:—It is a glorious 'cauſe, and I would willingly ſacrifice my life in it, 'even though it was worth my preſerving.' And ſo ſaying, he immediately ſtruck into a different road from that which the ſquire had taken, and, by mere chance, purſued the very ſame through which Sophia had before paſſed.

Our travellers now marched a full mile, without ſpeaking a ſyllable to each other, though Jones indeed muttered many things to himſelf. As to Partridge, he was profoundly ſilent; for he was not perhaps perfectly recovered from his former fright; beſides, he had apprehenſions of provoking his friend to a ſecond fit of wrath; eſpecially as he now began to entertain a conceit, which may not perhaps create any great wonder in the reader. In ſhort, he began now to ſuſpect, that Jones was abſolutely out of his ſenſes.

At length Jones, being weary of ſoliloquy, addreſſed himſelf to his companion, and blamed him for his taciturnity: for which the poor man very honeſtly accounted, from his fear of giving offence. And now, this fear being pretty well removed by the moſt abſolute promiſes of indemnity, Partridge again took the bridle from his tongue; which perhaps rejoiced no leſs at regaining its liberty, than a young colt, when the bridle is ſlipt from his neck, and he is turned looſe into the paſtures.

As Partridge was inhibited from that topic which would at firſt have ſuggeſted itſelf, he fell upon that which was next uppermoſt in his mind, namely, the Man of the Hill. 'Certainly, Sir,' ſays he, 'that 'could

Digitized by Google

'could never be a man, who dreſſes himſelf, and 'lives after ſuch a ſtrange manner, and ſo unlike 'other folks. Beſides, his diet, as the old woman 'told me, is chiefly upon herbs, which is a fitter food 'for a horſe than a Chriſtian: nay, landlord at Upton 'ſays that the neighbours thereabouts have very fear-'ful notions about him. It runs ſtrangely in my head, 'that it muſt have been ſome ſpirit, who perhaps 'might be ſent to forewarn us: and who knows, but 'all that matter which he told us, of his going to 'fight, and of his being taken priſoner, and of the 'great danger he was in of being hanged, might be 'intended as a warning to us, conſidering what we 'are going about? beſides, I dreamt of nothing all 'laſt night, but of fighting; and methought the 'blood ran out of my noſe, as liquor out of a tap. In-'deed, Sir, *infandum, regina, jubes renovare dolorem.*

'Thy ſtory, Partridge,' anſwered Jones, 'is almoſt 'as ill applied as thy Latin. Nothing can be more 'likely to happen than death to men who go into bat-'tle. Perhaps we ſhall both fall in it,—and what 'then?' 'What then!' replied Partridge: 'Why 'then there is an end of us, is there not? when I am 'gone, all is over with me. What matters the cauſe 'to me, or who gets the victory, if I am killed? I 'ſhall never enjoy any advantage from it. What are 'all the ringing of bells, and bonfires, to one that is 'ſix foot under ground? there will be an end of poor 'Partridge.' 'And an end of poor Partridge,' cries Jones, 'there muſt be one time or other. If you love 'Latin, I will repeat you ſome fine lines out of Ho-'race, which would inſpire courage into a coward.

Dulce et decorum eſt pro patria mori.
Mors & fugacem perſequitur virum:
Nec parcit imbellis juventæ
Poplitibus, timidoque tergo.

'I wiſh you would conſtrue them,' cries Partridge; 'for Horace is a hard author, and I cannot under-'ſtand as you repeat them.'

'I will repeat you a bad imitation, or rather para-'phraſe

'phraſe of my own,' ſaid Jones; 'for I am but an 'indifferent poet.

'Who would not die in his dear country's cauſe?
'Since, if baſe fear his daſtard ſtep withdraws,
'From death he cannot fly;—One common grave
'Receives, at laſt, the coward and the brave.'

'That's very certain,' cries Partridge. 'Ay, ſure, '*Mors omnibus communis*: but there is a great difference 'between dying in one's bed a great many years 'hence, like a good Chriſtian, with all our friends 'crying about us, and being ſhot to-day or to-mor-'row, like a mad-dog; or perhaps hacked in twenty 'pieces with a ſword, and that too before we have 'repented of all our ſins. O Lord, have mercy upon 'us! to be ſure, the ſoldiers are a wicked kind of 'people, I never loved to have any thing to do with 'them, I could hardly bring myſelf ever to look up-'on them as Chriſtians. There is nothing but curſing 'and ſwearing among them. I wiſh your honour 'would repent: I heartily wiſh you would repent, be-'fore it is too late, and not think of going among 'them—Evil communication corrupts good man-'ners. That is my principal reaſon. For, as for that 'matter, I am no more afraid than another man, not 'I, as to matter of that. I know all human fleſh muſt 'die; but yet a man may live many years for all that. 'Why, I am a middle-aged man now, and yet I may 'live a great number of years. I have read of ſeveral 'who have lived to be above a hundred, and ſome 'a great deal above a hundred. Not that I hope, I 'mean that I promiſe myſelf, to live to any ſuch age 'as that neither.—But, if it be only to eighty or 'ninety, Heaven be praiſed, that is a great ways off 'yet; and I am not afraid of dying then, no more 'than another man: but ſurely, to tempt death be-'fore a man's time is come, ſeems to me downright 'wickedneſs and preſumption. Beſides, if it was to 'do any good indeed; but let the cauſe be what it 'will, what mighty matter of good can two people 'do? and, for my part, I underſtand nothing of it.

Digitized by Google

'I never fired off a gun above ten times in my life; 'and then it was not charged with bullets. And for 'the ſword, I never learned to fence, and know no- 'thing of the matter. And then there are thoſe can- 'nons, which certainly it muſt be thought the higheſt 'preſumption to go in the way of: and nobody but 'a madman—I aſk pardon; upon my ſoul, I meant 'no harm; I beg I may not throw your honour into 'another paſſion.'

'Be under no apprehenſion, Partridge,' cries Jones; 'I am now ſo well convinced of thy cowardice, that 'thou couldſt not provoke me on any account.' 'Your 'honour,' anſwered he, 'may call me a coward, or 'any thing elſe you pleaſe. If loving to ſleep in a 'whole ſkin makes a man a coward, *non immunes ab 'illes malis ſumus.* I never read in my grammar, 'that a man can't be a good man without fighting. '*Vir bonus eſt quis? Qui conſulta patrum, qui leges 'juraque ſervat.* Not a word of fighting; and I am 'ſure the ſcripture is ſo much againſt it, that a man 'ſhall never perſuade me he is a good Chriſtian, while 'he ſheds Chriſtian blood.'

CHAP. IV.

The adventure of a beggar man.

JUST as Partridge had uttered that good and pious doctrine, with which the laſt chapter concluded, they arrived at another croſs-way, when a lame fellow in rags aſked them for alms; upon which Partridge gave him a ſevere rebuke, ſaying, 'Every pariſh 'ought to keep their own poor.' Jones then fell a- laughing, and aſked Partridge, 'if he was not a- 'ſhamed, with ſo much charity in his mouth, to 'have no charity in his heart. Your religion,' ſays he, 'ſerves you only for an excuſe for your faults, 'but is no incentive to your virtue. Can any man, 'who is really a Chriſtian, abſtain from relieving one 'of his brethren in ſuch a miſerable condition?' And at the ſame time, putting his hand in his pocket, he gave the poor object a ſhilling.

Digitized by Google

'Master,' cries the fellow, after thanking him, 'I 'have a curious thing here in my pocket, which I 'found about two miles off, if your worship will please 'to buy it. I should not venture to pull it out to e- 'very one; but, as you are so good a gentleman, 'and so kind to the poor, you won't suspect a man 'of being a thief only because he is poor.' He then pulled out a little gilt pocket-book, and delivered it into the hand of Jones.

Jones presently opened it, and (guess, reader, what he felt), saw in the first page the words *Sophia Western*, written by her own fair hand. He no sooner read the name than he pressed it close to his lips: nor could he avoid falling into some very frantic raptures, notwithstanding his company; but perhaps these very raptures made him forget he was not alone.

While Jones was kissing and mumbling the book, as if he had an excellent brown buttered crust in his mouth, or as if he had really been a bookworm, or an author, who had nothing to eat but his own works, a piece of paper fell from its leaves to the ground, which Partridge took up and delivered to Jones, who presently perceived it to be a bank-bill. It was indeed the very bill which Western had given his daughter the night before her departure; and a Jew would have jumped to purchase it at five shillings less than 100 l.

The eyes of Partridge sparkled at this news, which Jones now proclaimed aloud; and so did (though with somewhat a different aspect), those of the poor fellow who had found the book; and who (I hope from a principle of honesty), had never opened it: but we should not deal honestly by the reader, if we omitted to inform him of a circumstance, which may be here a little material, viz. that the fellow could not read.

Jones, who had felt nothing but pure joy and transport from the finding the book, was affected with a mixture of concern at this new discovery; for his imagination instantly suggested to him, that the owner of the bill might possibly want it, before he should be able to convey it to her. He then acquainted the finder,

Digitized by Google

finder, that he knew the lady to whom the book belonged, and would endeavour to find her out as soon as possible, and return it to her.

The pocket-book was a late present from Mrs Western to her niece: it had cost five and twenty shillings, having been bought of a celebrated toyman; but the real value of the silver, which it contained in its clasp, was about 18 d. and that price the said toyman, as it was altogether as good as when it first issued from his shop, would now have given for it. A prudent person would, however, have taken proper advantage of the ignorance of this fellow, and would not have offered more than a shilling, or perhaps sixpence for it; nay, some perhaps would have given nothing, and left the fellow to his action of trover, which some learned serjeants may doubt whether he could, under these circumstances, have maintained.

Jones, on the contrary, whose character was on the outside of generosity, and may perhaps not very unjustly have been suspected of extravagance, without any hesitation gave a guinea in exchange for the book. The poor man, who had not for a long time before been possessed of so much treasure, gave Mr Jones a thousand thanks, and discovered little less transport in his muscles, than Jones had before shewn, when he had first read the name of Sophia Western.

The fellow very readily agreed to attend our travellers to the place where he had found the pocket-book. Together, therefore, they proceeded directly thither, but not so fast as Mr Jones desired; for his guide unfortunately happened to be lame, and could not possibly travel faster than a mile an hour. As this place, therefore, was at about three miles distance, though the fellow had said otherwise, the reader need not be acquainted how long they were in walking it.

Jones opened the book a hundred times during their walk, kissed it as often, talked much to himself, and very little to his companions. At all which the guide expressed some signs of astonishment to Partridge, who more than once shook his head, and cry'd, 'Poor gentleman! *orandum est ut sit mens sana in corpore sano.*'

Digitized by Google

At length they arrived at the very ſpot where Sophia unhappily dropt the pocket-book, and where the fellow had as happily found it. Here Jones offered to take leave of his guide, and to improve his pace; but the fellow, in whom that violent ſurprize and joy, which the firſt receipt of the guinea had occaſioned, was now conſiderably abated, and who had now had ſufficient time to recollect himſelf, put on a diſcontented look, and, ſcratching his head, ſaid, 'He 'hoped his worſhip would give him ſomething more. 'Your worſhip,' ſaid he, 'will, I hope, take it into 'your conſideration, that if I had not been honeſt I 'might have kept the whole.' And indeed this the reader muſt confeſs to have been true. 'If the paper 'there,' ſaid he, 'be worth 100l. I am ſure the find-'ing it deſerves more than a guinea. Beſides, ſup-'poſe your worſhip ſhould never ſee the lady, nor give 'it her—and though your worſhip looks and talks 'very much like a gentleman, yet I have only your 'worſhip's bare word: and certainly, if the right 'owner ben't to be found, it all belongs to the firſt 'finder. I hope your worſhip will conſider of all theſe 'matters. I am but a poor man, and therefore don't 'deſire to have all; but it is but reaſonable I ſhould 'have my ſhare. Your worſhip looks like a good 'man, and I hope will conſider my honeſty; for I 'might have kept every farthing, and nobody ever 'the wiſer.' 'I promiſe thee, upon my honour,' cries Jones, 'that I know the right owner, and will 'reſtore it to her.' 'Nay, your worſhip,' anſwered the fellow, 'may do as you pleaſe as to that: if you 'will but give me my ſhare, that is, one half of the 'money, your honour may keep the reſt yourſelf if 'you pleaſe;' and concluding with ſwearing by a very vehement oath, 'that he would never mention a ſyl-'lable of it to any man living.'

'Look'ee, friend,' cries Jones, 'the right owner 'ſhall certainly have again all that ſhe loſt; and, as 'for any further gratuity, I really cannot give it you 'at preſent; but let me know your name, and where 'you live, and it is more than poſſible, you may here-'after

Digitized by Google

'after have further reaſon to rejoice at this morning's 'adventure.'

'I don't know what you mean by venture,' cries the fellow; 'it ſeems, I muſt venture whether you will 'return the lady her money or no: but I hope your 'worſhip will conſider.' 'Come come,' ſays Partridge, 'tell his honour your name, and where you 'may be found; I warrant you will never repent having put the money into his hands.' The fellow, ſeeing no hopes of recovering the poſſeſſion of the pocket-book, at laſt complied in giving his name and place of abode, which Jones writ upon a piece of paper with the pencil of Sophia; and then, placing the paper in the ſame page where ſhe had writ her name, he cried out, 'There, friend, you are the 'happieſt man alive; I have joined your name to 'that of an angel.' 'I don't know any thing about 'angels,' anſwered the fellow; 'but I wiſh you 'would give me a little more money, or elſe return 'me the pocket-book.' Partridge now waxed wroth: he called the poor cripple by ſeveral vile and opprobrious names, and was abſolutely proceeding to beat him, but Jones would not ſuffer any ſuch thing; and now telling the fellow he would certainly find ſome opportunity of ſerving him, Mr Jones departed as faſt as his heels would carry him; and Partridge, into whom the thoughts of the hundred pound had infuſed new ſpirits, followed his leader; while the man, who was obliged to ſtay behind, fell to curſing them both as well as his parents; 'for had they,' ſays he, 'ſent me to charity-ſchool to learn to write and read 'and caſt account, I ſhould have known the value of 'theſe matters as well as other people.'

CHAP. V.

Containing more adventures which Mr Jones and his companion met on the road.

OUR travellers now walked ſo faſt, that they had very little time or breath for converſation; Jones meditating all the way on Sophia, and Partridge on the bank-bill, which, though it gave him ſome pleaſure, cauſed him at the ſame time to repine at fortune, which

Digitized by Google

in all his walks had never given him ſuch an opportunity of ſhewing his honeſty. They had proceeded above three miles, when Partridge, being unable any longer to keep up with Jones, called to him, and begged him a little to ſlacken his pace; with this he was the more ready to comply as he had for ſome time loſt the footſteps of the horſes, which the thaw had enabled him to trace for ſeveral miles, and he was now upon a wide common where were ſeveral roads.

He here therefore ſtopt to conſider which of theſe roads he ſhould purſue, when on a ſudden they heard the noiſe of a drum that ſeemed at no great diſtance. This ſound preſently alarmed the fears of Partridge, and he cried out, 'Lord have mercy upon us all; they 'are certainly a coming!' 'Who is coming?' cries Jones, for fear had long ſince given place to ſofter ideas in his mind; and ſince his adventure with the lame man, he had been totally intent on purſuing Sophia, without entertaining one thought of an enemy 'Who!' cries Partridge, 'why the rebels: but why ſhould I 'call them rebels? they may be very honeſt gentlemen, 'for any thing I know to the contrary. The devil take 'him that affronts them, I ſay: I am ſure, if they have 'nothing to ſay to me, I will have nothing to ſay to 'them but in a civil way. For Heaven's ſake, Sir, 'don't affront them if they ſhould come, and perhaps 'they may do us no harm; but would it not be the 'wiſer way to creep into ſome of yonder buſhes till they 'are gone by? What can two unarmed men do perhaps againſt fifty thouſand? Certainly nobody but 'a madman; I hope your honour is not offended; 'but certainly no man who hath *mens ſana in corpore* '*ſano*.'——Here Jones interrupted this torrent of eloquence, which fear had inſpired, ſaying, 'That by the 'drum he perceived they were near ſome town.' He then made directly towards the place whence the noiſe proceeded, bidding Partridge, 'take courage, for that 'he would lead him into no danger;' and adding, 'it 'was impoſſible the rebels ſhould be ſo near.'

Partridge was a little comforted with this laſt aſſurance; and, though he would more gladly have gone the contrary way, he followed his leader, his heart beating

Digitized by Google

beating time, but not after the manner of heroes, to the music of the drum, which ceased not till they had traversed the common, and were come into a narrow lane.

And now Partridge, who kept even pace with Jones, discovered something painted flying in the air, a very few yards before him; which fancying to be the colours of the enemy, he fell a bellowing, 'O Lord, Sir, here 'they are; there is the crown and coffin. Oh Lord! 'I never saw any thing so terrible; and we are within gun-shot of them already.'

Jones no sooner looked up than he plainly perceived what it was which Partridge had thus mistaken. 'Partridge,' says he, 'I fancy you will be able to engage 'this whole army yourself; for by the colours I guess 'what the drum was which we heard before, and 'which beats up for recruits to a puppet-show.'

'A puppet-show!' answered Partridge, with most eager transport. 'And is it really no more than that? 'I love a puppet show of all the pastimes upon earth. 'Do, good Sir, let us tarry and see it. Besides, I am 'quite famished to death; for it is now almost dark, 'and I have not ate a morsel since three o'clock in 'the morning.'

They now arrived at an inn, or indeed an alehouse, where Jones was prevailed upon to stop, the rather, as he had no longer any assurance of being in the road he desired. They walked both directly into the kitchen, where Jones began to enquire if no ladies had passed that way in the morning, and Partridge as eagerly examined into the state of their provisions; and indeed his enquiry met with the better success; for Jones could not hear news of Sophia; but Partridge, to his great satisfaction, found good reason to expect very shortly the agreeable sight of an excellent smoking dish of eggs and bacon.

In strong and healthy constitutions love hath a very different effect from what it causes in the puny part of the species. In the latter it generally destroys all that appetite which tends towards the conservation of the individual: but in the former, though it often induces forgetfulness, and a neglect of food, as well as of every thing

Digitized by Google

thing elſe; yet place a good piece of well-powdered buttock before a hungry lover, and he ſeldom fails very handſomely to play his part. Thus it happened in the preſent caſe; for though Jones perhaps wanted a prompter, and might have travelled much farther, had he been alone, with an empty ſtomach; yet no ſooner did he ſit down to the bacon and eggs, than he fell to as heartily and voraciouſly as Partridge himſelf.

Before our travellers had finiſhed their dinner, night came on, and as the moon was now paſt the full, it was extremely dark. Partridge therefore prevailed on Jones to ſtay and ſee the puppet-ſhow, which was juſt going to begin, and to which they were very eagerly invited by the maſter of the ſaid ſhow, who declared that his figures were the fineſt which the world had ever produced, and that they had given great ſatisfaction to all the quality in every town in England.

The puppet-ſhow was performed with great regularity and decency. It was called the fine and ſerious part of the Provoked Huſband; and it was indeed a very grave and ſolemn entertainment, without any low wit or humour, or jeſts; or, to do it no more than juſtice, without any thing which could provoke a laugh. The audience were all highly pleaſed. A grave matron told the maſter ſhe would bring her two daughters the next night, as he did not ſhew any ſtuff; and an attorney's clerk and an exciſeman, both declared, that the characters of lord and lady Townley were well preſerved, and highly in nature. Partridge likewiſe concurred with this opinion.

The maſter was ſo highly elated with theſe encomiums, that he could not refrain from adding ſome more of his own. He ſaid, 'The preſent age was not improved in any thing ſo much as in their puppet-ſhows; which by throwing out Punch and his wife Joan, and ſuch idle trumpery, were at laſt brought to be a rational entertainment. I remember,' ſaid he, 'when I firſt took to the buſineſs, there was a great deal of low ſtuff that did very well to make folks laugh; but was never calculated to improve the morals of young people; which certainly ought to be principally aimed at in every puppet-ſhow: for why may not good

and

Digitized by Google

'and instructive lessons be conveyed this way, as well 'as any other? My figures are as big as the life, and 'they represent the life in every particular: and I 'question not but people rise from my little drama 'as much improved as they do from the great.' 'I 'would by no means degrade the ingenuity of your 'profession,' answered Jones, 'but I should have been 'glad to have seen my old acquaintance master Punch 'for all that; and so far from improving, I think, 'by leaving out him and his merry wife Joan, you 'have spoiled your puppet show.'

The dancer of wires conceived an immediate and high contempt for Jones, from these words; and, with much disdain in his countenance, he replied, 'Very probably, Sir, that may be your opinion; but 'I have the satisfaction to know the best judges differ 'from you, and it is impossible to please every taste. 'I confess, indeed, some of the quality at Bath, two 'or three years ago, wanted mightily to bring Punch 'again upon the stage. I believe I lost some money 'for not agreeing to it; but, let others do as they 'will, a little matter shall never bribe me to degrade 'my own profession, nor will I ever willingly consent 'to the spoiling the decency and regularity of my 'stage, by introducing any such low stuff upon it.'

'Right, friend,' cries the clerk, 'you are very 'right. Always avoid what is low. There are several 'of my acquaintance in London, who are resolved 'to drive every thing which is low from the stage.' 'Nothing can be more proper,' cries the excisemen, pulling his pipe from his mouth. 'I remember,' added he, '(for then I lived with my lord), I was in 'the footman's gallery, the night when this play of 'the Provoked Husband was acted first. There was 'a great deal of low stuff in it about a country gen-'tleman come up to town to stand for parliament-'man; and there they brought a parcel of his ser-'vants upon the stage, his coachman I remember 'particularly; but the gentlemen in our gallery 'could not bear any thing so low, and they damned 'it. I observe, friend, you have left all that mat-'ter out, and you are to be commended for it.'

'Nay,

Digitized by Google

'Nay, gentlemen,' cries Jones, 'I can never 'maintain my opinion againſt ſo many; indeed, if the 'generality of his audience diſlike him, the learned 'gentleman, who conducts the ſhow, may have done 'very right in diſmiſſing Punch from his ſervice.'

The maſter of the ſhow then began a ſecond harangue, and ſaid much of the great force of example, and how much the inferior part of mankind would be deterred from vice, by obſerving how odious it was in their ſuperiors; when he was unluckily interrupted by an incident, which, though perhaps we might have omitted it at another time, we cannot help relating at preſent, but not in this chapter.

CHAP. VI.

From which it may be inferred, that the beſt things are liable to be miſunderſtood and miſinterpreted.

A VIOLENT uproar now aroſe in the entry, where my landlady was well cuffing her maid both with her fiſt and tongue. She had indeed miſſed the wench from her employment, and after a little ſearch, had found her on the puppet-ſhow ſtage in company with the Merry Andrew, and in a ſituation not very proper to be deſcribed.

Though Grace (for that was her name), had forfeited all title to modeſty, yet had ſhe not impudence enough to deny a fact in which ſhe was actually ſurpriſed; ſhe therefore took another turn, and attempted to mitigate the offence. 'Why do you beat me in 'this manner, miſtreſs?' cries the wench. 'If you 'don't like my doings, you may turn me away. If 'I am a w——e,' (for the other had liberally beſtowed that appellation on her), 'my bettters are ſo 'as well as I! What was the fine lady in the pup'pet-ſhow juſt now? I ſuppoſe ſhe did not lie all 'night out from her huſband for nothing.'

The landlady now burſt into the kitchen, and fell foul on both her huſband and the poor puppet-mover. 'Here, huſband,' ſays ſhe, 'you ſee the conſequence 'of harbouring theſe people in your houſe. If one 'doth

Digitized by Google

'doth draw a little drink the more for them, one is 'hardly made amends for the litter they make; and 'then to have one's houſe made a bawdy-houſe of by 'ſuch louſy vermin. In ſhort, I deſire you would be 'gone to-morrow morning; for I will tolerate no more 'ſuch doings. It is only the way to teach our ſervants 'idleneſs and nonſenſe; for to be ſure nothing better 'can be learned by ſuch idle ſhows as theſe. I re-'member when puppet-ſhows were made of good 'ſcripture ſtories, as Jephtha's raſh vow, and ſuch 'good things, and when wicked people were carried 'away by the devil. There was ſome ſenſe in thoſe 'matters; but, as the parſon told us laſt Sunday, no-'body believes in the devil now-a-days; and here you 'bring about a parcel of puppets dreſſed up like lords 'and ladies, only to turn the heads of poor country-'wenches; and when their heads are once turned 'topſy turvy, no wonder every thing elſe is ſo.'

Virgil, I think, tells us, that when the mob are aſſembled in a riotous and tumultuous manner, and all ſorts of miſſile weapons fly about, if a man of gravity and authority appears amongſt them, the tumult is preſently appeaſed, and the mob, which, when collected into one body, may be well compared to an aſs, erect their long ears at the grave man's diſcourſe.

On the contrary, when a ſet of grave men and philoſophers are diſputing; when wiſdom herſelf may in a manner be conſidered as preſent, and adminiſtring arguments to the diſputants; ſhould a tumult ariſe among the mob, or ſhould one ſcold, who is herſelf equal in noiſe to a mighty mob, appear among the ſaid philoſophers; their diſputes ceaſe in a moment, wiſdom no longer performs her miniſterial office, and the attention of every one is immediately attracted by the ſcold alone.

Thus the uproar aforeſaid, and the arrival of the landlady, ſilenced the maſter of the puppet-ſhow, and put a ſpeedy and final end to that grave and ſolemn harangue, of which we have given the reader a ſufficient taſte already. Nothing indeed could have happened ſo very inopportune as this accident; the moſt wanton malice of fortune could not have con-

Digitized by Google

trived such another stratagem to confound the poor fellow, while he was so triumphantly descanting on the good morals inculcated by his exhibitions. His mouth was now as effectually stopt, as that of a quack must be, if, in the midst of a declamation on the great virtues of his pills and powders, the corpse of one of his martyrs should be brought forth, and deposited before the stage, as a testimony of his skill.

Instead, therefore, of answering my landlady, the puppet-show-man ran out to punish his Merry Andrew; and now the moon beginning to put forth her silver light, as the poets call it, (though she looked at that time more like a piece of copper), Jones called for his reckoning, and ordered Partridge, whom my landlady had just awaked from a profound nap, to prepare for his journey; but Partridge, having lately carried two points, as my reader hath seen before was emboldened to attempt a third, which was to prevail with Jones to take up a lodging that evening in the house where he then was. He introduced this with an affected surprize at the intention which Mr Jones declared of removing; and after urging many excellent arguments against it, he at last insisted strongly, that it could be to no manner of purpose whatever; for that, unless Jones knew which way the lady was gone, every step he took might very possibly lead him the farther from her; 'for, you find, Sir,' said he, 'by 'all the people in the house, that she is not gone this 'way. How much better, therefore, would it be to 'stay till the morning, when we may expect to meet 'with somebody to enquire of?'

This last argument had indeed some effect on Jones; and, while he was weighing it, the landlord threw all the rhetoric of which he was master, into the same scale. 'Sure, Sir,' said he, 'your servant gives you 'most excellent advice; for who would travel by 'night at this time of the year?' He then began in the usual style to trumpet forth the excellent accommodation which his house afforded; and my landlady likewise opened on the occasion — But not to detain the reader with what is common to every host and hostess, it is sufficient to tell him, Jones was at last prevailed on to

Digitized by Google

to ſtay and refreſh himſelf with a few hours reſt, which indeed he very much wanted; for he had hardly ſhut his eyes ſince he had left the inn, where the accident of the broken head had happened.

As ſoon as Jones had taken a reſolution to proceed no farther that night, he preſently retired to reſt with his two bed-fellows, the pocket-book and the muff; but Partridge, who at ſeveral times had refreſhed himſelf with ſeveral naps, was more inclined to eating than to ſleeping, and more to drinking than to either.

And now the ſtorm which Grace had raiſed being at an end, and my landlady being again reconciled to the puppet-man, who on his ſide forgave the indecent reflections which the good woman in her paſſion had caſt on his performances, a face of perfect peace and tranquillity reigned in the kitchen; where ſat aſſembled round the fire, the landlord and landlady of the houſe, the maſter of the puppet-ſhow, the attorney's clerk, the exciſeman, and the ingenious Mr Partridge; in which company paſt the agreeable converſation which will be found in the next chapter.

CHAP. VII.

Containing a remark or two of our own, and many more of the good company aſſembled in the kitchen.

THOUGH the pride of Partridge did not ſubmit to acknowledge himſelf a ſervant, yet he condeſcended in moſt particulars to imitate the manners of that rank. One inſtance of this was, his greatly magnifying the fortune of his companion, as he called Jones: ſuch is a general cuſtom with all ſervants among ſtrangers, as none of them would willingly be thought the attendant on a beggar; for the higher the ſituation of the maſter is, the higher conſequently is that of the man in his own opinion: the truth of which obſervation appears from the behaviour of all the footmen of the nobility.

But though title and fortune communicate a ſplendor all around them, and the footmen of men of quality and of eſtate think themſelves entitled to a part

Digitized by Google

of that reſpect which is paid to the quality and eſtates of their maſters; it is clearly otherwiſe with regard to virtue and underſtanding. Theſe advantages are ſtrictly perſonal, and ſwallow themſelves all the reſpect which is paid to them. To ſay the truth, this is ſo very little, that they cannot well afford to let any others partake with them. As theſe therefore reflect no honour on the domeſtic, ſo neither is he at all diſhonoured by the moſt deplorable want of both in his maſter. Indeed it is otherwiſe in the want of what is called *virtue* in a miſtreſs, the conſequence of which we have before ſeen; for in this diſhonour there is a kind of contagion, which, like that of poverty, communicates itſelf to all who approach it.

Now for theſe reaſons we are not to wonder, that ſervants (I mean among the men only), ſhould have ſo great regard for the reputation of the wealth of their maſters, and little or none at all for their character in other points; and that though they would be aſhamed to be the footmen of a beggar, they are not ſo to attend upon a rogue or a blockhead, and do conſequently make no ſcruple to ſpread the fame of the iniquities and follies of their ſaid maſters as far as poſſible, and this often with great humour and merriment. In reality, a footman is often a wit, as well as a beau, at the expence of the gentleman whoſe livery he wears.

After Partridge, therefore, had enlarged greatly on the vaſt fortune to which Mr Jones was heir, he very freely communicated an apprehenſion which he had begun to conceive the day before, and for which, as we hinted at that very time, the behaviour of Jones ſeemed to have furniſhed a ſufficient foundation. In ſhort, he was now pretty well confirmed in an opinion, that his maſter was out of his wits, with which opinion he very bluntly acquainted the good company round the fire.

With this ſentiment the puppet-ſhow man immediately coincided. 'I own,' ſaid he, 'the gentleman 'ſurpriſed me very much, when he talked ſo abſurdly about puppet-ſhows. It is indeed hardly to be 'conceived that any man in his ſenſes ſhould be ſo much

Digitized by Google

'much miſtaken; what you ſay now accounts very 'well for all his monſtrous notions. Poor gentleman! 'I am heartily concerned for him; indeed he hath a 'ſtrange wildneſs about his eyes, which I took notice 'of before, though I did not mention it.'

The landlord agreed with this laſt aſſertion, and likewiſe claimed the ſagacity of having obſerved it. 'And certainly,' added he, 'it muſt be ſo; for no 'one but a madman would have thought of leaving 'ſo good a houſe, to ramble about the country at 'that time of night.'

The exciſeman, pulling his pipe from his mouth, ſaid, 'He thought the gentleman looked and talked 'a little wildly;' and then turning to Partridge, 'if 'he be a madman,' ſays he, 'he ſhould not be ſuf-'fered to travel thus about the country; for poſſibly 'he may do ſome miſchief. It is pity he was not ſe-'cured and ſent home to his relations.'

Now ſome conceits of this kind were likewiſe lurking in the mind of Partridge; for, as he was now perſuaded that Jones had run away from Mr Allworthy, he promiſed himſelf the higheſt rewards, if he could by any means convey him back. But fear of Jones, of whoſe fierceneſs and ſtrength he had ſeen, and indeed felt ſome inſtances, had however repreſented any ſuch ſcheme as impoſſible to be executed, and had diſcouraged him from applying himſelf to form any regular plan for the purpoſe. But no ſooner did he hear the ſentiments of the exciſeman, than he embraced that opportunity of declaring his own, and expreſſed a hearty wiſh that ſuch a matter could be brought about.

'Could be brought about!' ſays the exciſeman; 'why there is nothing eaſier.'

'Ah! Sir,' anſwered Partridge, 'you don't know 'what a devil of a fellow he is. He can take me up 'with one hand, and throw me out at a window; 'and he would too, if he did but imagine——

'Pogh!' ſays the exciſeman, 'I believe I am as 'good a man as he. Beſides, here are five of us.'

'I don't know what five,' cries the landlady, 'my 'huſband ſhall have nothing to do in it. Nor ſhall

Digitized by Google

'any violent hands be laid upon any body in my 'houſe. The young gentleman is as pretty a young 'gentleman as ever I ſaw in my life, and I believe he 'is no more mad than any of us. What do you tell 'of his having a wild look with his eyes? they are 'the prettieſt eyes I ever ſaw, and he hath the pret-'tieſt look with them: and a very modeſt civil young 'man he is. I am ſure I have bepitied him heartily 'ever ſince the gentleman there in the corner told us 'he was croſt in love. Certainly that is enough to 'make any man, eſpecially ſuch a ſweet young gen-'tleman as he is, to look a little otherwiſe than he 'did before. Lady, indeed! what the devil would 'the lady have better than ſuch a handſome man 'with a great eſtate? I ſuppoſe ſhe is one of your 'quality folks, one of your townly ladies that we ſaw 'laſt night in the puppet-ſhow, who don't know what 'they would be at.'

The attorney's clerk likewiſe declared he would have no concern in the buſineſs, without the advice of council. 'Suppoſe,' ſays he, 'an action of falſe 'impriſonment ſhould be brought againſt us, what 'defence could we make? Who knows what may be 'ſufficient evidence of madneſs to a jury? But I only 'ſpeak upon my own account; for it don't look well 'for a lawyer to be concerned in theſe matters, un-'leſs it be as a lawyer. Juries are always leſs favour-'able to us than to other people. I don't therefore 'diſſuade you, Mr Thomſon, (to the exciſeman), 'nor the gentleman, nor any body elſe.'

The exciſeman ſhook his head at this ſpeech, and the puppet-ſhow-man ſaid, 'madneſs was ſometimes 'a difficult matter for a jury to decide: for I re-'member,' ſays he, 'I was once preſent at a trial 'of madneſs, where twenty witneſſes ſwore that the 'perſon was as mad as a March hare; and twenty 'others, that he was as much in his ſenſes as any 'man in England —And indeed it was the opinion of 'moſt people, that it was only a trick of his rela-'tions to rob the poor man of his right.'

'Very likely!' cries the landlady, 'I myſelf knew 'a poor gentleman who was kept in a mad houſe all

'his

Digitized by Google

'his life by his family, and they enjoyed his eſtate, 'but it did them no good; for, though the law gave 'it them, it was the right of another.'

'Pogh!' cries the clerk with great contempt, 'who hath any right but what the law gives them? 'If the law gave me the beſt eſtate in the country, 'I ſhould never trouble myſelf much who had the 'right.'

'If it be ſo,' ſays Partridge, '*Felix quem faciunt* '*aliena pericula cautum.*'

My landlord, who had been called out by the arrival of a horſeman at the gate, now returned into the kitchen, and with an affrighted countenance cried out, 'What do you think, gentlemen? The rebels 'have given the duke the ſlip, and are got almoſt to 'London—It is certainly true, for a man on horſeback 'juſt now told me ſo.'

'I am glad of it with all my heart,' cries Partridge; 'then there will be no fighting in theſe 'parts.'

'I am glad,' cries the clerk 'for a better reaſon; 'for I would always have right take place.'

'Ay but,' anſwered the landlord, 'I have heard 'ſome people ſay this man hath no right.'

'I will prove the contrary in a moment,' cries the clerk; 'if my father dies ſeized of a right; do you 'mind me, ſeized of a right, I ſay; doth not that 'right deſcend to his ſon? and doth not one right 'deſcend as well as another?'

'But how can he have any right to make us pa'piſhes?' ſays the landlord.

'Never fear that,' cries Partridge. 'As to the 'matter of right, the gentleman there hath proved 'it as clear as the ſun; and, as to the matter of re'ligion, it is quite out of the caſe. The papiſts them'ſelves don't expect any ſuch thing. A popiſh prieſt, 'whom I knew very well, and who is a very honeſt 'man, told me upon his word and honour they had 'no ſuch deſign.'

'And another prieſt of my acquaintance,' ſaid the landlady, 'hath told me the ſame thing——But my 'huſband is always ſo afraid of papiſhes. I know a

Digitized by Google

'great many papiſhes that are very honeſt ſort of 'people, and ſpend their money very freely; and it 'is always a maxim with me, that one man's money 'is as good as another's.'

'Very true, miſtreſs,' ſaid the puppet-ſhow-man; 'I don't care what religion comes, provided the preſ-'byterians are not uppermoſt; for they are enemies 'to puppet-ſhows.'

'And ſo you would ſacrifice your religion to your 'intereſt,' cries the exciſeman; 'and are deſirous to 'ſee popery brought in, are you?'

'Not I truly,' anſwered the other; 'I hate popery 'as much as any man: but yet it is a comfort to one, 'that one ſhould be able to live under it, which 'I could not do among preſbyterians. To be ſure 'every man values his livelihood firſt; that muſt be 'granted; and I warrant, if you would confeſs the 'truth, you are more afraid of loſing your place than 'any thing elſe; but never fear, friend, there will be 'an exciſe under another government as well as under 'this.'

'Why, certainly,' replied the exciſeman, 'I ſhould 'be a very ill man, if I did not honour the king, 'whoſe bread I eat. That is no more than natural, 'as a man may ſay; for what ſignifies it to me that 'there would be an exciſe-office under another go-'vernment, ſince my friends would be out, and I 'could expect no better than to follow them? No, 'no, friend, I ſhall never be bubbled out of my reli-'gion, in hopes only of keeping my place under an-'other government; for I ſhould certainly be no bet-'ter, and very probably might be worſe.'

'Why, that is what I ſay,' cries the landlord, 'whenever folks ſay, who knows what may happen? 'Odzook, ſhould not I be a blockhead to lend my 'money to I know not who, becauſe mayhap he may 'return it again? I am ſure it is ſafe in my own bu-'reau, and there I will keep it.'

The attorney's clerk had taken a great fancy to the ſagacity of Partridge. Whether this proceeded from the great diſcernment which the former had into men, as well as things, or whether it aroſe from the ſympathy

Digitized by Google

ſympathy between their minds; for they were both truly Jacobites in principle; they now ſhook hands heartily, and drank bumpers of ſtrong beer to healths which we think proper to bury in oblivion.

Theſe healths were afterwards pledged by all preſent, and even by my landlord himſelf, though reluctantly; but he could not withſtand the menaces of the clerk, who ſwore he would never ſet his foot within his houſe again, if he refuſed. The bumpers which were ſwallowed on this occaſion ſoon put an end to the converſation. Here, therefore, we will put an end to the chapter.

CHAP. VIII.

In which Fortune ſeems to have been in a better humour with Jones than we have hitherto ſeen her.

As there is no wholeſomer, ſo perhaps there are few ſtronger ſleeping potions than fatigue. Of this Jones might be ſaid to have taken a very large doſe, and it operated very forcibly upon him. He had already ſlept nine hours, and might perhaps have ſlept longer, had he not been awakened by a moſt violent noiſe at his chamber-door, where the ſound of many heavy blows was accompanied with many exclamations of murder. Jones preſently leaped from his bed, where he found the maſter of the puppet-ſhow belabouring the back and ribs of his poor merry Andrew, without either mercy or moderation.

Jones inſtantly interpoſed on behalf of the ſuffering party, and pinned the inſulting conqueror up to the wall; for the puppet-ſhew man was no more able to contend with Jones, than the poor party-coloured jeſter had been to contend with this puppet-man.

But, though the merry Andrew was a little fellow, and not very ſtrong, he had nevertheleſs ſome choler about him. He therefore no ſooner found himſelf delivered from the enemy, than he began to attack him with the only weapon at which he was his equal. From this he firſt diſcharged a volley of general abuſive words, and thence proceeded to ſome particular accuſa-

Digitized by Google

accuſations.——'D—n your bl—d, you raſcal,' ſays he, 'I have not only ſupported you, (for to me you 'owe all the money you get), but I have ſaved you 'from the gallows. Did not you want to rob the 'lady of her fine riding-habit, no longer ago than 'yeſterday, in the back lane here? Can you deny 'that you wiſhed to have her alone in a wood to 'ſtrip her, to ſtrip one of the prettieſt ladies that ever 'was ſeen in the world? and here you have fallen 'upon me, and have almoſt murdered me for doing 'no harm to a girl as willing as myſelf, only be-'cauſe ſhe likes me better than you.'

Jones no ſooner heard this, than he quitted the maſter, laying on him at the ſame time the moſt violent injunctions of forbearance from any further inſult on the merry Andrew; and, then taking the poor wretch with him into his own apartment, he ſoon learnt tidings of his Sophia, whom the fellow, as he was attending his maſter with his drum the day before, had ſeen paſs by. He eaſily prevailed with the lad to ſhew him the exact place, and then, having ſummoned Partridge, he departed with the utmoſt expedition.

It was almoſt eight of the clock before all matters could be got ready for his departure; for Partridge was not in any haſte, nor could the reckoning be preſently adjuſted; and, when both theſe were ſettled and over, Jones would not quit the place, before he had perfectly reconciled all differences between the maſter and the man.

When this was happily accompliſhed, he ſet forwards, and was by the truſty merry Andrew conducted to the ſpot by which Sophia had paſt; and then, having handſomely rewarded his conductor, he again puſhed on with the utmoſt eagerneſs, being highly delighted with the extraordinary manner in which he received his intelligence. Of this Partridge was no ſooner acquainted, than he with great earneſtneſs began to propheſy, and aſſured Jones, that he would certainly have good ſucceſs in the end; for he ſaid, 'two ſuch accidents could never have happened 'to direct him after his miſtreſs, if Providence had not 'deſigned to bring them together at laſt.' And this was

was the firſt time that Jones lent any attention to the ſuperſtitious doctrines of his companion.

They had not gone above two miles, when a violent ſtorm of rain overtook them; and, as they happened to be at the ſame time in ſight of an alehouſe, Partridge with much earneſt entreaty prevailed with Jones to enter and weather the ſtorm. Hunger is an enemy, (if indeed it may be called one), which partakes more of the Engliſh than of the French diſpoſition; for, though you ſubdue this never ſo often, it will always rally again in time; and ſo it did with Partridge, who was no ſooner arrived within the kitchen, than he began to aſk the ſame queſtions which he had aſked the night before. The conſequence of this was an excellent cold chine being produced upon the table, upon which not only Partridge, but Jones himſelf, made a very hearty breakfaſt, though the latter began to grow again uneaſy, as the people of the houſe could give him no freſh information concerning Sophia.

Their meal being over, Jones was again preparing to ſally, notwithſtanding the violence of the ſtorm ſtill continued; but Partridge begged heartily for another mug; and, at laſt caſting his eyes on a lad at the fire, who had entered into the kitchen, and who at that inſtant was looking as earneſtly at him, he turned ſuddenly to Jones, and cried, 'Maſter, give 'me your hand; a ſingle mug ſhan't ſerve the turn 'this bout. Why here's more news of madam So'phia come to town. The boy there ſtanding by the 'fire is the very lad that rode before her. I can 'ſwear to my own plaiſter on his face.' 'Heavens 'bleſs you, Sir,' cries the boy; 'it is your own plaiſter 'ſure enough; I ſhall have always reaſon to remem'ber your goodneſs; for it hath almoſt cured me.'

At theſe words Jones ſtarted from his chair, and, bidding the boy follow him, immediately departed from the kitchen into a private apartment; for ſo delicate was he with regard to Sophia, that he never willingly mentioned her name in the preſence of many people; and though he had as it were, from the overflowings of his heart, given Sophia as a toaſt among

Digitized by Google

among the officers, where he thought it was impoſſible ſhe ſhould be known; yet even there the reader may remember how difficultly he was prevailed upon to mention her ſirname.

Hard therefore was it, and perhaps, in the opinion of many ſagacious readers, very abſurd and monſtrous, that he ſhould principally owe his preſent misfortune to the ſuppoſed want of that delicacy with which he ſo abounded; for, in reality, Sophia was much more offended at the freedoms which ſhe thought (and not without good reaſon), he had taken with her name and character, than at any freedoms, in which, under his preſent circumſtances, he had indulged himſelf with the perſon of another woman; and, to ſay truth, I believe Honour could never have prevailed on her to leave Upton without ſeeing Jones, had it not been for thoſe two ſtrong inſtances of a levity in his behaviour, ſo void of reſpect, and indeed ſo highly inconſiſtent with any degree of love and tenderneſs in great and delicate minds.

But ſo matters fell out, and ſo I muſt relate them; and, if any reader is ſhocked at their appearing unnatural, I cannot help it. I muſt remind ſuch perſons, that I am not writing a ſyſtem, but a hiſtory, and I am not obliged to reconcile every matter to the received notions concerning truth and nature. But, if this was never ſo eaſy to do, perhaps it might be more prudent in me to avoid it. For inſtance, as the fact at preſent before us now ſtands, without any comment of mine upon it, though it may at firſt ſight offend ſome readers, yet, upon more mature conſideration, it muſt pleaſe all; for wiſe and good men may conſider what happened to Jones at Upton, as a juſt puniſhment for his wickedneſs with regard to women, of which it was indeed the immediate conſequence; and ſilly and bad perſons may comfort themſelves in their vices, by flattering their own hearts, that the characters of men are rather owing to accident than to virtue. Now perhaps the reflections, which we ſhould be here inclined to draw, would alike contradict both theſe concluſions, and would ſhew that theſe incidents contribute only to confirm the great, uſeful,

Digitized by Google

useful, and uncommon doctrine, which it is the purpose of this whole work to inculcate, and which we must not fill up our pages by frequently repeating, as an ordinary parson fills his sermon by repeating his text at the end of every paragraph.

We are contented that it must appear, however unhappily Sophia had erred in her opinion of Jones, she had sufficient reason for her opinion; since, I believe, every other young lady would, in her situation, have erred in the same manner. Nay, had she followed her lover at this very time, and had entered this very alehouse the moment he was departed from it, she would have found the landlord as well acquainted with her name and person, as the wench at Upton had appeared to be: For, while Jones was examining his boy in whispers in an inner room, Partridge, who had no such delicacy in his disposition, was in the kitchen very openly catechising the other guide who had attended Mrs Fitzpatrick; by which means the landlord, whose ears were open on all such occasions, became perfectly well acquainted with the tumble of Sophia from her horse, &c. with the mistake concerning Jenny Cameron, with the many consequences of the punch, and, in short, with almost every thing which had happened at the inn, whence we dispatched our ladies in a coach and six, when we last took our leaves of them.

CHAP. IX.

Containing little more than a few odd observations.

JONES had been absent a full half hour, when he returned into the kitchen in a hurry, desiring the landlord to let him know that instant what was to pay. And now the concern, which Partridge felt at being obliged to quit the warm chimney-corner and a cup of excellent liquor, was somewhat compensated by hearing, that he was to proceed no farther on foot; for Jones, by golden arguments, had prevailed with the boy to attend him back to the inn whither he had before conducted Sophia; but to this however the lad consented,

Digitized by Google

consented, upon condition that the other guide would wait for him at the alehouse; because, as the landlord at Upton was an intimate acquaintance of the landlord at Gloucester, it might some time or other come to the ears of the latter, that his horses had been let to more than one person; and so the boy might be brought to account for money, which he wisely intended to put in his own pocket.

We were obliged to mention this circumstance, trifling as it may seem, since it retarded Mr Jones a considerable time in his setting out; for the honesty of this latter boy was somewhat high—that is, somewhat high-priced, and would indeed have cost Jones very dear, had not Partridge, who, as we have said, was a very cunning fellow, artfully thrown in half a crown to be spent at that very alehouse, while the boy was waiting for his companion. This half-crown the landlord no sooner got scent of, than he opened after it with such vehement and persuasive outcry, that the boy was soon overcome, and consented to take half a crown more for his stay. Here we cannot help observing, that, as there is so much of policy in the lowest life, great men often overvalue themselves on those refinements in imposture, in which they are frequently excelled by some of the lowest of the human species.

The horses being now produced, Jones directly leapt into the side-saddle, on which his dear Sophia had rid. The lad indeed very civilly offered him the use of his; but he chose the side-saddle, probably because it was softer. Partridge however, though full as effeminate as Jones, could not bear the thought of degrading his manhood; he therefore accepted the boy's offer; and now Jones, being mounted on the side-saddle of his Sophia, the boy on that of Mrs Honour, and Partridge bestriding the third horse, they set forwards on their journey, and within four hours arrived at the inn where the reader hath already spent so much time. Partridge was in very high spirits during the whole way, and often mentioned to Jones the many good omens of his future success, which had lately befriended him; and which the reader, without being the

Digitized by Google

leaſt ſuperſtitious, muſt allow to have been peculiarly fortunate. Partridge was moreover better pleaſed with the preſent purſuit of his companion, than he had been with his purſuit of glory; and from theſe very omens, which aſſured the pedagogue of ſucceſs, he likewiſe firſt acquired a clear idea of the amour between Jones and Sophia; to which he had before given very little attention, as he had originally taken a wrong ſcent concerning the reaſons of Jones's departure; and as to what happened at Upton, he was too much frightened juſt before and after his leaving that place, to draw any other concluſions from thence, than that poor Jones was a downright madman: a conceit which was not at all diſagreeable to the opinion he before had of his extraordinary wildneſs, of which he thought, his behaviour on their quitting Glouceſter ſo well juſtified all the accounts he had formerly received. He was now however pretty well ſatisfied with his preſent expedition, and henceforth began to conceive much worthier ſentiments of his friend's underſtanding.

The clock had juſt ſtruck three when they arrived, and Jones immediately beſpoke poſt-horſes; but unluckily there was not a horſe to be procured in the whole place; which the reader will not wonder at, when he conſiders the hurry in which the whole nation, and eſpecially this part of it, was at this time engaged, when expreſſes were paſſing and repaſſing every hour of the day and night.

Jones endeavoured all he could to prevail with his former guide to eſcort him to Coventry; but he was inexorable. While he was arguing with the boy in the inn-yard, a perſon came up to him, and ſaluting him by his name, enquired how all the good family did in Somerſetſhire; and now Jones, caſting his eyes upon this perſon, preſently diſcovered him to be Mr Dowling the lawyer, with whom he had dined at Glouceſter, and with much courteſy returned his ſalutation.

Dowling very earneſtly preſſed Mr Jones to go no further that night; and backed his ſolicitations with many unanſwerable arguments, ſuch as that it was almoſt dark, that the roads were very dirty, and that he would be able to travel much better by day-light, with

Digitized by Google

many others equally good, ſome of which Jones had probably ſuggeſted to himſelf before; but as they were then ineffectual, ſo they were ſtill; and he continued reſolute in his deſign, even though he ſhould be obliged to ſet out on foot.

When the good attorney found he could not prevail on Jones to ſtay, he as ſtrenuouſly applied himſelf to perſuade the guide to accompany him. He urged many motives to induce him to undertake this ſhort journey, and at laſt concluded with ſaying, 'Do you think the gentleman won't very well reward 'you for your trouble?'

Two to one are odds at every other thing, as well as at foot-ball. But the advantage which this united force hath in perſuaſion or entreaty, muſt have been viſible to a curious obſerver; for he muſt have often ſeen, that when a father, a maſter, a wife, or any other perſon in authority, have ſtoutly adhered to a denial againſt all the reaſons which a ſingle man could produce, they have afterwards yielded to the repetition of the ſame ſentiments by a ſecond or third perſon, who hath undertaken the cauſe, without attempting to advance any thing new in its behalf. And hence perhaps proceeds the phraſe of ſeconding an argument or a motion, and the great conſequence this is of in all aſſemblies of public debate. Hence likewiſe probably it is, that in our courts of law we often hear a learned gentleman (generally a ſerjeant) repeating for an hour together what another learned gentleman who ſpoke juſt before him, had been ſaying.

Inſtead of accounting for this, we ſhall proceed in our uſual manner to exemplify it in the conduct of the lad above-mentioned, who ſubmitted to the perſuaſions of Mr Dowling, and promiſed once more to admit Jones into his ſide-ſaddle; but inſiſted on firſt giving the poor creatures a good bait, ſaying they had travelled a great way, and been rid very hard. Indeed this caution of the boy was needleſs; for Jones, notwithſtanding his hurry and impatience, would have ordered this of himſelf; for he by no means agreed with the opinion of thoſe who conſider animals as mere machines, and when they bury their ſpurs in the belly of their

Digitized by Google

their horſe, imagine the ſpur and the horſe to have an equal capacity of feeling pain.

While the beaſts were eating their corn, or rather were ſuppoſed to eat it; (for, as the boy was taking care of himſelf in the kitchen, the hoſtler took great care that his corn ſhould not be conſumed in the ſtable), Mr Jones, at the earneſt deſire of Mr Dowling, accompanied that gentleman into his room, where they ſat down together over a bottle of wine.

CHAP. X.

In which Mr Jones and Mr Dowling drink a bottle together.

MR Dowling, pouring out a glaſs of wine, named the health of the good ſquire Allworthy, adding, 'If you pleaſe, Sir, we will likewiſe remember 'his nephew and heir, the young ſquire; come, Sir, 'here's Mr Blifil to you; a very pretty young gen'tleman; and who, I dare ſwear, will hereafter make 'a very conſiderable figure in his country. I have 'a borough for him myſelf in my eye.'

'Sir,' anſwered Jones, 'I am convinced you don't 'intend to affront me, ſo I ſhall not reſent it; but, I 'promiſe you, you have joined two perſons very im'properly together; for one is the glory of the hu'man ſpecies, and the other is a raſcal, who diſho'nours the name of man.'

Dowling ſtared at this. He ſaid, 'He thought both 'the gentlemen had a very unexceptionable charac'ter. As for ſquire Allworthy himſelf,' ſays he, 'I 'never had the happineſs to ſee him; but all the 'world talks of his goodneſs. And, indeed, as to 'the young gentleman, I never ſaw him but once, 'when I carried him the news of the loſs of his mo'ther; and then I was ſo hurried, and drove and tore 'with the multiplicity of buſineſs, that I had hard'ly time to converſe with him; but he looked ſo like 'a very honeſt gentleman, and behaved himſelf ſo 'prettily, that I proteſt I never was more delighted 'with any gentleman ſince I was born.'

Digitized by Google

'I don't wonder,' answered Jones, 'that he should 'impose upon you in so short an acquaintance; for 'he hath the cunning of the devil himself, and you 'may live with him many years, without discovering 'him. I was bred up with him from my infancy, and 'we were hardly ever asunder; but it is very lately 'only that I have discovered half the villainy which 'is in him. I own I never greatly liked him. I 'thought he wanted that generosity of spirit, which 'is the sure foundation of all that is great and noble 'in human nature. I saw a selfishness in him long 'ago, which I dispised; but it is lately, very lately, 'that I have found him capable of the basest and 'blackest designs; for, indeed, I have at last found 'out that he hath taken an advantage of the open-'ness of my own temper, and hath concerted the 'deepest project, by a long train of wicked artifice, 'to work my ruin, which at last he hath effected.'

'Ay! Ay!' cries Dowling, 'I protest then, it is 'a pity such a person should inherit the great estate 'of your uncle Allworthy.'

'Alas, Sir,' cries Jones, 'you do me an honour 'to which I have no title. It is true, indeed, his 'goodness once allowed me the liberty of calling him 'by a much nearer name; but, as this was only a vo-'luntary act of goodness, I can complain of no in-'justice, when he thinks proper to deprive me of this 'honour, since the loss cannot be more unmerited 'than the gift originally was. I assure you, Sir, I 'am no relation of Mr Allworthy; and if the world, 'who are incapable of setting a true value on his 'virtue, should think, in his behaviour by me, he 'hath dealt hardly by a relation, they do injus-'tice to the best of men: for I—but I ask your par-'don; I shall trouble you with no particulars rela-'ting to myself; only as you seemed to think me a 'relation of Mr Allworthy, I thought proper to set 'you right in a matter that might draw some cen-'sures upon him, which I promise you I would ra-'ther lose my life, than give occasion to.'

'I protest, Sir,' cried Dowling, 'you talk very 'much like a man of honour; but, instead of giving

'me

'me any trouble, I proteſt it would give me great plea-
'ſure to know how you came to be thought a relation
'of Mr Allworthy's, if you are not. Your horſes
'won't be ready this half hour, and as you have ſuf-
'ficient opportunity, I wiſh you would tell me how all
'that happened; for I proteſt, it ſeems very ſurpriſing
'that you ſhould paſs for a relation of a gentleman,
'without being ſo.'

Jones, who in the compliance of his diſpoſition (tho' not in his prudence), a little reſembled his lovely Sophia, was eaſily prevailed on to ſatisfy Mr Dowling's curioſity, by relating the hiſtory of his birth and education, which he did, like Othello,

'——Even from his boyiſh years,
'To th' very moment he was bad to tell;'

the which to hear, Dowling, like Deſdemona, did ſeriouſly incline;

'He ſwore 'twas ſtrange, 'twas paſſing ſtrange;
''Twas pitiful, 'twas wondrous pitiful.'

Mr Dowling was indeed very greatly affected with this relation; for he had not diveſted himſelf of humanity by being an attorney. Indeed nothing is more unjuſt than to carry our prejudices againſt a profeſſion into private life, and to borrow our idea of a man from our opinion of his calling. Habit, it is true, leſſens the horror of thoſe actions which the profeſſion makes neceſſary, and conſequently habitual; but in all other inſtances, Nature works in men of all profeſſions alike, nay perhaps even more ſtrongly with thoſe who give her, as it were, a holiday, when they are following their ordinary buſineſs. A butcher, I make no doubt, would feel compunction at the ſlaughter of a fine horſe; and though a ſurgeon can conceive no pain in cutting off a limb, I have known him compaſſionate a man in a fit of the gout. The common hangman, who hath ſtretched the necks of hundreds, is known to have trembled at his firſt operation on a head; and the very profeſſors of human blood ſhedding, who in their trade

Digitized by Google

war butcher thousands, not only of their fellow-professors, but often of women and children, without remorse; even these, I say, in times of peace, when drums and trumpets are laid aside, often lay aside all their ferocity, and become very gentle members of civil society. In the same manner an attorney may feel all the miseries and distresses of his fellow-creatures, provided he happens not to be concerned against them.

Jones, as the reader knows, was yet unacquainted with the very black colours in which he had been represented to Mr Allworthy; and as to other matters, he did not show them in the most disadvantageous light; for though he was unwilling to cast any blame on his former friend and patron, yet he was not very desirous of heaping too much upon himself. Dowling therefore observed, and not without reason, that very ill offices must have been done him by somebody: 'For 'certainly,' cries he, 'the squire would never have 'disinherited you only for a few faults, which any 'young gentleman might have committed. Indeed 'I cannot say properly disinherited; for to be sure, 'by law you cannot claim as heir. That's certain; 'that nobody need go to counsel for. Yet, when a 'gentleman had in a manner adopted you thus as his 'own son, you might reasonably have expected some 'very considerable part, if not the whole; nay, if you 'had expected the whole, I should not have blamed 'you; for certainly all men are for getting as much 'as they can, and they are not to be blamed on that 'account.'

'Indeed you wrong me,' said Jones, 'I should 'have been contented with very little; I never had 'any view upon Mr Allworthy's fortune; nay, I be-'lieve, I may truly say, I never once considered what 'he could or might give me. This I solemnly declare, 'if he had done a prejudice to his nephew in my fa-'vour, I would have undone it again. I had rather 'enjoy my own mind than the fortune of another 'man. What is the poor pride arising from a mag-'nificent house, a numerous equipage, a splendid table, 'and from all the other advantages or appearances

'of

Digitized by Google

'of fortune, compared to the warm, ſolid content, the 'ſwelling ſatisfaction, the thrilling tranſports, and the 'exulting triumphs, which a good mind enjoys in the 'contemplation of a generous, virtuous, noble, bene-'volent action? I envy not Blifil in the proſpect of 'his wealth; nor ſhall I envy him in the poſſeſſion of 'it. I would not think myſelf a raſcal half an hour, 'to exchange ſituations. I believe, indeed, Mr Blifil 'ſuſpected me of the views you mention; and I ſup-'poſe theſe ſuſpicions, as they aroſe from the baſeneſs 'of his own heart, ſo they occaſioned his baſeneſs to 'me. But I thank Heaven, I know, I feel, — I feel 'my innocence, my friend; and I would not part with 'that feeling for the world.—For as long as I know 'I have never done, nor even deſigned an injury to 'any being whatever.

'*Pone me pigris ubi nulla campis*
'*Arbor æſtiva recreatur aura,*
'*Quod latus mundi nebulæ, maluſque*
'*Jupiter urget:*
'*Pone, ſub curru nimium propinqui*
'*Solis, in terra domibus negata;*
'*Dulce ridentem Lalagen amabo,*
'*Dulce loquentem* *.'

He then filled a bumper of wine, and drank it off to the health of his dear Lalage; and, filling Dowling's glaſs likewiſe up to the brim, inſiſted on his pledging him. 'Why then, here's Miſs Lalage's health, with 'all my heart,' cries Dowling. 'I have heard her

* 'Place me where never ſummer breeze
'Unbinds the glebe, or warms the trees;
'Where ever-lowering clouds appear,
'And angry Jove deforms th' inclement year.

'Place me beneath the burning ray,
'Where rolls the rapid car of day;
'Love and the nymph ſhall charm my toils,
'The nymph who ſweetly ſpeaks, and ſweetly ſmiles.'
Mr FRANCIS.

'toaſted

'toasted often, I protest, though I never saw her; but 'they say she's extremely handsome.'

Though the Latin was not the only part of this speech which Dowling did not perfectly understand; yet there was somewhat in it, that made a very strong impression upon him. And though he endeavoured by winking, nodding, sneering, and grinning, to hide the impression from Jones, (for we are as often ashamed of thinking right as of thinking wrong), it is certain he secretly approved as much of his sentiments as he understood, and really felt a very strong impulse of compassion for him. But we may possibly take some other opportunity of commenting upon this, especially if we should happen to meet Mr Dowling any more in the course of our history. At present we are obliged to take our leave of that gentleman a little abruptly, in imitation of Mr Jones, who was no sooner informed by Partridge that his horses were ready, than he deposited his reckoning, wished his companion a good night, mounted, and set forwards towards Coventry, though the night was dark, and it just then began to rain very hard.

CHAP. XI.

The disasters which befel Jones on his departure for Coventry; with the sage remarks of Partridge.

NO road can be plainer than that from the place where they now were to Coventry; and though neither Jones nor Partridge, nor the guide, had ever travelled it before, it would have been almost impossible to have missed their way, had it not been for the two reasons mentioned in the conclusion of the last chapter.

These two circumstances, however, happening both unfortunately to intervene, our travellers deviated into a much less frequented track; and after riding full six miles, instead of arriving at the stately spires of Coventry, they found themselves still in a very dirty lane where they saw no symptoms of approaching the suburbs of a large city.

Jones

Digitized by Google

Jones now declared that they must certainly have lost their way; but this the guide insisted upon was impossible; a word which, in common conversation, is often used to signify not only improbable, but often what is really very likely, and sometimes what hath certainly happened; an hyperbolical violence, like that which is so frequently offered to the words *infinite* and *eternal*; by the former of which it is usual to express a distance of half a-yard and by the latter, a duration of five minutes. And thus it is as usual to assert the impossibility of losing what is already actually lost. This was, in fact, the case at present; for, notwithstanding all the confident assertions of the lad to the contrary, it is certain they were no more in the right road to Coventry, than the fraudulent, gripping, cruel, canting miser is in the right road to heaven.

It may, perhaps, be easy for a reader, who hath never been in those circumstances, to imagine the horror with which darkness, rain, and wind, fill persons who have lost their way in the night; and who, consequently, have not the pleasant prospect of warm fires, dry clothes, and other refreshments, to support their minds in struggling with the inclemencies of the weather. A very imperfect idea of this horror will, however, serve sufficiently to account for the conceits, which now filled the head of Partridge, and which we shall presently be obliged to open.

Jones grew more and more positive that they were out of their road; and the boy himself at last acknowledged, he believed they were not in the right road to Coventry; though he affirmed, at the same time, it was impossible they should have missed the way. But Partridge was of a different opinion. He said, 'When they first set out, he imagined some mischief 'or other would happen.——Did you not observe, 'Sir,' said he to Jones, 'that old woman who stood 'at the door just as you was taking horse? I wish you 'had given her a small matter with all my heart; for 'she said then you might repent it; and at that very 'instant it began to rain, and the wind hath continued rising ever since. Whatever some people may 'think, I am very certain it is in the power of

'witches

'witches to raiſe the wind whenever they pleaſe. I 'have ſeen it happen very often in my time; and, if 'ever I ſaw a witch in all my life, that old woman 'was certainly one. I thought ſo to myſelf at that 'very time; and, if I had had any halfpence in my 'pocket, I would have given her ſome: for to be 'ſure it is always good to be charitable to thoſe ſort 'of people, for fear what may happen; and many a 'perſon hath loſt his cattle by ſaving a halfpenny.'

Jones, though he was horridly vexed at the delay which this miſtake was likely to occaſion in his journey, could not help ſmiling at the ſuperſtition of his friend, whom an accident now greatly confirmed in his opinion. This was a tumble from his horſe; by which, however, he received no other injury than what the dirt conferred on his clothes.

Partridge had no ſooner recovered his legs, than he appealed to his fall, as concluſive evidence of all he had aſſerted; but Jones, finding he was unhurt, anſwered with a ſmile, 'This witch of yours, Par-'tridge, is a moſt ungrateful jade, and doth not, I 'find, diſtinguiſh her friends from others in her re-'ſentment. If the old lady had been angry with me 'for neglecting her, I don't ſee why ſhe ſhould tum-'ble you from your horſe, after all the reſpect you 'have expreſſed for her.

'It is ill jeſting,' cries Partridge, 'with people 'who have power to do theſe things; for they are 'often very malicious. I remember a farrier, who 'provoked one of them, by aſking her when the time 'ſhe had bargained with the devil for would be out; 'and, within three months from that very day, one of 'his beſt cows was drowned. Nor was ſhe ſatisfied 'with that; for a little time afterwards he loſt a bar-'rel of beſt drink; for the old witch pulled out the 'ſpigot, and let it run all over the cellar, the very 'firſt evening he had tapped it, to make merry with 'ſome of his neighbours. In ſhort, nothing ever 'thrived with him afterwards; for ſhe worried the 'poor man ſo, that he took to drinking; and, in a 'year or two his ſtock was ſeized, and he and his 'family are now come to the pariſh.'

The

Digitized by Google

The guide, and perhaps his horſe too, were both ſo attentive to this diſcourſe, that, either through want of care, or by the malice of the witch, they were now both ſprawling in the dirt.

Partridge entirely imputed this fall, as he had done his own, to the ſame cauſe. He told Mr Jones, 'it 'would certainly be his turn next;' and earneſtly entreated him, 'to return back, and find out the old 'woman and pacify her. We ſhall very ſoon,' added he, 'reach the inn; for though we have ſeemed 'to go forward, I am very certain we are in the iden-'tical place in which we were an hour ago; and I 'dare ſwear if it was day-light, we might now ſee the 'inn we ſet out from.'

Inſtead of returning any anſwer to this ſage advice, Jones was entirely attentive to what had happened to the boy, who received no other hurt than what had before befallen Partridge, and which his cloaths very eaſily bore, as they had been for many years inured to the like. He ſoon regained his ſide-ſaddle, and by the hearty curſes and blows which he beſtowed on his horſe, quickly ſatisfied Mr Jones that no harm was done.

CHAP. XII.

Relates that Mr Jones continued his journey contrary to the advice of Partridge, with what happened on that occaſion.

THEY now diſcovered a light at ſome diſtance, to the great pleaſure of Jones, and to the no ſmall terror of Partridge, who firmly believed himſelf to be bewitched, and that this light was a Jack with a Lantern, or ſomewhat more miſchievous.

But how were theſe fears increaſed, when, as they approached nearer to this light, (or lights as they now appeared) they heard a confuſed ſound of human voices; of ſinging, laughing, and hallowing, together with a ſtrange noiſe that ſeemed to proceed from ſome inſtruments; but could hardly be allowed the name of muſic! indeed, to favour a little the opinion of

Digitized by Google

of Partridge, it might very well be called music bewitched.

It is impossible to conceive a much greater degree of horror than what now seized on Partridge; the contagion of which had reached the post-boy, who had been very attentive to many things that the other had uttered. He now therefore joined in petitioning Jones to return; saying, he firmly believed what Partridge had just before said, that though the horses seemed to go on, they had not moved a step forwards during at least the last half hour.

Jones could not help smiling in the midst of his vexation, at the fears of these poor fellows. 'Either 'we advance,' says he, 'towards the lights, or the 'lights have advanced towards us; for we are now at 'a very little distance from them; but how can either 'of you be afraid of a set of people who appear only 'to be merry making?'

'Merry-making, Sir!' cries Partridge; 'who could 'be merry-making at this time of night, and in such 'a place, and in such weather? They can be nothing 'but ghosts or witches, or some evil spirits or other, 'that's certain.'

'Let them be what they will,' cries Jones, 'I am 'resolved to go up to them, and enquire the way to 'Coventry. All witches, Partridge, are not such ill-'natured hags as that we had the misfortune to meet 'with last.'

'O Lord, Sir!' cries Partridge, 'there is no know-'ing what humour they will be in; to be sure it is 'always best to be civil to them; but what if we 'should meet with something worse than witches, 'with evil spirits themselves? ——Pray, Sir, be ad-'vised; pray, Sir, do. If you had read so many 'terrible accounts as I have of these matters, you 'would not be so fool-hardy.——The Lord knows 'whither we have got already, or whither we are go-'ing; for sure such darkness was never seen upon 'earth, and I question whether it can be darker in the 'other world.'

Jones put forwards as fast as he could notwithstanding all these hints and cautions, and poor Partridge

Digitized by Google

was obliged to follow: for though he hardly dared to advance, he dared ſtill leſs to ſtay behind by himſelf.

At length they arrived at the place whence the lights and different noiſes had iſſued. This Jones perceived to be no other than a barn, where a great number of men and women were aſſembled, and diverting themſelves with much apparent jollity.

Jones no ſooner appeared before the great doors of the barn, which were open, than a maſculine and very rough voice from within, demanded who was there? To which Jones gently anſwered, a friend; and immediately aſked the road to Coventry.

'If you are a friend,' cries another of the men in the barn, 'you had better alight till the ſtorm is over;' (for indeed it was now more violent than ever) 'you 'are very welcome to put up your horſe; for there is 'ſufficient room for him at one end of the barn.'

'You are very obliging,' returned Jones; 'and I 'will accept your offer for a few minutes, whilſt the 'rain continues; and here are two more who will 'be glad of the ſame favour.' This was accorded with more good will than it was accepted: for Partridge would rather have ſubmitted to the utmoſt inclemency of the weather, than have truſted to the clemency of thoſe whom he took for hobgoblins; and the poor poſt-boy was now affected with the ſame apprehenſions; but they were both obliged to follow the example of Jones; the one becauſe he durſt not leave his horſe, and the other becauſe he feared nothing ſo much as being left by himſelf.

Had this hiſtory been writ in the days of ſuperſtition, I ſhould have had too much compaſſion for the reader to have left him ſo long in ſuſpence, whether Beelzebub or Satan was about actually to appear in perſon, with all his helliſh retinue; but as theſe doctrines are at preſent very unfortunate, and have but few, if any believers, I have not been much aware of conveying any ſuch terrors. To ſay truth, the whole furniture of the infernal regions hath long been appropriated by the managers of play-houſes, who ſeem lately to have lain them by as rubbiſh, capable only of affecting the upper gallery; a place in which few of our readers ever ſit.

Digitized by Google

However, though we do not ſuſpect raiſing any great terror on this occaſion, we have reaſon to fear ſome other apprehenſions may here ariſe in our reader, into which we would not willingly betray him; I mean, that we are going to take a voyage into fairy-land, and to introduce a ſet of beings into our hiſtory, which ſcarce any one was ever childiſh enough to believe, though many have been fooliſh enough to ſpend their time in writing and reading their adventures.

To prevent therefore any ſuch ſuſpicions, ſo prejudicial to the credit of an hiſtorian, who profeſſes to draw his materials from nature only, we ſhall now proceed to acquaint the reader who theſe people were, whoſe ſudden appearance had ſtruck ſuch terrors into Partridge, had more than half frighten'd the poſt-boy, and had a little ſurpriſed even Mr Jones himſelf.

The people then aſſembled in this barn were no other than a company of Egyptians, or as they are vulgarly called Gypſies, and they were now celebrating the wedding of one of their ſociety.

It is impoſſible to conceive a happier ſet of people than appeared here to be met together. The utmoſt mirth indeed ſhewed itſelf in every countenance; nor was their ball totally void of all order and decorum. Perhaps it had more than a country aſſembly is ſometimes conducted with: for theſe people are ſubject to a formal government and laws of their own, and all pay obedience to one great magiſtrate, whom they call their king.

Greater plenty likewiſe was no where to be ſeen, than what flouriſhed in this barn. Here was indeed no nicety nor elegance, nor did the keen appetite of the gueſts require any. Here was good ſtore of bacon, fowls, and mutton, to which every one preſent provided better ſauce himſelf, than the beſt and deareſt French cook can prepare.

Æneas is not deſcribed under more conſternation in the temple of Juno,

'*Dum ſtupet obtutuque hæret defixus in uno,*'

than was our hero at what he ſaw in this barn. While he

Digitized by Google

he was looking every where round him with aſtoniſhment, a venerable perſon approached him with many friendly ſalutations, rather of too hearty a kind to be called courtly. This was no other than the king of the Gypſies himſelf. He was very little diſtinguiſhed in dreſs from his ſubjects, nor had he any regalia of majeſty to ſupport his dignity; and yet there ſeemed (as Mr Jones ſaid) to be ſomewhat in his air which denoted authority, and inſpired the beholders with an idea of awe and reſpect; though all this was perhaps imaginary in Jones; and the truth may be, that ſuch ideas are incident to power, and almoſt inſeparable from it.

There was ſomewhat in the open countenance and courteous behaviour of Jones, which being accompanied with much comelineſs of perſon, greatly recommended him at firſt ſight to every beholder. Theſe were perhaps a little heightened in the preſent inſtance, by that profound reſpect which he paid to the king of the Gypſies, the moment he was acquainted with his dignity, and which was the ſweeter to his Gypſeian majeſty, as he was not uſed to receive ſuch homage from any but his own ſubjects.

The king ordered a table to be ſpread with the choiceſt of their proviſions for his accommodation; and having placed himſelf at his right hand, his majeſty began to diſcourſe our hero in the following manner:

'Me doubt not, Sir, but you have often ſeen ſome 'of my people, who are what you call de parties de-'tache: for dey go about every where; but me fancy 'you imagine not we be ſo conſiderable body as we be; 'and may be you will be ſurpriſe more, when you 'hear de Gypſey be as orderly and well govern peo-'ple as any upon face of de earth.

'Me have honour, as me ſay, to be deir king, 'and no monarch can do boaſt of more dutiful ſub-'ject, ne no more affectionate. How far me deſerve 'deir good will, me no ſay; but dis me can ſay, dat 'me never deſign any ting but to do dem good. Me 'ſall no do boaſt of dat neider: for what can me do 'oderwiſe dan conſider of de good of doſe poor peo-

Digitized by Google

'ple who go about all day to give me always the beſt 'of what dey get. Dey love and honour me dare- 'fore, becauſe me do love and take care of dem; 'dat is all, me know no oder reaſon.

'About a touſand or two touſand year ago, me 'cannot tell to a year or two, as can neider write 'nor read, dere was a great what you call,—a volu- 'tion among de Gypſy; for dere was de lord Gypſy 'in doſe days; and deſe lord did quarrel vid one ano- 'der about de place; but de king of de Gypſy did 'demoliſh dem all, and made all his ſubject equal vid 'each oder; and ſince dat time dey have agree very 'well: for dey no tink of being king, and may be it 'be better for dem as dey be; for me aſſure you it 'be ver troubleſome ting to be king, and always to 'do juſtice; me have often wiſh to be de private 'Gypſy when me have been forced to puniſh my 'dear friend and relation; for dough we never put 'to death, our puniſhments be ver ſevere. Dey make 'de Gypſey aſhamed of demſelves, and dat be ver ter- 'rible puniſhment; me ave ſcarce evr known de 'Gypſy ſo puniſh do harm any more.'

The king then proceeded to expreſs ſome wonder that there was no ſuch puniſhment as ſhame in other governments. Upon which Jones aſſured him to the contrary: for that there were many crimes for which ſhame was inflicted by the Engliſh laws, and that it was indeed one conſequence of all puniſhment. 'Dat 'be ver ſtrange,' ſaid the king: 'for me know and 'hears good deal of your people, dough me no live 'among dem; and me ave often hear dat ſham is de 'conſequence and de cauſe too of many of your re- 'wards. Are your rewards and puniſhments den de 'ſame ting?'

While his Majeſty was thus diſcourſing with Jones, a ſudden uproar aroſe in the barn, and as it ſeems upon this occaſion: the courteſy of theſe people had by degrees removed all the apprehenſions of Partridge, and he was prevailed upon not only to ſtuff himſelf with their food, but to taſte ſome of their liquors, which by degrees entirely expelled all fear from

Digitized by Google

from his compoſition, and in its ſtead introduced much more agreeable ſenſations.

A young female gypſy, more remarkable for her wit than her beauty, had decoyed the honeſt fellow aſide, pretending to tell his fortune. Now when they were alone together in a remote part of the barn, whether it proceeded from the ſtrong liquor, which is never ſo apt to inflame inordinate deſire as after moderate fatigue; or whether the fair gypſy herſelf threw aſide the delicacy and decency of her ſex, and tempted the youth Partridge with expreſs ſolicitations; but they were diſcovered in a very improper manner by the huſband of the gypſy, who from jealouſy, it ſeems, had kept a watchful eye over his wife, and dogged her to the place, where he found her in the arms of her gallant.

To the great confuſion of Jones, Partridge was now hurried before the king; who heard the accuſation, and likewiſe the culprit's defence, which was indeed very trifling; for the poor fellow was confounded by the plain evidence which appeared againſt him, and had very little to ſay for himſelf. His Majeſty, then turning towards Jones, ſaid, 'Sir, you have 'hear what dey ſay; what puniſhment do you tink 'your man deſerve?'

Jones anſwered, 'He was ſorry for what had hap-'pened, and that Partridge ſhould make the huſband 'all the amends in his power:' he ſaid, 'he had 'very little money about him at that time;' and, putting his hand into his pocket, offered the fellow a guinea. To which he immediately anſwered, 'He 'hoped his honour would not think of giving him 'leſs than five.'

This ſum, after ſome altercation, was reduced to two; and Jones, having ſtipulated for the full forgiveneſs of both Partridge and his wife, was going to pay the money, when his Majeſty, reſtraining his hand, turned to the witneſs, and aſked him, 'At 'what time he had diſcovered the criminals?' To which he anſwered, 'That he had been deſired by the 'huſband to watch the motions of his wife from her 'firſt ſpeaking to the ſtranger, and that he had never

Digitized by Google

'loſt ſight of her afterwards till the crime had been 'committed.' The king then aſked, 'If the huſband was with him all that time in his lurking-place?' To which he anſwered in the affimative. His Egyptian Majeſty then addreſſed himſelf to the huſband as follows, 'Me be ſorry to ſee any gypſy dat have 'no more honour dan to ſell de honour of his wife 'for money. If you had de love for your wife, you 'would have prevented dis matter, and not endea-'vour to make her de whore, dat you might diſcover 'her. Me do order dat you have no money given 'you; for you deſerve puniſhment, not reward: Me 'do order derefore, dat you be de infamous gypſy, 'and do wear a pair of horns upon your forehead for 'one month, and dat your wife be called *de whore*, 'and pointed at all dat time: for you be de infa-'mous gypſy, but ſhe be no leſs the infamous whore.'

The gypſies immediately proceeded to execute the ſentence, and left Jones and Partridge alone with his Majeſty.

Jones greatly applauded the juſtices of the ſentence; upon which the king, turning to him, ſaid, 'Me be-'lieve you be ſurprize; for me ſuppoſe you have ver 'bad opinion of my people; me ſuppoſe you tink us 'all de thieves.'

'I muſt confeſs, Sir,' ſaid Jones, 'I have not heard 'ſo favourable an account of them as they ſeem to 'deſerve.'

'Me vil tell you,' ſaid the king, 'how the differ-'ence is between you and us. My people rob your 'people, and your people rob one another.'

Jones afterwards proceeded very gravely to ſing forth the happineſs of thoſe ſubjects who live under ſuch a magiſtrate.

Indeed their happineſs appears to have been ſo complete, that we are aware leſt ſome advocate for arbitrary power ſhould hereafter quote the caſe of thoſe people, as an inſtance of the great advantages which attend that government above all others.

And here we will make a conceſſion, which would not, perhaps, have been expected from us, that no limited form of government is capable of riſing to the

Digitized by Google

the ſame degree of perfection, or of producing the ſame benefits to ſociety with this. Mankind have never been ſo happy, as when the greateſt part of the then known world was under the dominion of a ſingle maſter; and this ſtate of their felicity continued during the reigns of five ſucceſſive princes *. This was the true æra of the golden age, and the only golden age which ever had any exiſtence, unleſs in the warm imagination of the poets, from the expulſion from Eden down to this day.

In reality, I know but of one ſolid objection to abſolute monarchy: the only defect, in which excellent conſtitution, ſeems to be the difficulty of finding any man adequate to the office of an abſolute monarch; for this indiſpenſibly requires three qualities very difficult, as it appears from hiſtory, to be found in princely natures: *firſt*, A ſufficient quantity of moderation in the prince, to be contented with all the power which is poſſible for him to have; *2dly*, Enough of wiſdom to know his own happineſs; and, *3dly*, Goodneſs ſufficient to ſupport the happineſs of others, when not only compatible with, but inſtrumental to his own.

Now, if an abſolute monarch, with all theſe great and rare qualifications, ſhould be allowed capable of conferriug the greateſt good on ſociety; it muſt be ſurely granted, on the contrary, that abſolute power, veſted in the hands of one who is deficient in them all, is likely to be attended with no leſs a degree of evil.

In ſhort, our own religion furniſhes us with adequate ideas of the bleſſing, as well as curſe, which may attend abſolute power. The pictures of heaven and of hell will place a very lively image of both before our eyes; for though the prince of the latter can have no power, but what he originally derives from the omnipotent ſovereign of the former, yet it plainly appears from ſcripture, that abſolute power in his infernal dominions is granted to their diabolical ruler. This is indeed the only abſolute power,

* Nerva, Trajan, Adrian, and the two Antonini.

which

Digitized by Google

which can by ſcripture be derived from Heaven. If therefore, the ſeveral tyrannies upon earth can prove any title to a divine authority, it muſt be derived from this original grant to the prince of darkneſs, and theſe ſubordinate deputations muſt conſequently come immediately from him whoſe ſtamp they ſo expreſsly bear.

To conclude, as the examples of all ages ſhew us, that mankind in general deſire power only to do harm, and when they obtain it uſe it for no other purpoſe, it is not conſonant with even the leaſt degree of prudence to hazard an alteration, where our hopes are poorly kept in countenance, by only two or three exceptions out of a thouſand inſtances to alarm our fears. In this caſe, it will be much wiſer to ſubmit to a few inconveniencies ariſing from the diſpaſſionate deafneſs of laws, than to remedy them by applying to the paſſionate open ears of a tyrant.

Nor can the example of the gypſies, though poſſibly they may have long been happy under this form of government, be here urged; ſince we muſt remember the very material reſpect in which they differ from all other people, and to which perhaps this their happineſs is entirely owing, namely, that they have no falſe honours among them, and that they look on ſhame as the moſt grievous puniſhment in the world.

CHAP. XIII.

A dialogue between Jones and Partridge.

THE honeſt lovers of liberty will, we doubt not, pardon that long digreſſion into which we were led, at the cloſe of the laſt chapter, to prevent our hiſtory from being applied to the uſe of the moſt pernicious doctrine, which prieſt-craft had ever the wickedneſs or the impudence to preach.

We will now proceed with Mr Jones, who, when the ſtorm was over, took leave of his Egyptian Majeſty, after many thanks for his courteous behaviour and kind entertainment, and ſet out for Coventry; to which

Digitized by Google

which place (for it was ſtill dark), a gypſy was ordered to conduct him.

Jones, having, by reaſon of his deviation, travelled eleven miles inſtead of ſix, and moſt of thoſe through very execrable roads, where no expedition could have been made in queſt of a midwife, did not arrive at Coventry till near twelve. Nor could he poſſibly get again into the ſaddle till paſt two; for poſt-horſes were now not eaſy to get; nor were the hoſtler or poſt-boy in half ſo great a hurry as himſelf, but choſe rather to imitate the tranquil diſpoſition of Partridge, who, being denied the nouriſhment of ſleep, took all opportunities to ſupply its place with every other kind of nouriſhment, and was never better pleaſed than when he arrived at an inn, nor ever more diſſatisfied than when he was again forced to leave it.

Jones now travelled poſt; we will follow him therefore, according to our cuſtom, and to the rules of Longinus, in the ſame manner. From Coventry he arrived at Daventry; from Daventry at Stratford; and from Stratford at Dunſtable, whither he came the next day a little after noon, and within a few hours after Sophia had left it; and though he was obliged to ſtay here longer than he wiſhed, while a ſmith, with great deliberation, ſhoed the poſt-horſe he was to ride, he doubted not but to overtake his Sophia, before ſhe ſhould ſet out from St Albans; at which place he concluded, and very reaſonably, that his Lordſhip would ſtop and dine.

And, had he been right in this conjecture, he moſt probably would have overtaken his angel at the aforeſaid place; but unluckily my lord had appointed a dinner to be prepared for him at his own houſe in London, and in order to enable him to reach that place in proper time, he had ordered a relay of horſes to meet him at St Albans. When Jones therefore arrived there, he was informed that the coach and ſix had ſet out two hours before.

If freſh poſt-horſes had been now ready, as they were not, it ſeemed ſo apparently impoſſible to overtake the coach before it reached London, that Partridge thought he had now a proper opportunity to remind

Digitized by Google

remind his friend of a matter which he seemed entirely to have forgotten: what this was the reader will guess, when we inform him, that Jones had ate nothing more than one poached egg, since he had left the ale-house where he had first met the guide returning from Sophia; for, with the gypsies, he had feasted only his understanding.

The landlord so entirely agreed with the opinion of Mr Partridge, that he no sooner heard the latter desire his friend to stay and dine, than he very readily put in his word, and, retracting his promise before-given of furnishing the horses immediately, he assured Mr Jones he would lose no time in bespeaking a dinner, which he said, could be got ready sooner than it was possible to get the horses up from the grass, and to prepare them for their journey by a feed of corn.

Jones was at length prevailed on, chiefly by the latter argument of the landlord, and now a joint of mutton was put down to the fire. While this was preparing, Partridge, being admitted into the same apartment with his friend or master, began to harangue in the following manner:

'Certainly, Sir, if ever man deserved a young lady, 'you deserve young Madam Western: for what a 'vast quantity of love must a man have, to be able to 'live upon it without any other food, as you do? I am 'positive I have eat thirty times as much within these 'last twenty-four hours as your honour, and yet I am 'almost famished; for nothing makes a man so hungry as travelling, especially in this cold raw weather. 'And yet I can't tell how it is, but your honour is 'seemingly in perfect good health, and you never looked better nor fresher in your life. It must be certainly love that you live upon.'

'And a very rich diet too, Partridge,' answered Jones. 'But did not fortune send me an excellent 'dainty yesterday? Dost thou imagine I cannot live 'more than twenty-four hours on this dear pocket-book.'

'Undoubtedly,' cries Partridge, 'there is enough 'in that pocket-book to purchase many a good meal. 'Fortune sent it to your honour very opportunely for 'present

Digitized by Google

'preſent uſe, as your honour's money muſt be almoſt 'out by this time.'

'What do you mean!' anſwered Jones; 'I hope 'you don't imagine that I ſhould be diſhoneſt enough, 'even if it belonged to any other perſon, beſides Miſs 'Weſtern—

'Diſhoneſt!' replied Partridge; 'Heaven forbid I 'ſhould wrong your honour ſo much; but where's 'the diſhoneſty in borrowing a little for preſent ſpend-'ing, ſince you will be ſo well able to pay the lady 'hereafter? No, indeed, I would have your honour 'pay it again, as ſoon as it is convenient, by all 'means; but where can be the harm in making uſe 'of it, now you want it? Indeed, if it belonged to 'a poor body, it would be another thing; but ſo 'great a lady to be ſure can never want it, eſpecially 'now as ſhe is along with a lord, who, it can't be 'doubted, will let her have whatever ſhe hath need 'of. Beſides, if ſhe ſhould want a little, ſhe cannot 'want the whole, therefore I would give her a little; 'but I would be hanged before I mentioned the ha-'ving found it at firſt, and before I got ſome money 'of my own; for London, I have heard, is the very 'worſt of places to be in without money. Indeed, 'if I had not known to whom it belonged, I might 'have thought it was the devil's money, and have 'been afraid to uſe it; but as you know otherwiſe, 'and came honeſtly by it, it would be an affront to 'Fortune to part with it all again, at the very time 'when you want it moſt; you can hardly expect ſhe 'ſhould ever do you ſuch another good turn; for '*fortuna nunquam perpetuo eſt bona.* You will do as 'you pleaſe, notwithſtanding all I ſay; but, for my 'part, I would be hanged before I mentioned a word 'of the matter.'

'By what I can ſee, Partridge,' cries Jones, 'hang-'ing is a matter *non longe alienum à Scævolæ ſtudiis.*' 'You ſhould ſay *alienus,*' ſays Partridge; 'I remem-'ber the paſſage; it is an example under *Communis, 'alienus, immunis, variis caſibus ſerviunt.*' 'If you 'do remember it,' cries Jones, 'I find you don't 'underſtand it; but I tell thee, friend, in plain Eng-'liſh,

Digitized by Google

'gliſh, that he, who finds another's property, and 'wilfully detains it from the known owner, deſerves, '*in foro conſcientiæ*, to be hanged no leſs than if he 'had ſtolen it. And as for this very identical bill, 'which is the property of my angel, and was once 'in her dear poſſeſſion, I will not deliver it into any 'hands but her own, upon any conſideration what-'ever; no, though I was hungry as thou art, and 'had no other means to ſatisfy my craving appetite. 'This I hope to do before I ſleep; but, if it ſhould 'happen otherwiſe, I charge thee, if thou wouldſt 'not incur my diſpleaſure for ever, not to ſhock me 'any more by the bare mention of ſuch deteſtable 'baſeneſs.'

'I ſhould not have mentioned it now,' cries Partridge, 'if it had appeared ſo to me; for I'm ſure 'I ſcorn any wickedneſs as much as another; but 'perhaps you know better; and yet I might have 'imagined that I ſhould not have lived ſo many 'years, and have taught ſchool ſo long, without 'being able to diſtinguiſh between *fas et nefas;* but 'it ſeems, we are all to live and learn. I remember 'my old ſchool-maſter, who was a prodigious great 'ſcholar, uſed often to ſay, *Polly matete cry town is 'my daſkalon;* the Engliſh of which he told us was, 'That a child may ſometimes teach his gandmother 'to ſuck eggs. I have lived to a fine purpoſe truly, 'if I am to be taught my grammar at this time of 'day. Perhaps, young gentleman, you may change 'your opinion, if you live to my years; for I remem-'ber I thought myſelf as wiſe when I was a ſtripling 'of one or two and twenty as I am now. I am ſure 'I always taught *alienus*, and my maſter read it ſo 'before me.'

There were not many inſtances in which Partridge could provoke Jones, nor were there many in which Partridge himſelf could have been hurried out of his reſpect. Unluckily, however, they had both hit on one of theſe. We have already ſeen Partridge could not bear to have his learning attacked, nor could Jones bear ſome paſſage or other in the foregoing ſpeech. And now, looking upon his companion with

Digitized by Google

a contemptuous and disdainful air, (a thing not usual with him,) he cried, 'Partridge, I see thou art a 'conceited old fool, and I wish thou art not likewise 'an old rogue. Indeed, if I was as well convinced 'of the latter as I am of the former, thou shouldst 'travel no farther in my company.'

The sage pedagogue was contented with the vent which he had already given to his indignation; and, as the vulgar phrase is, immediately drew in his horns. He said, 'He was sorry he had uttered any thing 'which might give offence, for that he had never 'intended it; but *Nemo omnibus horis sapit*.'

As Jones had the vices of a warm disposition, he was entirely free from those of a cold one; and, if his friends must have confessed his temper to have been a little too easily ruffled, his enemies must at the same time have confessed, that it as soon subsided; nor did it at all resemble the sea, whose swelling is more violent and dangerous after a storm is over, than while the storm itself subsists. He instantly accepted the submission of Partridge, shook him by the hand, and, with the most benign aspect imaginable, said twenty kind things, and at the same time very severely condemned himself, though not half so severely as he will most probably be condemned by many of our good readers.

Partridge was now highly comforted, as his fears of having offended were at once abolished, and his pride completely satisfied by Jones having owned himself in the wrong; which submission he instantly applied to what had principally nettled him, and repeated in a muttering voice, 'To be sure, Sir, your 'knowledge may be superior to mine in some things; 'but, as to the grammar, I think I may challenge 'any man living. I think at least I have that at my 'fingers end.'

If any thing could add to the satisfaction which the poor man now enjoyed, he received this addition by the arrival of an excellent shoulder of mutton, that at this instant came smoking to the table. On which, having both plentifully feasted, they again mounted their horses, and set forward for London.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XIV.

What happened to Mr Jones in his journey from St Albans.

THEY were got about two miles beyond Barnet, and it was now the dusk of the evening, when a genteel-looking man, but upon a very shabby horse, rode up to Jones, and asked him whether he was going to London, to which Jones answered in the affirmative. The gentleman replied, 'I should be obliged to you, Sir, if you will accept of my company: for it is very late, and I am a stranger to the road.' Jones readily complied with the request; and on they travelled together, holding that sort of discourse which is usual on such occasions.

Of this, indeed, robbery was the principal topic; upon which subject the stranger expressed great apprehensions; but Jones declared he had very little to lose, and consequently as little to fear. Here Partridge could not forbear putting in his word. 'Your honour,' said he, 'may think it a little, but I am sure if I had a hundred pound bank-note in my pocket, as you have, I should be very sorry to lose it; but, for my part, I never was less afraid in my life; for we are four of us, and, if we all stand by one another, the best man in England can't rob us. Suppose he should have a pistol, he can kill but one of us, and a man can die but once——That's my comfort, a man can die but once.'

Besides the reliance on superior numbers, a kind of valour which hath raised a certain nation among the moderns to a high pitch of glory, there was another reason for the extraordinary courage which Partridge now discovered; for he had at present as much of that quality as was in the power of liquor to bestow.

Our company were now arrived within a mile of Highgate, when the stranger turned short upon Jones, and, pulling out a pistol, demanded that little bank-note which Partridge had mentioned.

Jones

Digitized by Google

Jones was at first somewhat shocked at this unexpected demand; however, he presently recollected himself, and told the highwayman all the money he had in his pocket was entirely at his service; and, so saying, he pulled out upwards of three guineas, and offered to deliver it; but the other answered with an oath, That would not do. Jones answered coolly, he was very sorry for it, and returned the money into his pocket.

The highwayman then threatened, if he did not deliver the bank note that moment, he must shoot him; holding his pistol at the same time very near to his breast. Jones instantly caught hold of the fellow's hand, which trembled so that he could scarce hold the pistol in it, and turned the muzzle from him. A struggle then ensued, in which the former wrested the pistol from the hand of his antagonist, and both came from their horses on the ground together, the highwayman upon his back, and the victorious Jones upon him.

The poor fellow now began to implore mercy of the conqueror; for, to say the truth, he was in strength by no means a match for Jones. 'Indeed, Sir,' says he, 'I could have no intention to shoot you; for you 'will find the pistol was not loaded. This is the first 'robbery I ever attempted, and I have been driven 'by distress to this.'

At this instant, at about an hundred and fifty yards distance, lay another person on the ground, roaring for mercy in a much louder voice than the highwayman. This was no other than Partridge himself, who endeavouring to make his escape from the engagement, had been thrown from his horse, and lay flat on his face, not daring to look up, and expecting every minute to be shot.

In this posture he lay till the guide, who was no otherwise concerned than for his horses, having secured the stumbling beast, came up to him, and told him, his master had got the better of the highwayman.

Partridge leapt up at this news, and ran back to the place where Jones stood with his sword drawn in his hand to guard the poor fellow; which Partridge no sooner saw, than he cried out, 'Kill the villain, Sir, run him through the body, kill him this instant.'

Digitized by Google

Luckily however for the poor wretch, he had fallen into more merciful hands; for Jones, having examined the piſtol, and found it to be really unloaded, began to believe all the man had told him, before Partridge came up; namely, that he was a novice in the trade, and that he had been driven to it by the diſtreſs he mentioned, the greateſt indeed imaginable, that of five hungry children, and a wife lying in of a ſixth, in the utmoſt want and miſery: The truth of all which the highwayman moſt vehemently aſſerted, and offered to convince Mr Jones of it, if he would take the trouble to go to his houſe, which was not above two miles off; ſaying, 'That he deſired no favour, but upon 'condition of proving all he had alledged.'

Jones at firſt pretended that he would take the fellow at his word and go with him, declaring, that his fate ſhould depend entirely on the truth of his ſtory. Upon this the poor fellow immediately expreſſed ſo much alacrity, that Jones was perfectly ſatisfied with his veracity, and began now to entertain ſentiments of compaſſion for him. He returned the fellow his empty piſtol, adviſed him to think of honeſter means of relieving his diſtreſs, and gave him a couple of guineas for the immediate ſupport of his wife and his family, adding, 'he wiſhed he had more 'for his ſake, for the hundred pound that had been 'mentioned was not his own.'

Our readers will probably be divided in their opinions concerning this action; ſome may applaud it perhaps as an act of extraordinary humanity, while thoſe of a more ſaturnine temper will conſider it as a want of regard to that juſtice which every man owes his country. Partridge certainly ſaw it in that light; for he teſtified much diſſatisfaction on the occaſion, quoted an old proverb, and ſaid, He ſhould not wonder if the rogue attacked them again before they reached London.

The highwayman was full of expreſſions of thankfulneſs and gratitude. He actually dropt tears, or pretended ſo to do. He vowed he would immediately return home, and would never afterwards commit ſuch a tranſgreſſion: whether he kept his word or no, perhaps may appear hereafter.

Our

Digitized by Google

Our travellers, having remounted their horſes, arrived in town, without encountering any new mithap. On the road much pleaſant diſcourſe paſſed between Jones and Partridge, on the ſubject of their laſt adventure: in which Jones expreſſed a great compaſſion for thoſe highwaymen who are by unavoidable diſtreſs, driven as it were to ſuch illegal courſes, as generally bring them to a ſhameful death: 'I mean,' ſaid he, 'thoſe only whoſe higheſt guilt extends no 'farther than to robbery, and who are never guilty 'of cruelty nor inſult to any perſon, which is a circumſtance that I muſt ſay to the honour of our 'country, diſtinguiſhes the robbers of England from 'thoſe of all other nations; for murder is amongſt 'thoſe almoſt inſeparably incident to robbery.'

'No doubt,' anſwered Partridge, 'it is better to 'take away one's money than one's life; and yet it is 'very hard upon honeſt men, that they can't travel 'about their buſineſs, without being in danger of theſe 'villains. And to be ſure it would be better that all 'rogues were hanged out of the way, than that one 'honeſt man ſhould ſuffer. For my own part indeed, 'I ſhould not care to have the blood of any of them 'on my hands; but it is very proper for the law to 'hang them all. What right hath any man to take 'ſixpence from me, unleſs I give it him? Is there 'any honeſty in ſuch a man?'

'No ſurely,' cries Jones, 'no more than there is 'in him who takes the horſes out of another man's 'ſtable, or who applies to his own uſe the money 'which he finds, when he knows the right owner.'

Theſe hints ſtopt the mouth of Partridge, nor did he open it again, till Jones having thrown ſome ſarcaſtical jokes on his cowardice, he offered to excuſe himſelf on the inequality of fire-arms, ſaying, 'A 'thouſand naked men are nothing to one piſtol; for 'though it is true it will kill but one at a ſingle diſcharge, yet who can tell but that one may be himſelf?'

Digitized by Google

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK XIII.

Containing the ſpace of twelve days.

CHAP. I.

An invocation.

COME, bright love of fame, inſpire my glowing breaſt; not thee I call, who, over ſwelling tides of blood and tears, doſt bear the hero on to glory, while ſighs of millions waft his ſpreading ſails; but thee, fair, gentle maid, whom Mneſis, happy nymph, firſt on the banks of Hebrus did produce: Thee, whom Mæonia educated, whom Mantua charmed, and who on that fair hill which overlooks the proud metropolis of Britain, ſat'ſt, with thy Milton, ſweetly tuning thy heroic lyr; fill my raviſhed fancy with the hopes of charming ages yet to come. Foretel me that ſome tender maid, whoſe grandmother is yet unborn, hereafter, when under the fictitious name of Sophia, ſhe reads the real worth which once exiſted in my Charlotte, ſhall from her ſympathetic breaſt ſend forth the heaving ſigh. Do thou teach me not only to foreſee, but to enjoy, nay even to feed on future praiſe. Comfort me by a ſolemn aſſurance, that, when the little parlour

Digitized by Google

parlour in which I ſit at this inſtant, ſhall be reduced to a worſe furniſhed box, I ſhall be read, with honour, by thoſe who never knew nor ſaw me, and whom I ſhall neither know nor ſee.

And thou, much plumper dame, whom no airy forms nor phantoms of imagination clothe: whom the well-ſeaſoned beef, and pudding richly ſtained with plumbs, delight. Thee, I call; of whom in a Treckſchuyte in ſome Dutch canal the fat ufrow gelt, impregnated by a jolly merchant of Amſterdam, was delivered: in Grubſtreet ſchool didſt thou ſuck in the elements of thy erudition. Here haſt thou, in thy maturer age, taught poetry to tickle not the fancy, but the pride of the patron. Comedy from thee learns a grave and ſolemn air; while tragedy ſtorms loud, and rends the affrighted theatres with its thunder. To ſooth thy wearied limbs in ſlumber, alderman Hiſtory tells his tedious tale; and again to awaken thee, Monſieur Romance performs his ſurpriſing tricks of dexterity. Nor leſs thy well fed bookſeller obeys thy influence. By thy advice the heavy, unread, folio lump, which long had dozed on the duſty ſhelf, piece-mealed into numbers, runs nimbly through the nation. Inſtructed by thee ſome books, like quacks, impoſe on the world by promiſing wonders; while others turn beaus, and truſt all their merits to a gilded outſide. Come, thou jolly ſubſtance, with thy ſhining face, keep back thy inſpiration, but hold forth thy tempting rewards; thy ſhining, chinking heap; thy quickly-convertible bank-bill, big with unſeen riches; thy often varying ſtock; the warm, the comfortable houſe; and, laſtly, a fair portion of that bounteous mother, whoſe flowing breaſts yield redundant ſuſtenance for all her numerous offspring, did not ſome too greedily and wantonly drive their brethren from the teat. Come thou, and if I am too taſteleſs of thy valuable treaſures, warm my heart with the tranſporting thought of conveying them to others. Tell me, that through thy bounty, the prattling babes, whoſe innocent play hath often been interrupted by my labours, may one time be amply rewarded for them.

And

Digitized by Google

And now this ill-yoked pair, this lean shadow and this fat substance, have prompted me to write, whose assistance shall I invoke to direct my pen?

First, Genius; thou gift of Heaven; without whose aid in vain we struggle against the stream of nature. Thou who dost sow the generous seeds which art nourishes, and brings to perfection. Do thou kindly take me by the hand, and lead me through all the mazes, the winding labyrinths of nature. Initiate me into all those mysteries which profane eyes never beheld. Teach me, which to thee is no difficult task, to know mankind better than they know themselves. Remove that mist which dims the intellects of mortals, and causes them to adore men for their art or to detest them for their cunning in deceiving others, when they are in reality the objects only of ridicule, for deceiving themselves. Strip off the thin disguise of wisdom from self-conceit, of plenty from avarice, and of glory from ambition. Come thou that hast inspired thy Aristophanes, thy Lucian, thy Cervantes, thy Rabelais, thy Moliere, thy Shakespear, thy Swift, thy Marivaux, fill my pages with humour; till mankind learn the good-nature to laugh only at the follies of others, and the humility to grieve at their own.

And thou, almost the constant attendant on true genius, Humanity, bring all thy tender sensations. If thou hast already disposed of them all between thy Allen and thy Lyttleton, steal them a little while from their bosoms. Not without these the tender scene is painted. From these alone proceed the noble disinterested friendship, the melting love, the generous sentiment, the ardent gratitude, the soft compassion, the candid opinion; and all those strong energies of a good mind, which fill the moistened eyes with tears, the glowing cheeks with blood, and swell the heart with tides of grief, joy, and benevolence.

And thou, O Learning, (for without thy assistance nothing pure, nothing correct, can genius produce) do thou guide my pen. Thee in thy favourite fields, where the limpid, gently-rolling Thames washes thy Etonian banks, in early youth I have worshipped. To thee, at thy birchen altar, with true Spartan devotion, I have

Digitized by Google

I have ſacrificed my blood. Come then, and, from thy vaſt luxuriant ſtores, in long antiquity piled up, pour forth the rich profuſion. Open thy Mæonian and thy Mantuan coffers, with whatever elſe includes thy philoſophic, thy poetic, and thy hiſtorical treaſures, whether with Greek or Roman characters thou haſt choſen to inſcribe the ponderous cheſts: give me a while that key to all thy treaſures, which to thy Warburton thou haſt entruſted.

Laſtly, come, Experience, long converſant with the wiſe, the good, the learned, and the polite; nor with them only, but with every kind of character, from the miniſter at his levee, to the bailiff in his ſpunging-houſe; from the ducheſs at her drum, to the landlady behind her bar. From thee only can the manners of mankind be known; to which the recluſe pedant, however great his parts, or extenſive his learning may be, hath ever been a ſtranger.

Come all theſe, and more, if poſſible; for arduous is the taſk I have undertaken, and, without all your aſſiſtance, will, I find, be too heavy for me to ſupport. But, if you all ſmile on my labours, I hope ſtill to bring them to a happy concluſion.

CHAP. II.

What befel Mr Jones on his arrival in London.

THE learned Dr Miſaubin uſed to ſay, that the proper direction to him was, *To Dr Miſaubin, in the world*; intimating, that there were few people in it to whom his great reputation was not known. And perhaps, upon a very nice examination into the matter, we ſhall find that this circumſtance bears no inconſiderable part among the many bleſſings of grandeur.

The great happineſs of being known to poſterity, with the hopes of which we ſo delighted ourſelves in the preceding chapter, is the portion of few. To have the ſeveral elements which compoſe our names, as Sydenham expreſſes it, repeated a thouſand years hence, is a gift beyond the power of title and wealth; and is ſcarce to be purchaſed, unleſs by the ſword and the

Digitized by Google

the pen. But to avoid the ſcandalous imputation, while we yet live, of being *one whom nobody knows*, (a ſcandal by the bye as old as the days of Homer *), will always be the envied portion of thoſe, who have a legal title either to honour or eſtate.

From the figure, therefore, which the Iriſh peer, who brought Sophia to town, hath already made in this hiſtory, the reader will conclude, doubtleſs, it muſt have been an eaſy matter to have diſcovered his houſe in London, without knowing the particular ſtreet or ſquare which he inhabited, ſince he muſt have been *one whom every body knows*. To ſay the truth, ſo it would have been to any of thoſe tradeſmen who are accuſtomed to attend the regions of the great; for the doors of the great are generally no leſs eaſy to find, than it is difficult to get entrance into them. But Jones, as well as Partridge, was an entire ſtranger in London; and as he happened to arrive firſt in a quarter of the town, the inhabitants of which have very little intercourſe with the houſholders of Hanover or Groſvenor-ſquare, (for he entered through Gray's-Inn-Lane), ſo he rambled about ſome time, before he could even find his way to thoſe happy manſions, where fortune ſegregates from the vulgar thoſe magnanimous heroes, the deſcendants of ancient Britons, Saxons, or Danes, whoſe anceſtors, being born in better days, by ſundry kinds of merit, have entailed riches and honour on their poſterity.

Jones, being at length arrived at thoſe terreſtrial Elyſian fields, would now ſoon have diſcovered his lordſhip's manſion; but the peer unluckily quitted his former houſe when he went for Ireland; and, as he was juſt entered into a new one, the fame of his equipage had not yet ſufficiently blazed in the neighbourhood: ſo that, after a ſucceſsleſs enquiry till the clock had ſtruck eleven, Jones at laſt yielded to the advice of Partridge, and retreated to the Bull and Gate in Holborn, that being the inn where he had firſt alighted, and where he retired to enjoy that kind of repoſe, which uſually attends perſons in his circumſtances.

* See the 2d Odyſſey, ver. 175.

Early

Digitized by Google

Early in the morning he again set forth in pursuit of Sophia; and many a weary step he took to no better purpose than before. At last, whether it was that fortune relented, or whether it was no longer in her power to disappoint him, he came into the very street which was honoured by his lordship's residence; and, being directed to the house, he gave one gentle rap at the door.

The porter, who from the modesty of the knock had conceived no high idea of the person approaching, conceived but little better from the appearance of Mr Jones, who was dressed in a suit of fustian, and had by his side the weapon formerly purchased of the serjeant; of which, though the blade might be composed of well tempered steel, the handle was composed only of brass, and that none of the brightest. When Jones, therefore, enquired after the young lady, who had come to town with his lordship, this fellow answered surlily, 'That there were no ladies there.' Jones then desired to see the master of the house; but was informed that his lordship would see nobody that morning. And, upon growing more pressing, the porter said, 'he had 'positive orders to let no person in; but if you think 'proper,' said he, 'to leave your name, I will ac-'quaint his lordship; and, if you call another time, 'you shall know when he will see you.'

Jones now declared, 'that he had very particular 'business with the young lady, and could not depart 'without seeing her.' Upon which the porter, with no very agreeable voice or aspect, affirmed, 'that there 'was no young lady in that house, and consequently 'none could he see;' adding, 'sure you are the 'strangest man I ever met with; for you will not take 'an answer.'

I have often thought, that, by the particular description of Cerberus the porter of hell in the 6th Æneid, Virgil might possibly intend to satirize the porters of the great men in his time; the picture at least resembles those, who have the honour to attend at the doors of our great men. The porter in his lodge answers exactly to Cerberus in his den, and, like him, must be appeased by a sop, before access can

Digitized by Google

be gained to his master. Perhaps Jones might have seen him in that light, and have recollected the passage, where the Sybil, in order to procure an entrance for Æneas, presents the keeper of the Stygian avenue with such a sop. Jones, in like manner, now began to offer a bribe to the human Cerberus, which a footman overhearing, instantly advanced, and declared, 'if Mr Jones would give him the sum proposed, he 'would conduct him to the lady.' Jones instantly agreed, and was forthwith conducted to the lodging of Mrs Fitzpatrick, by the very fellow who had attended the ladies thither the day before.

Nothing more aggravates ill success than the near approach to good. The gamester, who loses his party at piquet by a single point, laments his bad luck ten times as much as he who never came within a prospect of the game. So in a lottery, the proprietors of the next numbers to that which wins the great prize, are apt to account themselves much more unfortunate than their fellow-sufferers. In short, these kind of hair-breadth missings of happiness look like the insults of fortune, who may be considered as thus playing tricks with us, and wantonly diverting herself at our expence.

Jones, who more than once already had experienced this frolicksome disposition of the heathen goddess, was now again doomed to be tantalized in the like manner: for he arrived at the door of Mrs Fitzpatrick, about ten minutes after the departure of Sophia. He now addressed himself to the waiting-woman belonging to Mrs Fitzpatrick, who told him the disagreeable news that the lady was gone, but could not tell him whither: and the same answer he afterwads received from Mrs Fitzpatrick herself. For as that lady made no doubt but that Mr Jones was a person detached from her uncle Western, in pursuit of his daughter, so she was too generous to betray her.

Though Jones had never seen Mrs Fitzpatrick, yet he had heard that a cousin of Sophia was married to a gentleman of that name. This, however, in the present tumult of his mind, never once recurred to his memory: but when the footman, who had conducted him from his lordship's, acquainted him with

Digitized by Google

the great intimacy between the ladies, and with their calling each other couſin, he then recollected the ſtory of the marriage which he had formerly heard; and, as he was preſently convinced that this was the ſame woman, he became more ſurpriſed at the anſwer which he had received, and very earneſtly deſired leave to wait on the lady herſelf; but ſhe as poſitively refuſed him that honour.

Jones, who, though he had never ſeen a court, was better bred than moſt who frequent it, was incapable of any rude or abrupt behaviour to a lady. When he had received, therefore, a peremptory denial, he retired for the preſent, ſaying to the waiting-woman, 'That, if this was an improper hour to wait on her 'lady, he would return in the afternoon; and that 'he then hoped to have the honour of ſeeing her.' The civility with which he uttered this, added to the great comelineſs of his perſon, made an impreſſion on the waiting-woman, and ſhe could not help anſwering, 'Perhaps, Sir, you may:' and, indeed, ſhe afterwards ſaid every thing to her miſtreſs, which ſhe thought moſt likely to prevail on her to admit a viſit from the handſome young gentleman; for ſo ſhe called him.

Jones very ſhrewdly ſuſpected, that Sophia herſelf was now with her couſin, and was denied to him; which he imputed to her reſentment of what had happened at Upton. Having, therefore, diſpatched Partridge to procure him lodgings, he remained all day in the ſtreet, watching the door where he thought his angel lay concealed; but no perſon did he ſee iſſue forth, except a ſervant of the houſe; and in the evening he returned to pay his viſit to Mrs Fitzpatrick, which that good lady at laſt condeſcended to admit.

There is a certain air of natural gentility, which it is neither in the power of dreſs to give, nor to conceal. Mr Jones, as hath been before hinted, was poſſeſſed of this in a very eminent degree. He met, therefore, with a reception from the lady, ſomewhat different from what his apparel ſeemed to demand; and, after he had paid her his proper reſpects, was deſired to ſit down.

Digitized by Google

The reader will not, I believe, be desirous of knowing all the particulars of this conversation, which ended very little to the satisfaction of poor Jones: for though Mrs Fitzpatrick soon discovered the lover, (as all women have the eyes of hawks in those matters), yet she still thought it was such a lover, as a generous friend of the lady should not betray her to. In short, she suspected this was the very Mr Blifil, from whom Sophia had flown; and all the answers, which she artfully drew from Jones concerning Mr Allworthy's family, confirmed her in this opinion. She therefore strictly denied any knowledge concerning the place whither Sophia was gone; nor could Jones obtain more than a permission to wait on her again the next evening.

When Jones was departed, Mrs Fitzpatrick communicated her suspicion concerning Mr Blifil to her maid, who answered, 'Sure, Madam, he is too pretty 'a man, in my opinion, for any woman in the world 'to run away from. I had rather fancy it is Mr Jones.' —'Mr Jones,' said the lady; 'what Jones?' For Sophia had not given the least hint of any such person in all their conversation: but Mrs Honour had been much more communicative, and had acquainted her sister Abigail with the whole history of Jones, which this now again related to her mistress.

Mrs Fitzpatrick no sooner received this information, than she immediately agreed with the opinion of her maid: and, what is very unaccountable, saw charms in the gallant happy lover, which she had overlooked in the slighted squire. 'Betty,' says she, 'you are certainly in the right: he is a very pretty 'fellow, and I don't wonder that my cousin's maid 'should tell you so many women are fond of him. I 'am sorry now I did not inform him where my cousin 'was; and yet, if he be so terrible a rake as you tell 'me, it is a pity she should ever see him any more; 'for what but her ruin can happen from marrying a 'rake and a beggar against her father's consent? I protest, if he be such a man as the wench described him 'to you, it is but an office of charity to keep her from 'him; and, I am sure, it would be unpardonable in

'me

Digitized by Google

'me to do otherwiſe, who have taſted ſo bitterly of 'the misfortunes attending ſuch marriages.'

Here ſhe was interrupted by the arrival of a viſitor, which was no other than his lordſhip; and as nothing paſſed at this viſit either new or extraordinary, or any ways material to this hiſtory, we ſhall here put an end to this chapter.

CHAP. III.

A project of Mrs Fitzpatrick, and her viſit to Lady Bellaſton.

WHEN Mrs Fitzpatrick retired to reſt, her thoughts were entirely taken up by her couſin Sophia and Mr Jones. She was indeed a little offended with the former for the diſingenuity, which ſhe now diſcovered. In which meditation ſhe had not long exerciſed her imagination, before the following conceit ſuggeſted itſelf; that could ſhe poſſibly become the means of preſerving Sophia from this man, and of reſtoring her to her father, ſhe ſhould in all human probability, by ſo great a ſervice to the family, reconcile to herſelf both her uncle and her aunt Weſtern.

As this was one of her moſt favourite wiſhes, ſo the hope of ſucceſs ſeemed ſo reaſonable, that nothing remained but to conſider of proper methods to accompliſh her ſcheme. To attempt to reaſon the caſe with Sophia, did not appear to her one of thoſe methods; for as Betty had reported from Mrs Honour, that Sophia had a violent inclination to Jones, ſhe conceived, that to diſſuade her from the match was an endeavour of the ſame kind, as it would be very heartily and earneſtly to intreat a moth not to fly into a candle.

If the reader will pleaſe to remember, that the acquaintance which Sophia had with lady Bellaſton, was contracted at the houſe of Mrs Weſtern, and muſt have grown at the very time when Mrs Fitzpatrick lived with this latter lady, he will want no information, that Mrs Fitzpatrick muſt have been acquainted with her likewiſe. They were beſides, both equally her diſtant relations.

Digitized by Google

After much conſideration, therefore, ſhe reſolved to go early in the morning to that lady, and endeavour to ſee her unknown to Sophia, and to acquaint her with the whole affair; for ſhe did not in the leaſt doubt but that the prudent lady, who had often ridiculed romantic love and indiſcreet marriages in her converſation, would very readily concur in her ſentiments concerning this match, and would lend her utmoſt aſſiſtance to prevent it.

This reſolution ſhe accordingly executed, and the next morning, before the ſun, ſhe huddled on her cloaths, and at a very unfaſhionable, unſeaſonable, unviſitable hour, went to lady Bellaſton, to whom ſhe got acceſs, without the leaſt knowledge or ſuſpicion of Sophia, who, though not aſleep, lay at that time awake in her bed, with Honour ſnoring by her ſide.

Mrs Fitzpatrick made many apologies for an early abrupt viſit at an hour when, ſhe ſaid, 'ſhe ſhould not 'have thought of diſturbing her ladyſhip, but upon 'buſineſs of the utmoſt conſequence.' She then opened the whole affair, told all ſhe had heard from Betty, and did not forget the viſit which Jones had paid to herſelf the preceeding evening.

Lady Bellaſton anſwered with a ſmile, 'Then you 'have ſeen this terrible man, Madam: pray is he ſo 'very fine a figure as he is repreſented? for Etoff en-'tertained me laſt night almoſt two hours with him. 'The wench I believe is in love with him by reputa-'tion.' Here the reader will be apt to wonder; but the truth is that Mrs Etoff, who had the honour to pin and unpin the lady Bellaſton, had received compleat information concerning the ſaid Mr Jones, and had faithfully conveyed the ſame to her lady laſt night, (or rather that morning), while ſhe was undreſſing; on which account ſhe had been detained in her office above the ſpace of an hour and a half.

The lady indeed, though generally well enough pleaſed with the narratives of Mrs Etoff at thoſe ſeaſons, gave an extraordinary attention to her account of Jones; for Honour had deſcribed him as a very handſome fellow, and Mrs Etoff in her hurry added ſo much to the beauty of his perſon to her report, that lady

Digitized by Google

lady Bellaſton began to conceive him to be a kind of miracle in nature.

The curioſity which her woman had inſpired, was now greatly increaſed by Mrs Fitzpatrick, who ſpoke as much in favour of the perſon of Jones, as ſhe had before ſpoken in diſpraiſe of his birth, character, and fortune.

When lady Bellaſton had heard the whole, ſhe anſwered gravely, 'Indeed, Madam, this is a matter of 'great conſequence. Nothing can certainly be more 'commendable than the part you act: and I ſhall be 'very glad to have my ſhare in the preſervation of a 'young lady of ſo much merit, and for whom I have 'ſo much eſteem.'

'Doth not your ladyſhip think,' ſays Mrs Fitzpatrick eagerly, 'that it would be the beſt way to write 'immediately to my uncle, and acquaint him where 'my couſin is?'

The lady pondered a little upon this, and thus anſwered:——'Why, no, Madam, I think not. Di. 'Weſtern hath deſcribed her brother to me to be ſuch 'a brute, that I cannot conſent to put any woman 'under his power who hath eſcaped from it I have 'heard he behaved like a monſter to his own wife; 'for he is one of thoſe wretches who think they have 'a right to tyrannize over us, and from ſuch I ſhall 'ever eſteem it the cauſe of my ſex to reſcue any 'woman who is ſo unfortunate to be under their 'power.—— The buſineſs, dear couſin, will be only to 'keep Miſs Weſtern from ſeeing this young fellow, 'till the good company, which ſhe will have an op'portunity of meeting here, give her a properer 'turn.'

'If he ſhould find her out, Madam,' anſwered the other, 'your ladyſhip may be aſſured he will leave 'nothing unattempted to come at her.'

'But, Madam,' replied the lady, 'it is impoſſible 'he ſhould come here—though indeed it is poſſible 'he may get ſome intelligence where ſhe is, and then 'may lurk about the houſe—I wiſh therefore I knew 'his perſon.'

Digitized by Google

'Is there no way, Madam, by which I could have 'a ſight of him? for otherwiſe you know, couſin, ſhe 'may contrive to ſee him here without my knowledge.' Mrs Fitzpatrick anſwered, 'That he had threatened 'her with another viſit that afternoon, and that if her 'ladyſhip pleaſed to do her the honour of calling upon 'her then, ſhe would hardly fail of ſeeing him between 'ſix and ſeven; and if he came earlier, ſhe would, by 'ſome means or other, detain him till her ladyſhip's 'arrival.'—Lady Bellaſton replied, 'ſhe would come 'the moment ſhe could get from dinner, which ſhe 'ſuppoſed would be by ſeven at fartheſt: for that it 'was abſolutely neceſſary ſhe ſhould be acquainted 'with his perſon. Upon my word, Madam,' ſays ſhe, 'it was very good to take this care of Miſs Weſ-'tern; but common humanity, as well as regard to 'our family, requires it of us both; for it would be a 'dreadful match indeed.'

Mrs Fitzpatrick failed not to make a proper return to the compliment which lady Bellaſton had beſtowed on her couſin, and after ſome little immaterial converſation, withdrew; and getting as faſt as ſhe could into her chair, unſeen by Sophia or Honour, returned home.

CHAP. IV.

Which conſiſts of viſiting.

MR Jones had walked within ſight of a certain door during the whole day, which, though one of the ſhorteſt, appeared to him to be one of the longeſt in the whole year. At length the clock having ſtruck five, he returned to Mrs Fitzpatrick, who, though it was a full hour earlier than the decent time of viſiting, received him very civilly, but ſtill perſiſted in her ignorance concerning Sophia.

Jones, in aſking for his angel, had dropped the word couſin; upon which Mrs Fitzpatrick ſaid, 'Then, Sir, you know we are related; and as we 'are, you will permit me the right of enquiring into 'the particulars of your buſineſs with my couſin.'

Here

Digitized by Google

Here Jones hesitated a good while, and at last answered, He had a considerable sum of money of hers in his hands, which he desired to deliver to her. He then produced the pocket-book, and acquainted Mrs Fitzpatrick with the contents, and with the method in which they came into his hands. He had scarce finished his story, when a most violent noise shook the whole house. To attempt to describe this noise to those who have heard it, would be in vain: and to aim at giving any idea of it to those who have never heard the like, would be still more vain: for it may be truly said,

——————*Non acuta*
Sic geminant Corybantes æra,

"The priests of Cybele do not so rattle their sounding "brass."

In short, a footman knocked, or rather thundered at the door. Jones was a little surprised at the sound, having never heard it before; but Mrs Fitzpatrick very calmly said, that as some company were coming, she could not make him any answer now; but if he pleased to stay till they were gone, she intimated she had something to say to him.

The door of the room now flew open, and, after pushing in her hoop sideways before her, entered lady Bellaston, who having first made a very low curtsey to Mrs Fitzpatrick, and as low a one to Mr Jones, was ushered to the upper end of the room.

We mention these minute matters for the sake of some country ladies of our acquaintance, who think it contrary to the rules of modesty to bend their knees to a man.

The company were hardly well settled, before the arrival of the peer lately mentioned, caused a fresh disturbance, and a repetition of ceremonials.

These being over, the conversation began to be (as the phrase is) extremely brilliant. However, as nothing past in it which can be thought material to this history, or, indeed, very material in itself, I shall omit the relation; the rather as I have known some very fine polite conversation grow extremely dull, when

Digitized by Google

when tranſcribed into books, or repeated on the ſtage. Indeed this mental repaſt is a dainty, of which thoſe who are excluded from polite aſſemblies, muſt be contented to remain as ignorant as they muſt of the ſeveral dainties of the French cookery, which are ſerved only at the tables of the great. To ſay the truth, as neither of theſe are adapted to every taſte, they might both be often thrown away on the vulgar.

Poor Jones was rather a ſpectator of this elegant ſcene than an actor in it; for though in the ſhort interval before the peer's arrival, lady Bellaſton firſt, and afterwards Mrs Fitzpatrick, had addreſſed ſome of their diſcourſe to him; yet no ſooner was the noble lord entered, than he engroſſed the whole attention of the two ladies to himſelf; and as he took no more notice of Jones than if no ſuch perſon had been preſent, unleſs by now and then ſtaring at him, the ladies followed his example.

The company had now ſtaid ſo long, that Mrs Fitzpatrick plainly perceived they all deſigned to ſtay out each other. She therefore reſolved to rid herſelf of Jones, he being the viſitant to whom ſhe thought the leaſt ceremony was due. Taking therefore an opportunity of a ceſſation of chat, ſhe addreſſed herſelf gravely to him, and ſaid, 'Sir, I ſhall not poſſibly 'be able to give you an anſwer to-night, as to that 'buſineſs; but if you pleaſe to leave word where I 'may ſend to you to-morrow.'—

Jones had natural, but not artificial good-breeding. Inſtead therefore of communicating the ſecret of his lodgings to a ſervant, he acquainted the lady herſelf with it particularly, and ſoon after very ceremoniouſly withdrew

He was no ſooner gone, than the great perſonages, who had taken no notice of him preſent, began to take much notice of him in his abſence; but if the reader hath already excuſed us from relating the more brilliant part of this converſation, he will ſurely be very ready to excuſe the repetition of what may be called vulgar abuſe: though, perhaps, it may be material to our hiſtory to mention an obſervation of lady Bellaſton, who took her leave in a few minutes after him,

Digitized by Google

him, and then said to Mrs Fitzpatrick, at her departure, 'I am satisfied on the account of my cousin; she 'can be in no danger from this fellow.'

Our history shall follow the example of lady Bellaston, and take leave of the present company, which was now reduced to two persons; between whom, as nothing passed, which in the least concerns us or our reader, we shall not suffer ourselves to be diverted by it from matters which must seem of more consequence to all those who are at all interested in the affairs of our hero.

CHAP. V.

An adventure which happened to Mr Jones at his lodgings, with some account of a young gentleman who lodged there, and of the mistress of the house, and her two daughters.

THE next morning, as early as it was decent, Jones attended at Mrs Fitzpatrick's door, where he was answered that the lady was not at home; an answer which surprised him the more, as he had walked backwards and forwards in the street from break of day; and if she had gone out, he must have seen her. This answer, however, he was obliged to receive, and not only now, but to five several visits which he made her that day.

To be plain with the reader, the noble peer had, from some reason or other, perhaps from a regard for the lady's honour, insisted that she should not see Mr Jones, whom he looked on as a scrub, any more; and the lady had complied in making that promise, to which we now see her so strictly adhere.

But as our gentle reader may possibly have a better opinion of the young gentleman than her ladyship, and may even have some concern, should it be apprehended, that during this unhappy separation from Sophia, he took up his residence either at an inn, or in the street; we shall now give an account of his lodging, which was indeed in a very reputable house, and in a very good part of the town.

Mr

Mr Jones then had often heard Mr Allworthy mention the gentlewoman at whose house he used to lodge when he was in town. This person, who, as Jones likewise knew, lived in Bond-street, was the widow of a clergyman, and was left by him at his decease, in possession of two daughters, and of a compleat set of manuscript sermons.

Of these two daughters, Nancy, the elder, was now arrived at the age of seventeen, and Betty, the younger, at that of ten.

Hither Jones had dispatched Partridge, and in this house he was provided with a room for himself in the second floor, and with one for Partridge in the fourth.

The first floor was inhabited by one of those young gentlemen, who, in the last age, were called men of wit and pleasure about town, and properly enough: for as men are usually denominated from their business or profession, so pleasure may be said to have been the only business or profession of those gentlemen to whom fortune had made all useful occupations unnecessary. Play houses, coffee-houses, and taverns were the scenes of their rendezvous. Wit and humour were the entertainments of their looser hours, and love was the business of their more serious moments. Wine and the muses conspired to kindle the brightest flames in their breasts; nor did they only admire, but some were able to celebrate the beauty they admired, and all to judge of the merit of such compositions.

Such therefore were properly called the men of wit and pleasure; but I question whether the same appellation may, with the same propriety, be given to those young gentlemen of our times, who have the same ambition to be distinguished for parts. Wit certainly they have nothing to do with. To give them their due, they soar a step higher than their predecessors, and may be called men of wisdom and vertù (take heed you do not read virtue). Thus at an age when the gentlemen above-mentioned employed their time in toasting the charms of a woman, or in making sonnets in her praise; in giving their opinion of a play at the theatre, or of a poem at Will's or But-

Digitized by Google

Button's; these gentlemen are considering of methods to bribe a corporation, or meditating speeches for the house of commons, or rather for the magazines; but the science of gaming is that which above all others employs their thoughts. These are the studies of their graver hours, while for their amusements they have the vast circle of connoisseurship, painting, music, statuary, and natural philosophy, or rather *unnatural*, which deals in the wonderful, and knows nothing of nature, except her monsters and imperfections.

When Jones had spent the whole day in vain enquiries after Mrs Fitzpatrick, he returned at last disconsolate to his apartment. Here, while he was venting his grief in private, he heard a violent uproar below stairs; and soon after a female voice begged him for Heaven's sake to come and prevent murder. Jones, who was never backward on any occasion to help the distressed, immediately ran down stairs; when, stepping into the dining-room, whence all the noise issued, he beheld the young gentleman of wisdom and vertù, just before mentioned, pinned close to the wall by his footman, and a young woman standing by, wringing her hands, and crying out, 'He will be murdered, he will be murdered;' and indeed the poor gentleman seemed in some danger of being choaked, when Jones flew hastily to his assistance, and rescued him, just as he was breathing his last, from the unmerciful clutches of his enemy.

Though the fellow had received several kicks and cuffs from the little gentleman, who had more spirit than strength, he had made a kind of scruple of conscience to strike his master, and would have contented himself with only choaking him; but towards Jones he bore no such respect: he no sooner therefore found himself a little roughly handled by his new antagonist, than he gave him one of those punches in the guts, which, though the spectators at Broughton's amphitheatre have such exquisite delight in seeing them, convey but very little pleasure in the feeling.

The

Digitized by Google

The lusty youth had no sooner received this blow, than he meditated a most grateful return; and now ensued a combat between Jones and the footman, which was very fierce, but short; for this fellow was no more able to contend with Jones, than his master had before been to contend with him.

And now Fortune, according to her usual custom, reversed the face of affairs. The former victor lay breathless on the ground, and the vanquished gentleman had recovered breath enough to thank Mr Jones for his seasonable assistance: he received likewise the hearty thanks of the young woman present, who was indeed no other than Miss Nancy, the eldest daughter of the house.

The footman, having now recovered his legs, shook his head at Jones, and with a sagacious look cry'd,—'O d—n me, I'll have nothing more to do with you; 'you have been upon the stage, or I am d—nably 'mistaken:' And indeed we may forgive this his suspicion; for such was the agility and strength of our hero, that he was perhaps a match for one of the first-rate-boxers, and could, with great ease, have beaten all the muffled * graduates of Mr Broughton's school.

The master, foaming with wrath, ordered his man immediately to strip, to which the latter very readily agreed, on condition of receiving his wages. This condition was presently complied with, and the fellow was discharged.

* Lest posterity should be puzzled by this epithet, I think proper to explain it by an advertisement which was published Feb. 1. 1747.

N B. Mr Broughton proposes, with proper assistance, to open an academy at his house in the Hay-market, for the instruction of those who are willing to be initiated in the mystery of boxing; where the whole theory and practice of that truly British art, with all the various stops, blows, cross-buttocks, &c. incident to combatants, will be fully taught and explained; and, that persons of quality and distinction may not be deterred from entering into *A course of those lectures*, they will be given with the utmost tenderness and regard to the delicacy of the frame and constitution of the pupil; for which reason muffles are provided, that will effectually secure them from the inconveniency of black eyes, broken jaws, and bloody noses.

Digitized by Google

And now the young gentleman, whose name was Nightingale, very strenuously insisted, that his deliverer should take part of a bottle of wine with him; to which Jones, after much entreaty, consented; though more out of complaisance than inclination; for the uneasiness of his mind fitted him very little for conversation at this time. Miss Nancy likewise, who was the only female then in the house, her mamma and sister being both gone to the play, condescended to favour them with her company.

When the bottle and glasses were on the table, the gentleman began to relate the occasion of the preceding disturbance.

'I hope, Sir,' said he to Jones, 'you will not 'from this accident conclude, that I make a custom 'of striking my servants; for I assure you this is the 'first time I have been guilty of it in my remembrance, and I have passed by many provoking faults 'in this very fellow, before he could provoke me 'to it; but when you hear what hath happened this 'evening, you will, I believe, think me excusable. 'I happened to come home several hours before my 'usual time, when I found four gentlemen of the 'cloth at whist by my fire;—and my Hoyle, Sir,— 'my best Hoyle, which cost me a guinea, lying open 'on the table, with a quantity of porter spilt on one 'of the most material leaves of the whole book. This, 'you will allow, was provoking: but I said nothing 'till the rest of the honest company were gone, and 'then gave the fellow a gentle rebuke, who, instead 'of expressing any concern, made me a pert answer, "That servants must have their diversions as well "as other people; that he was sorry for the accident "which had happened to the book, but that several "of his acquaintance had bought the same for a "shilling; and that I might stop as much in his "wages, if I pleased:' I now gave him a severer 'reprimand than before, when the rascal had the 'insolence to ——In short, he imputed my early 'coming home to——In short, he cast a reflection— 'He mentioned the name of a young lady in a man-

'ner—in such a manner that incensed me beyond all 'patience: and, in my passion, I struck him.'

Jones answered, 'That he believed no person liv-'ing would blame him: for my part,' said he, 'I 'confess I should, on the last-mentioned provocation, 'have done the same thing.'

Our company had not sat long before they were joined by the mother and daughter, at their return from the play. And now they all spent a very chearful evening together; for all but Jones were heartily merry, and even he put on as much constrained mirth as possible. Indeed half his natural flow of animal spirits, joined to the sweetness of his temper, was sufficient to make a most amiable companion; and, notwithstanding the heaviness of his heart, so agreeable did he make himself on the present occasion, that, at their breaking up, the young gentleman earnestly desired his further acquaintance. Miss Nancy was well pleased with him; and the widow, quite charmed with her new lodger, invited him with the other next morning to breakfast.

Jones on his part was no less satisfied. As for Miss Nancy, though a very little creature, she was extremely pretty, and the widow had all the charms which can adorn a woman near fifty. As she was one of the most innocent creatures in the world, so she was one of the most chearful. She never thought, nor spoke, nor wished any ill, and had constantly that desire of pleasing, which may be called the happiest of all desires in this, that it scarce ever fails of attaining its ends, when not disgraced by affectation. In short, though her power was very small, she was in her heart one of the warmest friends. She had been a most affectionate wife, and was a most fond and tender mother.

As our history doth not, like a news-paper, give great characters to people who never were heard of before, nor will ever be heard of again, the reader may hence conclude, that this excellent woman will hereafter appear to be of some importance in our history.

Nor

Digitized by Google

Nor was Jones a little pleaſed with the young gentleman himſelf, whoſe wine he had been drinking. He thought he diſcerned in him much good ſenſe, tho' a little too much tainted with town foppery; but what recommended him moſt to Jones were ſome ſentiments of great generoſity and humanity, which occaſionally dropt from him, and particularly many expreſſions of the higheſt diſintereſtedneſs in the affair of love: on which ſubject the young gentleman delivered himſelf in a language, which might have very well become an Arcadian ſhepherd of old, and which appeared very extraordinary when proceeding from the lips of a modern fine gentleman; but he was only one by imitation, and meant by nature for a much better character.

CHAP. VI.

What arrived while the company were at breakfaſt, with ſome hints concerning the government of daughters.

OUR company brought together in the morning the ſame good inclinations towards each other, with which they had ſeparated the evening before; but poor Jones was extremely diſconſolate; for he had juſt received information from Partridge, that Mrs Fitzpatrick had left her lodging, and that he could not learn whither ſhe was gone. This news highly afflicted him, and his countenance, as well as his behaviour, in defiance of all his endeavours to the contrary, betrayed manifeſt indications of a diſordered mind.

The diſcourſe turned at preſent, as before, on love; and Mr Nightingale again expreſſed many of thoſe warm, generous, and diſintereſted ſentiments upon this ſubject, which wiſe and ſober men call romantic, but which wiſe and ſober women generally regard in a better light. Mrs Miller (for ſo the miſtreſs of the houſe was called), greatly approved theſe ſentiments; but, when the young gentleman appealed to Miſs Nancy, ſhe anſwered only, 'That ſhe believed the 'gentleman, who had ſpoke the leaſt, was capable 'of feeling the moſt.'

Digitized by Google

This compliment was so apparently directed to Jones, that we should have been sorry had he passed it by unregarded. He made her indeed a very polite answer, and concluded with an oblique hint, that her own silence subjected her to a suspicion of the same kind; for indeed she had scarce opened her lips either now, or the last evening.

'I am glad, Nanny,' says Mrs Miller, 'the gentleman hath made the observation; I protest, I am 'almost of his opinion. What can be the matter with 'you, child? I never saw such an alteration. What 'is become of all your gaiety? Would you think, 'Sir, I used to call her my little prattler? She hath 'not spoke twenty words this week.'

Here their conversation was interrupted by the entrance of a maid servant, who brought a bundle in her hands, which, she said, 'was delivered by a porter for 'Mr Jones.' She added, 'that the man immediate-'ly went away, saying it required no answer.'

Jones expressed some surprize on this occasion, and declared it must be some mistake; but, the maid persisting that she was certain of the name, all the women were desirous of having the bundle immediately opened; which operation was at length performed by little Betsey, with the consent of Mr Jones; and the contents were found to be a domino, a mask, and a masquerade-ticket.

Jones was now more positive than ever, in asserting, that these things must have been delivered by mistake; and Mrs Miller herself expressed some doubt, and said, 'she knew not what to think.' But, when Mr Nightingale was asked, he delivered a very different opinion: 'All I can conclude from it, Sir,' said he, 'is, that you are a very happy man; for I make no 'doubt, but these were sent you by some lady whom 'you will have the happiness of meeting at the mas-'querade.'

Jones had not a sufficient degree of vanity to entertain any such flattering imagination; nor did Mrs Miller herself give much assent to what Mr Nightingale had said, till Miss Nancy, having lifted up the domino,

Digitized by Google

domino, a card dropped from the ſleeve, in which was written as follow:

"To Mr Jones.

"The queen of the fairies ſends you this;
"Uſe her favours not amiſs."

Mrs Miller and Miſs Nancy now both agreed with Mr Nightingale; nay, Jones himſelf was almoſt perſuaded to be of the ſame opinion; and, as no other lady but Mrs Fitzpatrick, he thought knew his lodging, he began to flatter himſelf with ſome hopes, that it came from her, and that he might poſſibly ſee his Sophia. Theſe hopes had ſurely very little foundation; but as the conduct of Mrs Fitzpatrick, in not ſeeing him according to her promiſe, and in quitting her lodgings, had been very odd and unaccountable, he conceived ſome faint hopes, that ſhe (of whom he had formerly heard a very whimſical character,) might poſſibly intend to do him that ſervice in a ſtrange manner, which ſhe declined doing by more ordinary methods. To ſay the truth, as nothing certain could be concluded from ſo odd and uncommon an incident, he had the greater latitude to draw what imaginary concluſions from it he pleaſed. As his temper, therefore, was naturally ſanguine, he indulged it on this occaſion, and his imagination worked up a thouſand conceits, to favour and ſupport his expectations of meeting his dear Sophia in the evening.

Reader, if thou haſt any good wiſhes towards me, I will fully repay them, by wiſhing thee to be poſſeſſed of this ſanguine diſpoſition of mind; ſince, after having read much, and conſidered long on that ſubject of happineſs, which hath employed ſo many great pens, I am almoſt inclined to fix it in the poſſeſſion of this temper, which puts us in a manner out of the reach of fortune, and makes us happy without her aſſiſtance. Indeed, the ſenſations of pleaſure it gives are much more conſtant, as well as much keener than thoſe which that blind lady beſtows; nature having wiſely contrived, that ſome ſatiety and languor ſhould

Digitized by Google

be annexed to all our real enjoyments, leſt we ſhould be ſo taken up by them, as to be ſtopped from further purſuits. I make no manner of doubt but that, in this light, we may ſee the imaginaray future chancellor juſt called to the bar, the archbiſhop in crape, and the prime miniſter at the tail of an oppoſition, more truly happy than thoſe who are inveſted with all the power and profit of theſe reſpective offices.

Mr Jones having now determined to go to the maſquerade that evening, Mr Nightingale offered to conduct him thither. The young gentleman, at the ſame time, offered tickets to Miſs Nancy and her mother; but the good woman would not accept them. She ſaid, 'ſhe did not conceive the harm which ſome 'people imagined in a maſquerade; but that ſuch ex-'travagant diverſions were proper only for perſons 'of quality and fortune, and not for young women 'who were to get their living, and could at beſt hope 'to be married to a good tradeſman.'——'A tradeſ-'man!' cries Nightingale, 'you ſhan't undervalue 'my Nancy. There is not a nobleman upon earth 'above her merit.' 'O fie, Mr Nightingale,' anſwered Mrs Miller, 'you muſt not fill the girl's head 'with ſuch fancies: but, if it was her good luck,' ſays her mother with a ſimper, 'to find a gentleman 'of your generous way of thinking, I hope, ſhe would 'make a better return to his generoſity, than to gave 'her mind up to extravagant pleaſures. Indeed, 'where young ladies bring great fortunes themſelves, 'they have ſome right to inſiſt on ſpending what is 'their own; and, on that account, I have heard the 'gentlemen ſay, a man has ſometimes a better bar-'gain with a poor wife, than with a rich one.—But 'let my daughters marry whom they will, I ſhall en-'deavour to make them bleſſings to their huſbands: I 'beg, therefore, I may hear of no more maſquerades. 'Nancy is, I am certain, too good a girl to deſire to 'go; for ſhe muſt remember, when you carried her 'thither laſt year, it almoſt turned her head; and 'ſhe did not return to herſelf, or to her needle, in a 'month afterwards.'

Though

Digitized by Google

Though a gentle ſigh which ſtole from the boſom of Nancy, ſeemed to argue ſome ſecret diſapprobation of theſe ſentiments, ſhe did not dare openly to oppoſe them. For as this good woman had all the tenderneſs, ſo ſhe had preſerved all the authority of a parent; and as her indulgence to the deſires of her children was reſtrained only by her fears for their ſafety and future welfare, ſo ſhe never ſuffered thoſe commands, which proceeded from ſuch fears, to be either diſobeyed or diſputed. And this the young gentleman who had lodged two years in the houſe, knew ſo well, that he preſently acquieſced in the refuſal.

Mr Nightingale, who grew every minute fonder of Jones, was very deſirous of his company that day to dinner at the tavern, where he offered to introduce him to ſome of his acquaintance; but Jones begged to be excuſed, 'as his clothes,' he ſaid, 'were not yet come 'to town.'

To confeſs the truth, Mr Jones was now in a ſituation, which ſometimes happens to be the caſe of young gentlemen of much better figure than himſelf. In ſhort, he had not one penny in his pocket; a ſituation in much greater credit among the ancient philoſophers, than among the modern wiſe men who live in Lombard ſtreet, or thoſe who frequent White's chocolate-houſe. And, perhaps, the great honours which thoſe philoſophers have aſcribed to an empty pocket, may be one of the reaſons of that high contempt in which they are held in the aforeſaid ſtreet and chocolate-houſe.

Now, if the ancient opinion, that men might live very comfortably on virtue only, be, as the modern wiſe men juſt above-mentioned pretend to have diſcovered, a notorious error; no leſs falſe is, I apprehend, that poſition of ſome writers of romance, that a man can live altogether on love: for however delicious repaſts this may afford to ſome of our ſenſes or appetites, it is moſt certain it can afford none to others. Thoſe, therefore, who have placed too great a confidence in ſuch writers, have experienced their error when it was too late; and have found that love was no more capable of allaying hunger, than a roſe is capable

Digitized by Google

pable of delighting the ear, or a violin of gratifying the ſmell.

Notwithſtanding, therefore, all the delicacies which love had ſet before him, namely, the hopes of ſeeing Sophia at the maſquerade; on which, however ill-founded his imagination might be, he had voluptuouſly feaſted during the whole day, the evening no ſooner came, than Mr Jones began to languiſh for ſome food of a groſſer kind. Partridge diſcovered this by intuition, and took the occaſion to give ſome oblique hints concerning the bank-bill, and when theſe were rejected with diſdain, he collected courage enough once more to mention a return to Mr Allworthy.

'Partridge,' cries Jones, 'you cannot ſee my for-'tune in a more deſperate light than I ſee it myſelf; 'and I begin heartily to repent, that I ſuffered you to 'leave a place where you was ſettled, and to follow 'me. However, I inſiſt now on your returning home; 'and for the expence and trouble which you have ſo 'kindly put yourſelf to on my account, all the clothes 'I left behind in your care, I deſire you would take as 'your own. I am ſorry I can make you no other ac-'knowledgment.'

He ſpoke theſe words with ſo pathetic an accent, that Partridge, among whoſe vices ill nature or hard-neſs of heart were not numbered, burſt into tears; and after ſwearing he would not quit him in his diſtreſs, he began with the moſt earneſt intreaties to urge his return home. 'For Heaven's ſake, Sir,' ſays he, 'do but conſider; what can your honour do? How 'is it poſſible you can live in this town without mo-'ney? Do what you will, Sir, or go wherever you 'pleaſe, I am reſolved not to deſert you.—But pray, 'Sir, conſider,——do pray, Sir, for your own ſake, 'take it into your conſideration; and I'm ſure,' ſays he, 'that your own good ſenſe will bid you return 'home.'

'How often ſhall I tell thee,' anſwered Jones, 'that I have no home to return to? Had I any hopes 'that Mr Allworthy's doors would be open to receive 'me, I want no diſtreſs to urge me:—nay, there is 'no other cauſe upon earth, which could detain me

'a moment

Digitized by Google

'a moment from flying to his preſence; but alas! 'that I am for ever baniſhed from. His laſt words 'were,—O Partridge, they ſtill ring in my ears.—— 'His laſt words were, when he gave me a ſum of mo- 'ney; what it was I know not, but conſiderable I'm 'ſure it was.——His laſt words were, 'I am reſolved "from this day forward, on no account, to converſe "with you any more."

Here paſſion ſtopt the mouth of Jones, as ſurpriſe for a moment did that of Partridge: but he ſoon recovered the uſe of ſpeech, and after a ſhort preface, in which he declared he had no inquiſitiveneſs in his temper, enquired what Jones meant by a conſiderable ſum; he knew not how much; and what was become of the money.

In both theſe points he now received full ſatisfaction; on which he was proceeding to comment, when he was interrupted by a meſſage from Mr Nightingale, who deſired his maſter's company in his apartment.

When the two gentlemen were both attired for the maſquerade, and Mr Nightingale had given orders for chairs to be ſent for, a circumſtance of diſtreſs occurred to Jones, which will appear very ridiculous to many of my readers. This was how to procure a ſhilling; but if ſuch readers will reflect a little on what they have themſelves felt from the want of a thouſand pound, or perhaps of ten or twenty, to execute a favourite ſcheme, they will have a perfect idea of what Mr Jones felt on this occaſion. For this ſum, therefore, he applied to Partridge, which was the firſt he had permitted him to advance, and was the laſt he intended that poor fellow ſhould advance in his ſervice. To ſay the truth, Partridge had lately made no offer of this kind; whether it was that he deſired to ſee the bank-bill broke in upon, or that diſtreſs ſhould prevail on Jones to return home, or from what other motive it proceeded, I will not determine.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

Containing the whole humours of a masquerade.

OUR cavaliers now arrived at that temple, where Heydegger, the great *arbiter deliciarum*, the great high priest of pleasure presides; and, like other heathen priests, imposes on his votaries by the pretended presence of the deity, when in reality no such deity is there.

Mr Nightingale having taken a turn or two with his companion, soon left him, and walked off with a female, saying, 'Now you are here, Sir, you must 'beat about for your own game.'

Jones began to entertain strong hopes that his Sophia was present; and these hopes gave him more spirits than the lights, the music, and the company; though these are pretty strong antidotes against the spleen. He now accosted every woman he saw, whose stature, shape, or air, bore any resemblance to his angel: to all of whom he endeavoured to say something smart, in order to engage an answer, by which he might discover that voice which he thought it impossible he should mistake. Some of these answered, by a question, in a squeaking voice, 'Do you know me?' Much the greater number said, 'I don't know you, 'Sir;' and nothing more. Some called him an impertinent fellow; some made him no answer at all; some said, 'Indeed I don't know your voice, and I shall 'have nothing to say to you;' and many gave him as kind answers as he could wish, but not in the voice he desired to hear.

Whilst he was talking with one of these last, (who was in the habit of a shepherdess), a lady in a domino came up to him, and slapping him on the shoulder, whispered him at the same time in the ear, 'If you 'talk any longer with that trollop, I will acquaint 'Miss Western.'

Jones no sooner heard that name, than immediately quitting his former companion, he applied to the domino, begging and intreating her to shew him the

Digitized by Google

the lady she had mentioned, if she was then in the room.

The mask walked hastily to the upper end of the innermost apartment before she spoke; and then, instead of answering him, sat down and declared she was tired. Jones sat down by her, and still persisted in his entreaties; at last the lady coldly answered, 'I 'imagined Mr Jones had been a more discerning 'lover than to suffer any disguise to conceal his mis-'tress from him.' 'Is she here then, Madam?' replied Jones, with some vehemence: upon which the lady cried, 'Hush, Sir, you will be observed. I 'promise you upon my honour, Miss Western is not 'here.'

Jones now taking the mask by the hand, fell to entreating her, in the most earnest manner, to acquaint him where he might find Sophia; and when he could obtain no direct answer, he began to upbraid her gently for having disappointed him the day before; and concluded, saying, 'Indeed, my good fairy 'queen, I know your Majesty very well, notwith-'standing the affected disguise of your voice. In-'deed, Mrs Fitzpatrick, it is a little cruel to divert 'yourself at the expence of my torments.'

The mask answered, 'Though you have so ingeniously discovered me, I must still speak in the same 'voice, lest I should be known by others. And do 'you think, good Sir, that I have no greater regard 'for my cousin, than to assist in carrying on an affair 'between you two, which must end in her ruin, as 'well as your own? Besides, I promise you my cou-'sin is not mad enough to consent to her own de-'struction, if you are so much her enemy as to tempt 'her to it.'

'Alas, Madam,' said Jones, 'you little know my 'heart, when you call me an enemy of Sophia.'

'And yet to ruin any one,' cries the other, 'you 'will allow, is the act of an enemy; and when by 'the same act you must knowingly and certainly bring 'ruin on yourself, is it not folly or madness, as well 'as guilt? Now, Sir, my cousin hath very little more 'than her father will please to give her; very little for

'one

Digitized by Google

'one of her fashion; you know him, and you know 'your own situation.'

Jones vowed he had no such design on Sophia; 'That he would rather suffer the most violent of 'deaths, than sacrifice her interest to his desires. He "said he knew how unworthy he was of her every way; that he had long ago resolved to quit all such 'aspiring thoughts, but that some strange accidents 'had made him desirous to see her once more, when 'he promised he would take leave of her for ever. 'No, Madam,' concluded he, 'my love is not of 'that base kind, which seeks its own satisfaction, at 'the expence of what is most dear to its object. I 'would sacrifice every thing to the possession of my 'Sophia, but Sophia herself.'

Though the reader may have already conceived no very sublime idea of the virtue of the lady in the mask; and though possibly she may hereafter appear not to deserve one of the first characters of her sex; yet it is certain, these generous sentiments made a strong impression upon her, and greately added to the affection she had before conceived for our young hero.

The lady now, after silence of a few moments, said, 'She did not see his pretensions to Sophia so 'much in the light of presumption, as of imprudence. 'Young fellows,' says she, 'can never have too aspi-'ring thoughts. I love ambition in a young man, 'and I would have you cultivate it as much as possi-'ble. Perhaps you may succeed with those who are 'infinitely superior in fortune; nay, I am convinced 'there are women——But don't you think me a 'strange creature, Mr Jones, to be thus giving ad-'vice to a man, with whom I am so little acquainted, 'and one with whose behaviour to me I have so little 'reason to be pleased?'

Here Jones began to apologize, and to hope he had not offended in any thing he had said of her cousin. ——To which the mask answered, 'And are you so 'little versed in the sex, to imagine you can well af-'front a lady more, than by entertaining her with 'your passion for another woman? If the fairy queen 'had conceived no better opinion of your gallantry,

Digitized by Google

'she would scarce have appointed you to meet her at 'a masquerade.'

Jones had never less inclination to an amour than at present; but gallantry to the ladies was among his principles of honour; and he held it as much incumbent on him to accept a challenge to love, as if it had been a challenge to fight. Nay, his very love to Sophia made it necessary for him to keep well with the lady, as he made no doubt but she was capable of bringing him into the presence of the other.

He began therefore to make a very warm answer to her last speech, when a mask, in the character of an old woman, joined them. This mask was one of those ladies who go to a masquerade only to vent ill-nature, by telling people rude truths, and by endeavouring, as the phrase is, to spoil as much sport as they are able. This good lady, therefore, having observed Jones, and his friend, whom she well knew, in close consultation together in a corner of the room, concluded she could no where satisfy her spleen better than by interrupting them. She attacked them, therefore, and soon drove them from their retirement; nor was she contented with this, but pursued them to every place which they shifted to avoid her; till Mr Nightingale seeing the distress of his friend, at last relieved him, and engaged the old woman in another pursuit.

While Jones and his mask were walking together about the room, to rid themselves of the teaser, he observed his lady speak to several masks, with the same freedom of acquaintance, as if they had been barefaced. He could not help expressing his surprize at this, saying, 'Sure, Madam, you must have infi-'nite discernment, to know people in all disguises.' To which the lady answered, 'You cannot conceive 'any thing more insipid and childish than a masque-'rade to the people of fashion, who in general know 'one another as well here, as when they meet in an 'assembly or drawing-room; nor will any woman 'of condition converse with a person with whom she 'is not acquainted. In short, the generality of per-'sons whom you see here, may more properly be said

Digitized by Google

'to kill time in this place than in any other; and 'generally retire from hence more tired than from 'the longeſt ſermon. To ſay the truth, I begin to 'be in that ſituation myſelf; and if I have any fa- 'culty at gueſſing, you are not much better pleaſed. 'I proteſt it would be almoſt charity in me to go 'home for your ſake.' 'I know but one charity 'equal to it,' cries Jones, 'and that is, to ſuffer me 'to wait on you home.' 'Sure,' anſwered the lady, 'you have a ſtrange opinion of me, to imagine, that 'upon ſuch an acquaintance, I would let you into 'my doors at this time o'night. I fancy you impute 'the friendſhip I have ſhown my couſin, to ſome 'other motive. Confeſs honeſtly; don't you conſider 'this contrived interview as little better than a down- 'right aſſignation? Are you uſed, Mr Jones, to 'make theſe ſudden conqueſts?' 'I am not uſed, Ma- 'dam,' ſaid Jones, 'to ſubmit to ſuch ſudden con- 'queſts; but as you have taken my heart by ſurprize, 'the reſt of my body has a right to follow; ſo you 'muſt pardon me if I reſolve to attend you wherever 'you go.' He accompanied theſe words with ſome proper actions; upon which the lady, after a gentle rebuke, and ſaying their familiarity would be obſer- ved, told him, 'She was going to ſup with an ac- 'quaintance, whither ſhe hoped he would not follow 'her: for if you ſhould,' ſaid ſhe, 'I ſhall be 'thought an unaccountable creature, though my 'friend indeed is not cenſorious, yet I hope you won't 'follow me: I proteſt I ſhall not know what to ſay, 'if you do.

The lady preſently after quitted the maſquerade, and Jones, notwithſtanding the ſevere prohibition he had received, preſumed to attend her. He was now reduced to the ſame dilemma we have mentioned be- fore, namely, the want of a ſhilling, and could not relieve it by borrowing as before. He therefore walked boldly on after the chair in which his lady rode, purſued by a grand huzza, from all the chair- men preſent, who wiſely take the beſt care they can to diſcountenance all walking a foot by their betters. Luckily, however, the gentry who attend at the opera- houſe,

Digitized by Google

houſe, were too buſy to quit their ſtations, and as the lateneſs of the hour prevented him from meeting many of their brethren in the ſtreet, he proceeded without moleſtation, in a dreſs, which, at another ſeaſon, would have certainly raiſed a mob at his heels.

The lady was ſet down in a ſtreet, not far from Hanover-ſquare, where the door being preſently opened, ſhe was carried in; and the gentleman, without any ceremony, walked in after her.

Jones and his companion were now together in a very well furniſhed and well warm'd room, when the female ſtill ſpeaking in her maſquerade voice, ſaid, ſhe was ſurprized at her friend, who muſt abſolutely have forgot her appointment: at which, after venting much reſentment, ſhe ſuddenly expreſſed ſome apprehenſion from Jones, and aſked him what the world would think of their having been alone together in a houſe at that time of night? But inſtead of a direct anſwer to ſo important a queſtion, Jones began to be very importunate with the lady to unmaſk; and at length having prevailed, there appeared not Mrs Fitzpatrick, but the lady Bellaſton herſelf.

It would be tedious to give the particular converſation, which conſiſted of very common and ordinary occurrences, and which laſted from two till ſix o'clock in the morning. It is ſufficient to mention all of it that is any wiſe material to this hiſtory. And this was a promiſe that the lady would endeavour to find out Sophia, and in a few days bring him to an interview with her, on condition that he would then take his leave of her. When this was thoroughly ſettled, and a ſecond meeting in the evening appointed at the ſame place, they ſeparated; the lady returned to her houſe, and Jones to his lodgings.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

Containing a ſcene of diſtreſs, which will appear very extraordinary to moſt of our readers.

JONES having refreſhed himſelf with a few hours ſleep, ſummoned Partridge to his preſence; and delivering him a bank-note of fifty pounds, ordered him to go and change it. Partridge received this with ſparkling eyes, though when he came to reflect farther, it raiſed in him ſome ſuſpicions not very advantageous to the honour of his maſter; to theſe the dreadful idea he had of the maſquerade, the diſguiſe in which his maſter had gone out and returned, and his having been abroad all night, contributed. In plain language, the only way he could poſſibly find to account for the poſſeſſion of this note was by robbery: and, to confeſs the truth, the reader, unleſs he ſhould ſuſpect it was owing to the generoſity of lady Bellaſton, can hardly imagine any other.

To clear therefore the honour of Mr Jones, and to do juſtice to the liberality of the lady, he had really received this preſent from her, who, though ſhe did not give much into the hackney charities of the age, ſuch as building hoſpitals, &c. was not, however, entirely void of that chriſtian virtue, and conceived, (very rightly I think), that a young fellow of merit, without a ſhilling in the world, was no improper object of this virtue.

Mr Jones and Mr Nightingale had been invited to dine this day with Mrs Miller. At the appointed hour therefore the two young gentlemen, with the two girls, attended in the parlour, where they waited from three till almoſt five before the good woman appeared. She had been out of town to viſit a relation, of whom, at her return, ſhe gave the following account.

'I hope, gentlemen, you will pardon my making 'you wait; I am ſure if you knew the occaſion.—I 'have been to ſee a couſin of mine, about ſix miles 'off, who now lies in.—It ſhould be a warning to 'all perſons (ſays ſhe, looking at her daughters), how 'they

Digitized by Google

'they marry indiſcreetly. There is no happineſs in 'this world without a competency. O Nancy! how 'ſhall I deſcribe the wretched condition in which I 'found your poor couſin! ſhe hath ſcarce lain in a 'week, and there was ſhe, this dreadful weather, in 'a cold room, without any curtains to her bed, and 'not a buſhel of coals in her houſe to ſupply her with 'fire: her ſecond ſon, that ſweet little fellow, lies ill 'of a quinzy in the ſame bed with his mother; for 'there is no other bed in the houſe. Poor little 'Tommy! I believe, Nancy, you will never ſee your 'favourite any more; for he is really very ill. The 'reſt of the children are in pretty good health; but 'Molly, I am afraid, will do herſelf an injury: ſhe 'is but thirteen years old, Mr Nightingale, and yet 'in my life, I never ſaw a better nurſe: ſhe tends 'both her mother and her brother; and what is won-'derful in a creature ſo young, ſhe ſhews all the chear-'fulneſs in the world to her mother; and yet I ſaw 'her—I ſaw the poor child, Mr Nightingale, turn 'about, and privately wipe the tears from her eyes.' Here Mrs Miller was prevented, by her own tears, from going on, and there was not, I believe, a perſon preſent, who did not accompany in them; at length ſhe a little recovered herſelf, and proceeded thus: 'In all this diſtreſs the mother ſupports her 'ſpirits in a ſurpriſing manner. The danger of her 'ſon ſits heavieſt upon her, and yet ſhe endeavours 'as much as poſſible to conceal even this concern, on 'her huſband's account. Her grief, however, ſome-'times gets the better of all her endeavours; for ſhe 'was always extravagantly fond of this boy, and a 'moſt ſenſible, ſweet-tempered creature it is. I pro-'teſt I was never more affected in my life than when 'I heard the little wretch, who is hardly yet ſeven 'years old, while his mother was wetting him with 'her tears, begged her to be comforted.——'Indeed, "mamma,' cried the child, 'I ſhan't die; God Al-"mighty, I'm ſure, won't take Tommy away; let "heaven be ever ſo fine a place, I had rather ſtay here "and ſtarve with you and my papa, than go to it.'— 'Pardon me, gentlemen, I can't help it,' (ſays ſhe, wiping

Digitized by Google

wiping her eyes), 'such sensibility and affection in a 'child——And yet, perhaps, he is least the object 'of pity; for a day or two will, perhaps, place him 'beyond the reach of all human evils. The father 'is indeed most worthy of compassion. Poor man! 'his countenance is the very picture of horror, and he 'looks rather like one dead than alive. Oh Heaven! 'what a scene did I behold at my first entering into 'the room! The good creature was lying behind the 'bolster, supporting at once both his child and his 'wife. He had nothing on but a thin waistcoat; for 'his coat was spread over the bed to supply the want 'of blankets.——When he rose up at my entrance, I 'scarce knew him. As comely a man, Mr Jones, with- 'in this fortnight, as you ever beheld; Mr Nightin- 'gale hath seen him. His eyes sunk, his face pale, 'with a long beard; his body shivering with cold, 'and worn with hunger too; for my cousin says, she 'can hardly prevail upon him to eat.—He told me 'himself in a whisper; he told me—I can't repeat 'it——he said, he could not bear to eat the bread 'his children wanted. And yet, (can you believe it, 'gentlemen?) in all this misery, his wife has as good 'caudle, as if she lay in in the midst of the greatest 'affluence; I tasted it, and I scarce ever tasted bet- 'ter.—The means of procuring her this, he said, he 'believed was sent him by an angel from heaven. I 'know not what he meant; for I had not spirits 'enough to ask a single question.'

'This was a love match, as they call it, on both 'sides; that is, a match between two beggars. I must 'indeed say I never saw a fonder couple; but what is 'their fondness good for, but to torment each other?'

"Indeed, mamma,' cries Nancy, 'I have always "looked on my cousin Anderson (for that was her "name), as one of the happiest of women. 'I am 'sure,' says Mrs Miller, 'the case at present is much 'otherwise, for any one might have discerned, that 'the tender consideration of each other's sufferings 'makes the most intolerable part of their calamity, 'both to the husband and the wife. Compared to 'which, hunger and cold, as they affect their own

'persons

Digitized by Google

'persons only, are scarce evils. Nay, the very children, the youngest, which is not two years old, excepted, feel in the same manner; for they are a most loving family, and, if they had but a bare competency, would be the happiest people in the world.' 'I never saw the least sign of misery at her house,' replied Nancy; 'I am sure my heart bleeds for what you now tell me'—'O child,' answered the mother, 'she hath always endeavoured to make the best of every thing. They have always been in great distress; but indeed this absolute ruin hath been brought upon them by others. The poor man was bail for the villain his brother; and about a week ago, the very day before her lying-in, their goods were all carried away, and sold by an execution. He sent a letter to me of it by one of the bailiffs, which the villain never delivered--What must he think of my suffering a week to pass before he heard of me?'

It was not with dry eyes that Jones heard this narrative; when it was ended, he took Mrs Miller apart with him into another room, and, delivering her his purse, in which was the sum of 50l. desired her to send as much of it as she thought proper to these poor people. The look which Mrs Miller gave Jones, on this occasion, is not easy to be described. She burst into a kind of agony of transport, and cried out,—— 'Good heavens! is there such a man in the world?' ——But, recollecting herself, she said, 'Indeed I know one such; but can there be another?' 'I hope, Madam,' cries Jones, 'there are many who have common humanity; for to relieve such distresses in our fellow-creatures, can hardly be called more.' Mrs Miller then took ten guineas, which were the utmost he could prevail with her to accept, and said, 'She would find some means of conveying them early the next morning;' adding, that she had herself done some little matter for the poor people, and had not left them in quite so much misery as she found them.'

They then returned to the parlour, where Nightingale expressed much concern at the dreadful situation of these wretches, whom indeed he knew; for he had seen

Digitized by Google

ſeen them more than once at Mrs Miller's. He inveighed againſt the folly of making one's ſelf liable for the debts of others, vented many bitter execrations againſt the brother, and concluded with wiſhing ſomething could be done for the unfortunate family. 'Suppoſe, Madam,' ſaid he, 'you ſhould recommend them to Mr Allworthy? Or what think you 'of a collection? I will give them a guinea with all 'my heart.'

Mrs Miller made no anſwer; and Nancy, to whom her mother had whiſpered the generoſity of Jones, turned pale upon the occaſion; though, if either of them was angry with Nightingale, it was ſurely without reaſon; for the liberality of Jones, if he had known it, was not an example which he had any obligation to follow; and there are thouſands who would not have contributed a ſingle halfpenny, as indeed he did not in effect, for he made no tender of any thing; and therefore, as the others thought proper to make no demand, he kept his money in his pocket.

I have in truth obſerved, and ſhall never have a better opportunity than at preſent to communicate my obſervation, that the world are in general divided into two opinions concerning charity, which are the very reverſe of each other. One party ſeems to hold, that all acts of this kind are to be eſteemed as voluntary gifts, and however little you give, (if indeed no more than your good wiſhes), you acquire a great degree of merit in ſo doing—Others, on the contrary, appear to be as firmly perſuaded, that beneficence is a poſitive duty, and that, whenever the rich fall greatly ſhort of their ability in relieving the diſtreſſes of the poor, their pitiful largeſſes are ſo far from being meritorious, that they have only performed their duty by halves, and are in ſome ſenſe more contemptible than thoſe who have entirely neglected it.

To reconcile theſe different opinions is not in my power. I ſhall only add, that the givers are generally of the former ſentiment, and the receivers are almoſt univerſally inclined to the latter.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IX.

Which treats of matters of a very different kind from thoſe in the preceding chapter.

IN the evening Jones met his lady again, and a long converſation again enſued between them; but as it conſiſted only of the ſame ordinary occurrences as before, we ſhall avoid mentioning particulars, which we deſpair of rendering agreeable to the reader, unleſs he is one whoſe devotion to the fair ſex, like that of the papiſts to their ſaints, wants to be raiſed by the help of pictures. But I am ſo far from deſiring to exhibit ſuch pictures to the public, that I would wiſh to draw a curtain over thoſe that have been lately ſet forth in certain French novels; very bungling copies of which have been preſented us here, under the name of tranſlations.

Jones grew ſtill more and more impatient to ſee Sophia; and, finding, after repeated interviews with lady Bellaſton, no likelihood of obtaining this by her means, (for on the contrary, the lady began to treat even the mention of the name of Sophia with reſentment), he reſolved to try ſome other method. He made no doubt but that lady Bellaſton knew where his angel was, ſo he thought it moſt likely, that ſome of her ſervants ſhould be acquainted with the ſame ſecret. Partridge therefore was employed to get acquainted with thoſe ſervants, in order to fiſh this ſecret out of them.

Few ſituations can be imagined more uneaſy, than that to which his poor maſter was at preſent reduced: for, beſides the difficulties he met with in diſcovering Sophia, beſides the fears he had of having diſobliged her, and the aſſurances he had received from lady Bellaſton of the reſolution which Sophia had taken againſt him, and of her having purpoſely concealed herſelf from him, which he had ſufficient reaſon to believe might be true, he had ſtill a difficulty to combat, which it was not in the power of his miſtreſs to remove, however kind her inclination might have been.

Digitized by Google

been. This was the expoſing of her to be diſinherited of all her father's eſtate, the almoſt inevitable conſequence of their coming together without a conſent, which he had no hopes of ever obtaining.

Add to all theſe the many obligations which lady Bellaſton, whoſe violent fondneſs we can no longer conceal, had heaped upon him; ſo that by her means he was now become one of the beſt dreſs'd men about town and was not only relieved from thoſe ridiculous diſtreſſes we have before mentioned, but was actually raiſed to a ſtate of affluence, beyond what he had ever known.

Now though there are many gentlemen, who very well reconcile it to their conſciences to poſſeſs themſelves of the whole fortune of a woman, without making her any kind of return, yet, to a mind the proprietor of which doth not deſerve to be hang'd, nothing is I believe more irkſome, than to ſupport love with gratitude only, eſpecially where inclination pulls the heart a contrary way. Such was the unhappy caſe of Jones; for, though the virtuous love he bore to Sophia, and which left very litle affection for any other woman, had been entirely out of the queſtion, he could never have been able to have made an adequate return to the generous paſſion of this lady, who had indeed been once an object of deſire, but was now entered at leaſt into the autumn of life, though ſhe wore all the gaiety of youth both in her dreſs and manner; nay, ſhe contrived ſtill to maintain the roſes in her cheeks; but theſe, like flowers forced out of ſeaſon by art, had none of that lively blooming freſhneſs with which nature, at the proper time, bedecks her own productions. She had beſides a certain imperfection, which renders ſome flowers, though very beautiful to the eye, very improper to be placed in a wilderneſs of ſweets, and what above all others is moſt diſagreeable to the breath of love.

Though Jones ſaw all theſe diſcouragements on the one ſide, he felt his obligations full as ſtrongly on the other; nor did he leſs plainly diſcern the ardent paſſion whence thoſe obligations proceeded, the extreme

Digitized by Google

treme violence of which, if he had failed to equal, he well knew the lady would think him ungrateful; and, what is worse, he would have thought himself so. He knew the tacit consideration upon which all her favours were conferred, and, as his necessity obliged him to accept them, so his honour he concluded forced him to pay the price. This therefore he resolved to do, whatever misery it cost him, and to devote himself to her, from that great principle of justice, by which the laws of some countries oblige a debtor, who is no otherwise capable of discharging his debt, to become the slave of his creditor.

While he was meditating on these matters, he received the following note from the lady.

'A very foolish, but a very perverse accident, hath 'happened since our last meeting, which makes it 'improper I should see you any more at the usual 'place. I will, if possible, contrive some other place 'by to-morrow. In the mean time, adieu.'

This disappointment perhaps the reader may conclude was not very great; but, if it was, he was quickly relieved; for, in less than an hour afterwards, another note was brought him from the same hand, which contained as follows.

'I have altered my mind since I wrote, a change, 'which, if you are no stranger to the tenderest of all 'passions, you will not wonder at. I am now re'solved to see you this evening at my own house, 'whatever may be the consequence. Come to me ex'actly at seven; I dine abroad, but will be at home 'by that time. A day I find, to those that sincerely 'love, seems longer than I imagined.

'If you should accidentally be a few moments 'before me, bid them shew you into the drawing'room.'

To confess the truth, Jones was less pleased with this last epistle, than he had been with the former,

as

Digitized by Google

as he was prevented by it from complying with the earneſt entreaties of Mr Nightingale, with whom he had now contracted much intimacy and friendſhip. Theſe entreaties were to go with that young gentleman and his company to a new play, which was to be acted that evening, and which a very large party had agreed to damn, from ſome diſlike they had taken to the author, who was a friend to one of Mr Nightingale's acquaintance. And this ſort of fun, our hero, we are aſhamed to confeſs, would willingly have preferred to the above kind appointment; but his honour got the better of his inclination.

Before we attend him to this intended interview with the lady, we think proper to account for both the preceding notes, as the reader may poſſibly be not a little ſurpriſed at the imprudence of lady Bellaſton in bringing her lover to the very houſe where her rival was lodged.

Firſt then, the miſtreſs of the houſe where theſe lovers had hitherto met, and who had been for ſome years a penſioner to that lady, was now become a methodiſt, and had that very morning waited upon her ladyſhip, and, after rebuking her very ſeverely for her paſt life, had poſitively declared, that ſhe would on no account be inſtrumental in carrying on any of her affairs for the future.

The hurry of ſpirits, into which this accident threw the lady, made her deſpair of poſſibly finding any other convenience to meet Jones that evening; but, as ſhe began a little to recover from her uneaſineſs at the diſappointment, ſhe ſet her thoughts to work, when luckily it came into her head to propoſe to Sophia to go to the play, which was immediately conſented to, and a proper lady provided for her companion. Mrs Honour was likewiſe diſpatched with Mrs Etoff on the ſame errand of pleaſure; and thus her own houſe was left free for the ſafe reception of Mr Jones, with whom ſhe promiſed herſelf two or three hours of uninterrupted converſation, after her return from the place where ſhe dined, which was at a friend's houſe in a pretty diſtant part of the town, near her old

Digitized by Google

place of assignation, where she had engaged herself before she was well apprized of the revolution that had happened in the mind and morals of her late confidante.

CHAP. X.

A chapter, which though short may draw tears from some eyes.

MR Jones was just dressed to wait on lady Bellaston, when Mrs Miller rapped at his door; and, being admitted, very earnestly desired his company below stairs to drink tea in the parlour.

Upon his entrance into the room, she presently introduced a person to him, saying, 'This, Sir, is my 'cousin, who hath been so greatly beholden to your 'goodness, for which he begs to return you his sincerest thanks.'

The man had scarce entered upon that speech, which Mrs Miller had so kindly prefaced, when both Jones and he, looking stedfastly at each other, shewed at once the utmost tokens of surprise. The voice of the latter began instantly to faulter; and, instead of finishing his speech, he sunk down into a chair, crying, 'It is so; I am convinced it is so!'

'Bless me, what's the meaning of this?' cries Mrs Miller; 'you are not ill, I hope, cousin? Some water; 'a dram this instant.'

'Be not frighted, Madam,' cries Jones; 'I have 'almost as much need of a dram as your cousin. We 'are equally surprised at this unexpected meeting. 'Your cousin is an acquaintance of mine, Mrs Miller.'

'An acquaintance,' cries the man.——'Oh Heaven!'

'Ay, an acquaintance!' repeated Jones, 'and an 'honoured acquaintance too. When I do not love 'and honour the man who dares venture every thing 'to preserve his wife and children from instant de'struction, may I have a friend capable of disowning 'me in adversity.'

Digitized by Google

'O you are an excellent young man,' cries Mrs Miller;—'yes, indeed, poor creature! he hath ventured every thing; if he had not had one of the best of constitutions, it must have killed him.'

'Cousin,' cries the man, who had now pretty well recovered himself; 'this is the angel from heaven whom I meant. This is he to whom, before I saw you, I owed the preservation of my Peggy. He it was to whose generosity every comfort, every support, which I have procured her, was owing. He is indeed the worthiest, bravest, noblest of all human beings O cousin, I have obligations to this gentleman of such a nature!'—

'Mention nothing of obligations,' cries Jones eagerly; 'not a word: I insist upon it, not a word;' (meaning, I suppose, that he would not have him betray the affair of the robbery to any person)—'If, by the trifle you have received from me, I have preserved a whole family, sure pleasure was never bought so cheap.'

'O, Sir,' cries the man, 'I wish you could this instant see my house. If any person had ever a right to the pleasure you mention, I am convinced it is yourself My cousin tells me, she acquainted you with the distress in which she found us. That, Sir, is all greatly removed, and chiefly by your goodness.——My children have now a bed to lie on,———and they have———they have——— eternal blessings reward you for it———they have bread to eat. My little boy is recovered; my wife is out of danger, and I am happy. All, all owing to you, Sir, and to my cousin here, one of the best of women. Indeed, Sir, I must see you at my house—Indeed my wife must see you, and thank you.——My children too must express their gratitude.—Indeed, Sir, they are not without a sense of their obligation; but what is my feeling when I reflect to whom I owe, that they are now capable of expressing their gratitude! ———O, Sir! the little hearts which you have warmed had now been cold as ice without your assistance.'——

Here

Digitized by Google

Here Jones attempted to prevent the poor man from proceeding; but indeed the overflowing of his own heart would of itself have ſtopped his words. And now Mrs Miller likewiſe began to pour forth thankſgivings, as well in her own name as in that of her couſin, and concluded with ſaying, 'ſhe doubted 'not but ſuch goodneſs would meet a glorious re-'ward.'

Jones anſwered, 'He had been ſufficiently rewarded 'already. Your couſin's account, Madam,' ſaid he, 'hath given me a ſenſation more pleaſing than I have 'ever known. He muſt be a wretch who is unmoved 'at hearing ſuch a ſtory; how tranſporting then muſt 'be the thought of having happily acted a part in this 'ſcene! If there are men who cannot feel the delight 'of giving happineſs to others, I ſincerely pity them; 'as they are incapable of taſting what is, in my opi-'nion, a greater honour, a higher intereſt, and a 'ſweeter pleaſure than the ambitious, the avaricious, 'or the voluptuous man can ever obtain.'

The hour of appointment being now come, Jones was forced to take a haſty leave, but not before he had heartily ſhaken his friend by the hand, and deſired to ſee him again as ſoon as poſſible, promiſing, that he would himſelf take the firſt opportunity of viſiting him at his own houſe. He then ſtept into his chair, and proceeded to lady Bellaſton's, greatly exulting in the happineſs which he had procured to this poor family; nor could he forbear reflecting without horror on the dreadful conſequences, which muſt have attended them, had he liſtened rather to the voice of ſtrict juſtice than to that of mercy, when he was attacked on the high road.

Mrs Miller ſung forth the praiſes of Jones during the whole evening, in which Mr Anderſon, while he ſtayed, ſo paſſionately accompanied her, that he was often on the very point of mentioning the circumſtances of the robbery. However, he luckily recollected himſelf, and avoided an indiſcretion, which would have been ſo much the greater, as he knew Mrs Miller to be extremely ſtrict and nice in her principles. He was likewiſe well appriſed of the loquacity of this lady;

Digitized by Google

and yet, such was his gratitude, that it had almost got the better both of discretion and shame, and made him publish that which would have defamed his own character, rather than omit any circumstances which might do the fullest honour to his benefactor.

CHAP. XI.

In which the reader will be surprised.

MR Jones was rather earlier than the time appointed, and earlier than the lady, whose arrival was hindered not only by the distance of the place where she dined, but by some other cross accidents, very vexatious to one in her situation of mind. He was accordingly shewn into the drawing-room, where he had not been many minutes before the door opened, and in came ——no other than Sophia herself, who had left the play before the end of the first act; for this, as we have already said, being a new play, at which two large parties met, the one to damn, and the other to applaud, a violent uproar, and an engagement between the two parties, had so terrified our heroine, that she was glad to put herself under the protection of a young gentleman, who safely conveyed her to her chair.

As lady Bellaston had acquainted her that she should not be at home till late, Sophia, expecting to find no one in the room, came hastily in, and went directly to a glass which almost fronted her, without once looking towards the upper end of the room, where the statue of Jones now stood motionless. In this glass it was, after contemplating her own lovely face, that she first discovered the said statue; when instantly turning about, she perceived the reality of the vision; upon which she gave a violent scream, and scarce preserved herself from fainting, till Jones was able to move to her and support her in his arms.

To paint the looks or thoughts of either of these lovers is beyond my power. As their sensations, from their mutual silence, may be judged to have been too big for their own utterance, it cannot be supposed, that

Digitized by Google

that I should be able to express them: and the misfortune is, that few of my readers have been enough in love, to feel by their own hearts what past at this time in theirs.

After a short pause, Jones with faultering accents said,——'I see, Madam, you are surprised'——'Surprised!' answered she; 'Oh heavens! Indeed, I 'am surprised. I almost doubt whether you are the 'person you seem.' 'Indeed,' cries he, 'my Sophia, '(pardon me, Madam, for this once calling you so), 'I am that very wretched Jones, whom Fortune, af'ter so many disappointments, hath at last kindly 'conducted to you. Oh! my Sophia, did you know 'the thousand torments I have suffered in this long 'fruitless pursuit.'—'Pursuit of whom?' said Sophia, a little recollecting herself, and assuming a reserved air.——'Can you be so cruel to ask that question?' cries Jones: 'Need I say of you?' 'Of me!' answered Sophia: 'hath Mr Jones then any such im'portant business with me?' 'To some, Madam,' cries Jones, 'this might seem an important business,' (giving her the pocket-book). 'I hope, Madam, you 'will find it of the same value, as when it was lost.' Sophia took the pocket-book, and was going to speak, when he interrupted her thus;——'Let us not, I be'seech you, lose one of these precious moments 'which fortune hath so kindly sent us.—O my So'phia, I have business of a much superior kind.—— 'Thus, on my knees, let me ask your pardon.'—— 'My pardon,' cries she:——'Sure, Sir, after what is 'past, you cannot expect after what I have heard—' 'I scarce know what I say,' answered Jones. 'By 'heavens! I scarce wish you should pardon me. O 'my Sophia, henceforth never cast away a thought 'on such a wretch as I am. If any remembrance of 'me should ever intrude to give a moment's uneasi'ness to that tender bosom, think of my unworthi'ness; and let the remembrance of what past at Up'ton blot me for ever from your mind.'——

Sophia stood trembling all this while. Her face was whiter than snow, and her heart was throbbing through her stays. But at the mention of Upton, a

Digitized by Google

bluſh aroſe in her cheeks, and her eyes, which before ſhe had ſcarce lifted up, were turned upon Jones with a glance of diſdain. He underſtood this ſilent reproach, and replied to it thus: 'O my Sophia, my only love, 'you cannot hate or deſpiſe me more for what hap-'pened there, than I do myſelf: but yet do me the 'juſtice to think, that my heart was never unfaithful 'to you. That had no ſhare in the folly I was guilty 'of; it was even then unalterably yours. Though I 'deſpaired of poſſeſſing you, nay, almoſt of ever ſee-'ing you more, I doated ſtill on your charming idea, 'and could ſeriouſly love no other woman. But, if 'my heart had not been engaged, ſhe, into whoſe 'company I accidentally fell at that curſed place, was 'not an object of ſerious love. Believe me, my angel, 'I never have ſeen her from that day to this, and ne-'ver intend, or deſire, to ſee her again.' Sophia in her heart was very glad to hear this; but forcing into her face an air of more coldneſs than ſhe had yet aſſumed: 'Why,' ſaid ſhe, 'Mr Jones, do you take 'the trouble to make a defence, where you are not ac-'cuſed? If I thought it worth while to accuſe you, I 'have a charge of an unpardonable nature indeed.' 'What is it, for Heaven's ſake?' anſwered Jones, trembling and pale, expecting to hear of his amour with lady Bellaſton. 'Oh,' ſaid ſhe, 'how is it poſ-'ſible! can every thing noble, and every thing baſe, 'be lodged together in the ſame boſom?' Lady Bel-laſton, and the ignominious circumſtance of having been kept, roſe again in his mind, and ſtopt his mouth from any reply. 'Could I have expected,' proceeded Sophia, 'ſuch treatment from you; nay from any 'gentleman, from any man of honour? To have my 'name traduced in public; in inns, among the mean-'eſt vulgar! to have any little favours, that my un-'guarded heart may have too lightly betrayed me to 'grant, boaſted of there! nay even to hear, that you 'had been forced to fly from my love!'

Nothing could equal Jones's ſurpriſe at theſe words of Sophia; but yet, not being guilty, he was much leſs embarraſſed how to defend himſelf, than if ſhe had touched that tender ſtring, at which his conſcience had

Digitized by Google

had been alarmed. By some examination he presently found, that her supposing him guilty of so shocking an outrage against his love, and her reputation, was entirely owing to Partridge's talk at the inns, before landlords and servants; for Sophia confessed to him, it was from them that she received her intelligence. He had no very great difficulty to make her believe, that he was entirely innocent of an offence so foreign to his character; but she had a great deal to hinder him from going instantly home, and putting Partridge to death, which he more than once swore he would do. This point being cleared up, they soon found themselves so well pleased with each other, that Jones quite forgot he had begun the conversation with conjuring her to give up all thoughts of him; and she was in a temper to have given ear to a petition of a very different nature; for, before they were aware, they had both gone so far, that he let fall some words 'that sounded like a proposal of marriage:' To which she replied, 'That, did not her duty to her father 'forbid her to follow her own inclination, ruin with 'him would be more welcome to her, than the most 'affluent fortune with another man.' At the mention of the word ruin he started, let drop her hand, which he held for some time, and, striking his breast with his own, cried out, 'Oh, Sophia, can I then ruin 'thee? No; by heavens, no! I never will act so base 'a part. Dearest Sophia, whatever it costs me, I will 'renounce you; I will give you up; I will tear all 'such hopes from my heart, as are inconsistent with 'your real good. My love I will ever retain, but it 'shall be in silence; it shall be at a distance from 'you, it shall be in some foreign land, from whence 'no voice, no sigh of my despair, shall ever reach 'and disturb your ears. And when I am dead'—— He would have gone on, but was stopt by a flood of tears, which Sophia let fall in his bosom, upon which she leaned, without being able to speak one word. He kissed them off, which, for some moments, she allowed him to do without any resistance; but then, recollecting herself, gently withdrew out of his arms, and, to turn the discourse from a subject too tender,

and

Digitized by Google

and which she found she could not support, bethought herself to ask him a question she never had time to put to him before, 'How he came into that room?' He begun to stammer, and would, in all probability, have raised her suspicions by the answer he was going to give; when at once the door opened, and in came Lady Bellaston.

Having advanced a few steps, and seeing Jones and Sophia together, she suddenly stopt; when after a pause of a few moments, recollecting herself with admirable presence of mind, she said,—though with sufficient indications of surprise both in voice and countenance—'I thought, Miss Western, you had been at the play?'

Though Sophia had no opportunity of learning of Jones by what means he had discovered her, yet as she had not the least suspicion of the real truth, or that Jones and Lady Bellaston were acquainted, so she was very little confounded, and the less, as the lady had, in all their conversation on the subject, entirely taken her side against her father. With very little hesitation, therefore, she went through the whole story of what had happened at the playhouse, and the cause of her hasty return.

The length of this narrative gave Lady Bellaston an opportunity of rallying her spirits, and of considering in what manner to act; and, as the behaviour of Sophia gave her hopes that Jones had not betrayed her, she put on an air of good-humour, and said, 'I 'should not have broke in so abruptly upon you, 'Miss Western, if I had known you had company.'

Lady Bellaston fixed her eyes on Sophia whilst she spoke these words: To which that poor young lady, having her face overspread with blushes and confusion, answered in a stammering voice, 'I am sure, Madam, 'I shall always think the honour of your ladyship's 'company---' 'I hope, at least,' cries Lady Bellaston, 'I interrupt no business.'---'No, Madam,' answered Sophia, 'our business was at an end. Your 'ladyship may be pleased to remember, I have often 'mentioned the loss of my pocket-book, which this 'gentleman, having very luckily found, was so kind 'to return it to me with the bill in it.'

Jones

Digitized by Google

Jones, ever ſince the arrival of lady Bellaſton, had been ready to ſink with fear. He ſat kicking his heels, playing with his fingers, and looking more like a fool, if it be poſſible, than a young booby 'ſquire, when he is firſt introduced into a polite aſſembly. He began, however, now to recover himſelf; and taking a hint from the behaviour of lady Bellaſton, who, he ſaw, did not intend to claim any acquaintance with him, he reſolved as entirely to affect the ſtranger on his part. He ſaid, 'Ever ſince he had the pocket-book in his poſſeſſion, he had uſed great diligence in enquiring out the lady whoſe name was writ in it: but never till that day could be ſo fortunate to diſcover her.'

Sophia had, indeed, mentioned the loſs of her pocket-book to lady Bellaſton; but as Jones, for ſome reaſon or other, had never once hinted to her that it was in his poſſeſſion, ſhe believed not one ſyllable of what Sophia now ſaid, and wonderfully admired the extreme quickneſs of the young lady, in inventing ſuch an excuſe. The reaſon of Sophia's leaving the playhouſe met with no better credit; and though ſhe could not account for the meeting between theſe two lovers, ſhe was firmly perſuaded it was not accidental.

With an affected ſmile, therefore ſhe ſaid---'Indeed, Miſs Weſtern, you have had very good luck in recovering your money. Not only as it fell into the hands of a gentleman of honour, but as he happened to diſcover to whom it belonged. I think you would not conſent to have it advertiſed.---It was great good fortune, Sir, that you found out to whom the note belonged.'

'O Madam,' cries Jones, 'it was incloſed in a pocket-book, in which the young lady's name was written.'

'That was very fortunate indeed,' cries the lady; '---And it was no leſs ſo, that you heard Miſs Weſtern was at my houſe; for ſhe is very little known.'

Jones had at length perfectly recovered his ſpirits; and as he had conceived he had now an opportunity of ſatisfying Sophia, as to the queſtion ſhe had aſked him juſt before lady Bellaſton came in, he proceeded thus: 'Why, Madam,' anſwered he, 'it was by the luckieſt

'chance

'chance imaginable I made this discovery. I was 'mentioning what I had found, and the name of the 'owner, the other night to a lady at the masquerade, 'who told me, she believed she knew where I might see 'Miss Western; and if I would come to her house the 'next morning she would inform me. I went accor-'ding to her appointment, but she was not at home; 'nor could I ever meet with her till this morning, when 'she directed me to your ladyship's house. I came ac-'cordingly, and did myself the honour to ask for your 'ladyship; and upon my saying that I had very parti-'cular business, a servant shewed me into the room; 'where I had not been long before the young lady 'returned from the play'

Upon his mentioning the masquerade, he looked very slily at lady Bellaston, without any fear of being remarked by Sophia: for she was visibly too much confounded to make any observations. This hint a little alarmed the lady, and she was silent; when Jones, who saw the agitations of Sophia's mind, resolved to take the only method of relieving her, which was by retiring: but before he did this, he said, 'I believe, Madam, it is 'customary to give some reward on these occasions;--- 'I must insist on a very high one for my honesty;--- 'It is, Madam, no less than the honour of being per-'mitted to pay another visit here.'

'Sir,' replied the lady, 'I make no doubt that you 'are a gentleman, and my doors are never shut to 'people of fashion.'

Jones then, after proper ceremonials, departed, highly to his own satisfaction, and no less to that of Sophia; who was terribly alarmed lest lady Bellaston should discover what she already knew but too well.

Upon the stairs Jones met his old acquaintance Mrs Honour, who, notwithstanding all she had said against him, was now so well-bred to behave with great civility. This meeting indeed proved a lucky circumstance, as he communicated to her the house where he lodged, with which Sophia was acquainted.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. XII.

In which the thirteenth book is concluded.

THE elegant lord Shaftsbury somewhere objects to telling too much truth: by which it may be fairly inferred, that, in some cases, to lie, is not only excusable but commendable.

And surely there are no persons who may so properly challenge a right to this commendable deviation from truth, as young women in the affair of love; for which they may plead precept, education, and above all the sanction, nay I may say, the necessity of custom, by which they are restrained, not from submitting to the honest impulses of nature (for that would be a foolish prohibition,) but from owning them.

We are not, therefore, ashamed to say that our heroine now pursued the dictates of the abovementioned right honourable philosopher. As she was perfectly satisfied then that lady Bellaston was ignorant of the person of Jones, so she determined to keep her in that ignorance, though at the expence of a little fibbing.

Jones had not been long gone before lady Bellaston cry'd. 'Upon my word, a good pretty young fellow; 'I wonder who he is; for I don't remember ever to 'have seen his face before.'

'Nor I neither, Madam,' cries Sophia, 'I must 'say he behaved very handsomely in relation to my 'note.'

'Yes; and he is a very handsome fellow,' said the lady: 'don't you think so?'

'I did not take much notice of him,' answered Sophia, 'but I thought he seemed rather awkward and 'ungenteel than otherwise.'

'You are extremely right,' cries lady Bellaston: 'you may see by his manner, that he hath not kept 'good company. Nay, notwithstanding his return-'ing your note, and refusing the reward, I almost question whether he is a gentleman.——I have al-'ways observed there is a something in persons well-'born,

Digitized by Google

'born, which others can never acquire.——I think 'I will give orders not to be at home to him.'

'Nay sure, Madam,' answered Sophia, 'one can't 'suspect after what he hath done;——besides, if your 'ladyship observed him, there was an elegance in 'his discourse, a delicacy, a prettiness of expression, 'that, that'.——

'I confess,' said lady Bellaston, 'the fellow hath 'words——And indeed, Sophia, you must forgive 'me; indeed you must.'

'I forgive your ladyship!' said Sophia.

'Yes indeed you must,' answered she laughing; 'for I had a horrible suspicion when I first came into 'the room——I vow you must forgive it; but I sus-'pected it was Mr Jones himself.'

'Did your ladyship indeed?' cries Sophia, blushing, and affecting a laugh.

'Yes, I vow I did,' answered she; 'I can't imagine what put it into my head; for, give the fellow his due, he was genteelly dressed, which I think, 'dear Sophy, is not commonly the case with your 'friend.'

'This raillery,' cries Sophia, 'is a little cruel, 'lady Bellaston, after my promise to your ladyship.'

'Not at all, child!' said the lady.—'It would 'have been cruel before; but after you promised 'me never to marry without your father's consent, 'in which you know is implied your giving up Jones, 'sure you can bear a little raillery on a passion, which 'was pardonable enough in a young girl in the coun-'try, and of which you tell me you have so entirely 'got the better. What must I think, my dear So-'phy, if you cannot bear a little ridicule even on his 'dress? I shall begin to fear you are very far gone 'indeed; and almost question whether you have 'dealt ingenuously with me.'

'Indeed, Madam,' cries Sophia, 'your ladyship 'mistakes me if you imagine I had any concern on 'his account.'

'On his account?' answered the lady: 'You must 'have mistaken me; I went no farther than his 'dress;——for I would not injure your taste by any

Digitized by Google

'other compariſon ——— I don't imagine, my dear 'Sophy, if your Mr Jones had been ſuch a fellow as 'this ———'

'I thought,' ſays Sophia, 'your ladyſhip had allowed him to be handſome.' ———

'Whom, pray?' cried the lady haſtily.

'Mr Jones,' anſwered Sophia;—and immediately recollecting herſelf, 'Mr Jones!---no, no; I aſk 'your pardon;---I mean the gentleman who was juſt 'now here.'

'O Sophy! Sophy!' cries the lady; 'this Mr 'Jones, I am afraid, ſtill runs in your head.'

'Then upon my honour, Madam,' ſaid Sophia, 'Mr Jones is as entirely indifferent to me, as the 'gentleman who juſt now left us.'

'Upon my honour,' ſaid lady Bellaſton, 'I believe 'it. Forgive me, therefore, a little innocent rail-'lery; but I promiſe you I will never mention his 'name any more.'

And now the two ladies ſeparated, infinitely more to the delight of Sophia than of lady Bellaſton, who would willingly have tormented her rival a little longer, had not buſineſs of more importance called her away. As for Sophia, her mind was not perfectly eaſy under this firſt practice of deceit: upon which, when ſhe retired to her chamber, ſhe reflected with the higheſt uneaſineſs and conſcious ſhame. Nor could the peculiar hardſhip of her ſituation, and the neceſſity of the caſe, at all reconcile her mind to her conduct; for the frame of her mind was too delicate to bear the thought of having been guilty of a falſehood however qualified by circumſtances. Nor did this thought once ſuffer her to cloſe her eyes during the whole ſucceeding night.

Digitized by Google

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK XIV.

Containing two days.

CHAP. I.

An Essay to prove that an Author will write the better, for having some knowledge of the subject on which he writes.

AS several gentlemen in these times, by the wonderful force of genius only, without the least assistance of learning, perhaps without being well able to read, have made a considerable figure in the republic of letters: the modern critics, I am told, have lately begun to assert, that all kind of learning is entirely useless to a writer; and indeed, no other than a kind of fetters on the natural sprightliness and activity of the imagination, which is thus weighed down, and prevented from soaring to those high flights which otherwise it would be able to reach.

This doctrine, I am afraid, is at present carried much too far: for why should writing differ so much from all other arts? The nimbleness of a dancing-master is not at all prejudiced by being taught, to move; nor doth any mechanic, I believe, exercise his

Digitized by Google

his tools the worſe by having learnt to uſe them. For my own part, I cannot conceive that Homer or Virgil would have writ with more fire, if, inſtead of being maſters of all the learning of their times, they had been as ignorant as moſt of the authors of the preſent age. Nor I believe that all the imagination, fire, and judgment of Pitt, could have produced thoſe orations that have made the ſenate of England in theſe our times a rival in eloquence of Greece and Rome, if he had not been ſo well read in the writings of Demoſthenes and Cicero, as to have tranſferred their whole ſpirit into his ſpeeches, and with their ſpirit their knowledge too.

I would not here be underſtood to inſiſt on the ſame fund of learning in any of my brethren, as Cicero perſuades us is neceſſary to the compoſition of an orator. On the contrary, very little reading is, I conceive, neceſſary to the poet, leſs to the critic, and the leaſt of all to the politician. For the firſt, perhaps, Byſhe's Art of Poetry, and a few of our modern poets, may ſuffice; for the ſecond, a moderate heap of plays; and for the laſt, an indifferent collection of political journals.

To ſay the truth, I require no more than that a man ſhould have ſome little knowledge of the ſubject on which he treats, according to the old maxim of law, *Quam quiſque norit artem in ea ſe exerceat.* With this alone a writer may ſometimes do tolerably well; and indeed, without this, all the other learning in the world will ſtand him in little ſtead.

For inſtance, let us ſuppoſe that Homer and Virgil, Ariſtotle and Cicero, Thucydides and Livy, could have met all together, and have clubbed their ſeveral talents to have compoſed a taeatiſe on the art of dancing; I believe it will be readily agreed they could not have equalled the excellent treatiſe which Mr Eſſex hath given us on that ſubject, entitled, The Rudiments of genteel education. And, indeed, ſhould the excellent Mr Broughton be prevailed on to ſet fiſt to paper, and to compleat the aboveſaid rudiments, by delivering down the true principles of Athletics, I queſtion whether the world will have any

Digitized by Google

cauſe to lament, that none of the great writers, either ancient or modern, have ever treated about that noble and uſeful art.

To avoid a multiplicity of examples in ſo plain a caſe, and to come at once to my point, I am apt to conceive, that one reaſon why many Engliſh writers have totally failed in deſcribing the manners of upper life, may poſſibly be, that in reality they know nothing of it.

This is a knowledge unhappily not in the power of many authors to arrive at. Books will give us a very imperfect idea of it; nor will the ſtage a much better: the fine gentleman formed upon reading the former, will almoſt always turn out a pedant, and he who forms himſelf upon the latter, a coxcomb.

Nor are the characters drawn from theſe models better ſupported. Vanburgh and Congreve copied nature; but they who copy them draw as unlike the preſent age, as Hogarth would do if he was to paint a rout or a drum in the dreſſes of Titian and of Vandyke. In ſhort, imitation here will not do the buſineſs. The picture muſt be after nature herſelf. A true knowledge of the world is gained only by converſation, and the manners of every rank muſt be ſeen in order to be known.

Now it happens that this higher order of mortals is not to be ſeen, like all the reſt of the human ſpecies, for nothing, in the ſtreets, ſhops, and coffee-houſes: nor are they ſhewn, like the upper ranks of animals, for ſo much a-piece. In ſhort, this is a ſight to which no perſons are admitted, without one or other of theſe qualifications, viz. either birth or fortune; or what is equivalent to both, the honourable profeſſion of a gameſter. And, very unluckily for the world, perſons ſo qualified very ſeldom care to take upon themſelves the bad trade of writing; which is generally entered upon by the lower and poorer ſort, as it is a trade which many think requires no kind of ſtock to ſet up with.

Hence thoſe ſtrange monſters in lace and embroidery, in ſilks and brocades, with vaſt wigs and hoops; which, under the name of lords and ladies, ſtrut the

ſtage,

Digitized by Google

ſtage, to the great delight of attorneys and their clerks in the pit, and of the citizens and their apprentices in the galleries; and which are no more to be found in real life, than the centaur, the chimera, or any other creature of mere fiction. But, to let my reader into a ſecret, this knowledge of upper life, though very neceſſary for preventing miſtakes, is no very great reſource to a writer, whoſe province is comedy, or that kind of novels, which, like this I am writing, is of the comic claſs.

What Mr Pope ſays of women is very applicable to moſt in this ſtation, who are indeed ſo entirely made up of form and affectation, that they have no character at all, at leaſt none which appears. I will venture to ſay, the higheſt life is much the dulleſt, and affords very little humour or entertainment. The various callings in lower ſpheres produce the great variety of humourous characters; whereas here, except among the few who are engaged in the purſuit of ambition, and the fewer ſtill who have a reliſh for pleaſure, all is vanity and ſervile imitation. Dreſſing and cards, eating and drinking, bowing and curtſying, make up the buſineſs of their lives.

Some there are, however, of this rank, upon whom paſſion exerciſes its tyranny, and hurries them far beyond the bounds which decorum preſcribes; of theſe, the ladies are as much diſtinguiſhed by their noble intrepidity, and a certain ſuperior contempt of reputation, from the frail ones of meaner degree, as a virtuous woman of quality is, by the elegance and delicacy of her ſentiments from the honeſt wife of a yeoman or ſhop-keeper. Lady Bellaſton was of this intrepid character; but let not my country readers conclude from her, that this is the general conduct of women of faſhion, or that we mean to repreſent them as ſuch. They might as well ſuppoſe, that every clergyman was repreſented by Thwackum, or every ſoldier by enſign Northerton.

There is not indeed a greater error than that which univerſally prevails among the vulgar, who, borrowing their opinion from ſome ignorant ſatyriſts, have affixed the character of lewdneſs to theſe times. On the

Digitized by Google

contrary, I am convinced, there never was leſs of love intrigue carried on among perſons of condition, than now. Our preſent women have been taught by their mothers to fix their thoughts only on ambition and vanity, and to deſpiſe the pleaſures of love as unworthy their regard; and, being afterwards by the care of ſuch mothers married without having huſbands, they ſeem pretty well confirmed in the juſtneſs of thoſe ſentiments; whence they content themſelves, for the dull remainder of life, with the purſuit of more innocent, but, I am afraid, more childiſh amuſements, the bare mention of which would ill ſuit with the dignity of this hiſtory. In my humble opinion, the true characteriſtic of the preſent beau monde is rather folly than vice, and the only epithet which it deſerves is that of frivolous.

CHAP. II.

Containing letters and other matters which attend amours.

JONES had not long been at home before he received the following letter.

"I was never more ſurpriſed than when I found you "was gone. When you left the room, I little imagined you intended to have left the houſe without ſeeing "me again. Your behaviour is all of a piece, and "convinces me how much I ought to deſpiſe a heart "which can doat upon an ideot: though I know not "whether I ſhould not admire her cunning more than "her ſimplicity: wonderful both! for though ſhe underſtood not a word of what paſſed between us, ſhe "yet had the ſkill, the aſſurance, the——what ſhall I "call it? to deny to my face, that ſhe knows you, or "ever ſaw you before.——Was this a ſcheme laid between you, and have you been baſe enough to betray "me?——O how I deſpiſe her, you, and all the world, "but chiefly myſelf! for——I dare not write what I "ſhould afterwards run mad to read: but remember, "I can deteſt as violently as I have loved."

Jones

Jones had but little time given him to reflect on this letter, before a second was brought him from the same hand; and this likewise we shall set down in the precise words.

"When you consider the hurry of spirits in which "I must have writ, you cannot be surprised at any "expressions in my former note.——Yet, perhaps, on "reflection, they were rather too warm. At least I "would, if possible, think all owing to the odious play-"house, and to the impertinence of a fool, which de-"tained me beyond my appointment. How easy is it "to think well of those we love?—Perhaps you de-"sire I should think so. I have resolved to see you "to-night; so come to me immediately.

"*P. S.* I have ordered to be at home to none but "yourself.

"*P. S.* Mr Jones will imagine I shall assist him "in his defence; for I believe, he cannot de-"sire to impose on me more than I desire to im-"pose on myself.

"*P. S.* Come immediately."

To the men of intrigue I refer the determination, whether the angry or the tender letter gave the greatest uneasiness to Jones. Certain it is, he had no violent inclination to pay any more visits that evening, unless to one single person. However, he thought his honour engaged; and, had not this been motive sufficient, he would not have ventured to blow the temper of lady Bellaston into that flame of which he had reason to think it susceptible, and of which he feared the consequence might be a discovery to Sophia, which he dreaded. After some discontented walks, therefore, about the room, he was preparing to depart, when the lady kindly prevented him, not by another letter, but by her own presence. She entered the room very disordered in her dress, and very discomposed in her looks, and threw herself into a chair, where having recovered

Digitized by Google

recovered her breath, she said——'You see, Sir, 'when women have gone one length too far, they 'will stop at none. If any person would have sworn 'this to me a week ago, I would not have believed 'it of myself.' 'I hope, Madam,' said Jones, 'my 'charming lady Bellaston will be as difficult to believe 'any thing against one who is so sensible of the many 'obligations she hath conferred upon him.' 'Indeed!' says she, 'sensible of obligations! Did I expect to hear 'such cold language from Mr Jones?' 'Pardon me, 'my dear angel,' said he, 'if, after the letters I have 'received, the terrors of your anger, though I know 'not how I have deserved it.'——'And have I then,' says she with a smile, 'so angry a countenance?—— 'Have I really brought a chiding face with me?'— 'If there be honour in man,' said he, 'I have done 'nothing to merit your anger.——You remember 'the appointment you sent me:——I went in pursu- 'ance.'——'I beseech you,' cried she, 'do not run 'through the odious recital.——Answer me but one 'question, and I shall be easy,——Have you not be- 'trayed my honour to her?'——Jones fell upon his knees, and began to utter the most violent protestation, when Partridge came dancing and capering into the room, like one drunk with joy, crying out, 'she's 'found, she's found!——Here, Sir, here, she's here. '——Mrs Honour is upon the stairs.' 'Stop her a 'moment,' cries Jones.——'Here, Madam, step be- 'hind the bed: I have no other room nor closet, nor 'place on earth to hide you in; sure never was so 'damn'd an accident.'——'D—n'd indeed!' said the lady, as she went to her place of concealment: and presently afterwards in came Mrs Honour. 'Hey- 'day!' says she, 'Mr Jones, what's the matter?—— 'That impudent rascal, your servant, would scarce let 'me come up stairs. I hope he hath not the same rea- 'son to keep me from you as he had at Upton.——I 'suppose you hardly expected to see me; but you 'have certainly bewitched my lady. Poor dear young 'lady! To be sure, I loves her as tenderly as if she 'was my own sister. Lord have mercy upon you, if you 'don't make her a good husband; and to be sure, if 'you

Digitized by Google

'you do not, nothing can be bad enough for you.' Jones begged her only to whiſper, 'for that there 'was a lady dying in the next room.' 'A lady!' cries ſhe, 'ay, I ſuppoſe one of your ladies.——O, 'Mr Jones, there are too many of them in the world! 'I believe we are got into the houſe of one; for my 'lady Bellaſton, I dare to ſay, is no better than ſhe 'ſhould be.'——'Huſh, huſh,' cries Jones, 'every 'word is overheard in the next room.' 'I don't care 'a farthing,' cries Honour, 'I ſpeaks no ſcandal of 'any one; but to be ſure the ſervants make no ſcruple 'of ſaying as how her ladyſhip meets men at another 'place——where the houſe goes under the name of a 'poor gentlewoman; but her ladyſhip pays the rent, 'and many's the good thing beſides, they ſay, ſhe hath 'of her'——Here Jones, after expreſſing the utmoſt uneaſineſs, offered to ſtop her mouth.——'Hey-day! 'why ſure, Mr Jones, you will let me ſpeak; I ſpeaks 'no ſcandal, for I only ſays what I heard from o-'thers;——and thinks I to myſelf, much good may it 'do the gentlewoman with her riches, if ſhe comes by 'it in ſuch a wicked manner. To be ſure it is better 'to be poor and honeſt.' 'The ſervants are villains,' cries Jones, 'and abuſe their lady unjuſtly.'——'Ay, 'to be ſure, ſervants are always villains; and ſo my 'lady ſays, and won't hear a word of it.'——'No, I 'am convinced,' ſays Jones, 'my Sophia is above 'liſtening to ſuch baſe ſcandal.' 'Nay, I believe it 'is no ſcandal neither,' cries Honour; 'for why 'ſhould ſhe meet men at another houſe?——It can 'never be for any good; for if ſhe had a lawful deſign 'of being courted, as to be ſure any lady may lawful-'ly give her company to men upon that account, why 'where can be the ſenſe?' 'I proteſt,' cries Jones, 'I can't hear all this of a lady of ſuch honour, and a 'relation of Sophia; beſides, you will diſtract the 'poor lady in the next room.——Let me intreat you 'to walk with me down ſtairs.'——'Nay, Sir, if you 'won't let me ſpeak, I have done.——Here, Sir, 'is a letter from my young lady:——What would 'ſome men give to have this? But, Mr Jones, I 'think, you are not over and above generous, and

'yet

'yet I have heard some servants say——But I am 'sure, you will do me the justice to own I never saw 'the colour of your money.' Here Jones hastily took the letter, and presently after slipped five pieces into her hand. He then returned a thousand thanks to his dear Sophia in a whisper, and begged her to leave him to read her letter. She presently departed, not without expressing much grateful sense of his generosity.

Lady Bellaston now came from behind the curtain. How shall I describe her rage? her tongue was at first incapable of utterance; but streams of fire darted from her eyes; and well indeed they might, for her heart was all in a flame. And now, as soon as her voice found way, instead of expressing any indignation against Honour or her own servants, she began to attack poor Jones. 'You see,' said she, 'what I have sacrificed to 'you; my reputation, my honour,——gone for ever!' 'And what return have I found? Neglected, slighted 'for a country girl, for an ideot.' 'What neglect, 'Madam, or what slight,' cries Jones, 'have I been 'guilty of?'——'Mr Jones,' said she, 'it is in vain to 'dissemble; if you will make me easy you must entirely 'give her up; and as a proof of your intention, shew 'me the letter.'——'What letter, Madam?' said Jones. 'Nay, surely,' said she, 'you cannot have the con'fidence to deny your having received a letter by the 'hands of that trollop.' 'And can your ladyship,' cries he, 'ask of me what I must part with my ho'nour before I grant? Have I acted in such a manner 'by your ladyship? Could I be guilty of betraying 'this poor innocent girl to you, what security could 'you have, that I should not act the same part by 'yourself? A moment's reflection will, I am sure, con'vince you, that a man, with whom the secrets of a 'lady are not safe, must be the most contemptible of 'wretches.' 'Very well,' said she,——'I need not 'insist on your becoming this contemptible wretch in 'your own opinion; for the inside of the letter could 'inform me of nothing more than I know already. 'I see the footing you are upon.'——Here ensued a long conversation, which the reader, who is not too curious

Digitized by Google

curious, will thank me for not inserting at length. It shall suffice therefore to inform him, that lady Bellaston grew more and more pacified, and at length believed, or affected to believe, his protestations, that his meeting with Sophia that evening was merely accidental, and every other matter which the reader already knows, and which, as Jones set before her in the strongest light, it is plain she had in reality no reason to be angry with him.

She was not however, in her heart, perfectly satisfied with his refusal to shew her the letter; so deaf are we to the clearest reason, when it argues against our prevailing passions. She was indeed well convinced, that Sophia possessed the first place in Jones's affections; and yet, haughty and amorous as this lady was, she submitted at last to bear the second place, or to express it more properly in a legal phrase, was contented with the possession of that of which another woman had the reversion.

It was at length agreed, that Jones should for the future visit at the house; for that Sophia, her maid, and all the servants, would place these visits to the account of Sophia, and that she herself would be considered as the person imposed upon.

This scheme was contrived by the lady, and highly relished by Jones, who was indeed glad to have a prospect of seeing his Sophia at any rate, and the lady herself was not a little pleased with the imposition on Sophia, which Jones, she thought, could not possibly discover to her for his own sake.

The next day was appointed for the first visit, and then, after proper ceremonials, the lady Bellaston returned home.

CHAP. III.

Containing various matters.

JONES was no sooner alone, than he eagerly broke open his letter, and read as follows:

"Sir, it is impossible to express what I have suffered "since you left this house; and, as I have reason to "think

Digitized by Google

" think you intend coming here again, I have ſent Ho-
" nour, though ſo late at night, as ſhe tells me ſhe
" knows your lodgings, to prevent you. I charge
" you, by all the regard you have for me, not to think
" of viſiting here, for it will certainly be diſcovered;
" nay, I almoſt doubt, from ſome things which have
" dropt from her ladyſhip, that ſhe is not already with-
" out ſome ſuſpicion. Something favourable, perhaps,
" may happen: we muſt wait with patience; but I
" once more intreat you, if you have any concern for
" my eaſe, do not think of returning hither.'

This letter adminiſtered the ſame kind of conſolation to poor Jones, which Job formerly received from his friends. Beſides diſappointing all the hopes which he promiſed to himſelf from ſeeing Sophia, he was reduced to an unhappy dilemma, with regard to lady Bellaſton; for there are ſome certain engagements, which, as he well knew, do very difficultly admit of any excuſe for the failure; and to go, after the ſtrict prohibition of Sophia, he was not to be forced by any human power. At length, after much deliberation, which during that night ſupplied the place of ſleep, he determined to feign himſelf ſick; for this ſuggeſted itſelf as the only means of failing the appointed viſit, without incenſing lady Bellaſton, which he had more than one reaſon of deſiring to avoid.

The firſt thing, however, which he did in the morning, was to write an anſwer to Sophia, which he incloſed in one to Honour. He then diſpatched another to lady Bellaſton, containing the above-mentioned excuſe; and to this he ſoon received the following anſwer.

" I am vexed that I cannot ſee you here this after-
" noon, but more concerned for the occaſion: take
" great care of yourſelf, and have the beſt advice, and
" I hope there will be no danger.---I am ſo tormented
" all this morning with fools, that I have ſcarce a
" moment's time to write to you. Adieu.

" P. S. I will endeavour to call on you this evening
" at nine.---Be ſure to be alone."

Digitized by Google

Mr Jones now received a visit from Mrs Miller, who, after some formal introduction, began the following speech: 'I am very sorry, Sir, to wait upon 'you on such an occasion; but I hope you will consider the ill consequence which it must be to the reputation of my poor girls, if my house should once 'be talked of as a house of ill fame. I hope you 'won't think me therefore guilty of impertinence, if 'I beg you not to bring any more ladies in at that 'time of night. The clock had struck two before 'one of them went away.' 'I do assure you, Madam,' said Jones, 'the lady who was here last night, 'and who staid the latest, (for the other only brought 'me a letter), is a woman of very great fashion, and 'my near relation.' 'I don't know what fashion she 'is of,' answered Mrs Miller, 'but I am sure no 'woman of virtue, unless a very near relation indeed, 'would visit a young gentleman at ten at night, and 'stay four hours in his room with him alone; besides, 'Sir, the behaviour of her chairmen shews what she 'was; for they did nothing but make jests all the 'evening in the entry, and asked Mr Partridge, in 'the hearing of my own maid, if Madam intended 'to stay with his master all night; with a great deal 'of stuff not proper to be repeated. I have really a 'great respect for you, Mr Jones, upon your own 'account; nay, I have a very high obligation to you 'for your generosity to my cousin. Indeed I did not 'know how very good you had been till lately. Little 'did I imagine to what dreadful courses the poor 'man's distress had driven him. Little did I think, 'when you gave me the ten guineas, that you had 'given them to a highwayman! O heavens! What 'goodness have you shewn? How you have preserved 'this family!——The character which Mr Allworthy 'hath formerly given me of you was, I find, strictly 'true.—And indeed, if I had no obligation to you, 'my obligations to him are such, that on his account 'I should shew you the utmost respect in my power. '—Nay, believe me, dear Mr Jones, if my daughters and my own reputation were out of the case, I 'should for your own sake be sorry, that so pretty a

Digitized by Google

'young gentleman should converse with these women; 'but, if you are resolved to do it, I must beg you to 'take another lodging; for I do not myself like to 'have such things carried on under my roof, but 'more especially upon the account of my girls, who 'have little, Heaven knows, besides their characters, 'to recommend them.' Jones started, and changed colour at the name of Allworthy. 'Indeed, Mrs 'Miller,' answered he a little warmly, 'I do not 'take this at all kind. I will never bring any slander 'on your house; but I must insist on seeing what 'company I please in my own room; and, if that 'gives you any offence, I shall, as soon as I am able, 'look for another lodging.' 'I am sorry we must 'part then, Sir,' said she; 'but I am convinced Mr 'Allworthy himself would never come within my 'doors, if he had the least suspicion of my keeping 'an ill house.'——'Very well, Madam,' said Jones. ——'I hope, Sir,' said she, 'you are not angry; 'for I would not for the world offend any of Mr 'Allworthy's family. I have not slept a wink all 'night about this matter.'——'I am sorry I have 'disturbed your rest, Madam,' said Jones; 'but I beg 'you will send Partridge up to me immediately;' which she promised to do, and then with a very low court'sy retired.

As soon as Partridge arrived, Jones fell upon him in the most outrageous manner.——'How often,' said he, 'am I to suffer for your folly, or rather for 'my own in keeping you? Is that tongue of yours 'resolved upon my destruction?'——'What have I 'done, Sir?' answered affrighted Partridge. 'Who 'was it gave you authority to mention the story of 'the robbery, or that the man you saw here was the 'person?'——'I, Sir?' cries Partridge. 'Now don't 'be guilty of a falsehood in denying it,' said Jones. ——'If I did mention such a matter,' answers Partridge, 'I am sure I thought no harm; for I should 'not have opened my lips, if it had not been to his 'own friends and relations, who, I imagined, would 'have let it go no farther.' 'But I have a much 'heavier charge against you,' cries Jones, 'than this.

'How

Digitized by Google

'How durſt you, after all the precautions I gave you, 'mention the name of Mr Allworthy in this houſe?' Partridge denied that he ever had, with many oaths. 'How elſe,' ſaid Jones, 'ſhould Mrs Miller be ac-'quainted that there was any connection between him 'and me? And it is but this moment ſhe told me, 'ſhe reſpected me on his account.'——'O Lord, 'Sir,' ſaid Partridge, 'I deſire only to be heard out; 'and to be ſure, never was any thing ſo unfortunate; 'hear me but out, and you will own how wrongfully 'you have accuſed me. When Mrs Honour came 'down ſtairs laſt night, ſhe met me in the entry, and 'aſked me when my maſter had heard from Mr All-'worthy; and to be ſure Mrs Miller heard the very 'words; and, the moment madam Honour was gone, 'ſhe called me into the parlour to her.' 'Mr Par-'tridge,' ſays ſhe, 'what Mr Allworthy is that the 'gentlewoman mentioned? Is it the great Mr All-'worthy of Somerſetſhire?' 'Upon my word, Ma-'dam,' ſays I, 'I know nothing of the matter.'—— 'Sure,' ſays ſhe, 'your maſter is not the Mr Jones I 'have heard Mr Allworthy talk of?' 'Upon my word, 'Madam,' ſays I, 'I know nothing of the matter.'--- 'Then,' ſays ſhe, turning to her daughter, 'Nancy, ſays ſhe, 'as ſure as tenpence this is the very young 'gentleman, and he agrees exactly with the ſquire's 'deſcription.' 'The Lord above knows who it was 'told her; for I am the arranteſt villain that ever 'walked upon two legs, if ever it came out of my 'mouth.----I promiſe you, Sir, I can keep a ſecret 'when I am deſired.——Nay, Sir, ſo far was I from 'telling her any thing about Mr Allworthy, that I 'told her the very direct contrary; for though I did 'not contradict it at that moment, yet, as ſecond 'thoughts they ſay are beſt, ſo, when I came to con-'ſider that ſome body muſt have informed her, thinks 'I to myſelf, I will put an end to the ſtory; and ſo 'I went back again into the parlour ſome time af-'terwards, and, ſays I, upon my word, ſays I, who-'ever, ſays I, told you that this gentleman was Mr 'Jones; that is, ſays I, that this Mr Jones was that 'Mr Jones, told you a confounded lie: and I beg,

Digitized by Google

'says I, you will never mention any such matter, 'says I; for my master, says I, will think I must have 'told you so; and I defy any body in the house ever 'to say, I mentioned any such word. To be certain, 'Sir, it is a wonderful thing, and I have been think-'ing with myself ever since, how it was she came to 'know it: not but I saw an old woman here t'other day 'a begging at the door, who looked as like her we 'saw in Warwickshire, that caused all that mischief to 'us. To be sure it is never good to pass by an old 'woman without giving her something, especially if 'she looks at you; for all the world shall never per-'suade me but that they have a great power to do 'mischief, and to be sure I shall never see an old wo-'man again, but I shall think to myself, *Infandum, 'Regina, jubes renovare dolorem.*'

The simplicity of Partridge set Jones a-laughing, and put a final end to his anger, which had indeed seldom any long duration in his mind; and, instead of commenting on his defence, he told him, he intended presently to leave those lodgings, and ordered him to go and endeavour to get him others.

CHAP. IV.

Which we hope will be very attentively perused by young people of both sexes.

PARTRIDGE had no sooner left Mr Jones, than Mr Nightingale, with whom he had now contracted a great intimacy, came to him, and after a short salutation said, 'So, Tom, I hear you had 'company very late last night. Upon my soul, you 'are a happy fellow, who have not been in town 'above a fortnight, and can keep chairs waiting at 'your door till two in the morning.' He then ran on with much common-place raillery of the same kind, till Jones at last interrupted him, saying, 'I suppose 'you have received all this information from Mrs 'Miller, who hath been up here a little while ago to 'give me warning. The good woman is afraid, it 'seems, of the reputation of her daughters.' 'O 'she is wonderfully nice,' says Nightingale, 'upon 'that

Digitized by Google

'that account; if you remember, she would not let 'Nancy go with us to the masquerade.' 'Nay, upon my honour, I think she's in the right of it,' says Jones; 'however, I have taken her at her word, 'and have sent Partridge to look for another lodging.' 'If you will,' says Nightingale, 'we may, I believe 'be again together; for, to tell you a secret which I 'desire you won't mention in the family, I intend to 'quit the house to-day.' ——— 'What, hath Mrs 'Miller given you warning too, my friend?' cries Jones. 'No,' answered the other; 'but the rooms 'are not convenient enough.——Besides, I am 'grown weary of this part of the town. I want to 'be nearer the places of diversion; so I am going to 'Pall-mall.'—'And do you intend to make a secret 'of your going away?' said Jones. 'I promise you,' answered Nightingale, 'I don't intend to bilk my 'lodgings; but I have a private reason for not taking 'a formal leave.' 'Not so private,' answered Jones; 'I promise you, I have seen it ever since the second 'day of my coming to the house.——Here will be 'some wet eyes on your departure.—Poor Nancy; I 'pity her, faith!—Indeed, Jack, you have played 'the fool with that girl.——You have given her a 'longing, which I am afraid nothing will ever cure 'her of.'—Nightingale answered, 'What the devil 'would you have me do? Would you have me marry 'her to cure her?'—'No,' answered Jones, 'I would 'not have had you make love to her, as you have often 'done in my presence. I have been astonished at the 'blindness of her mother in never seeing it.' 'Pugh, 'see it!' cries Nightingale: 'What the devil should 'she see?' 'Why see,' said Jones, 'that you have 'made her daughter distractedly in love with you. 'The poor girl cannot conceal it a moment; her eyes 'are never off from you, and she always colours eve'ry time you come into the room. Indeed, I pity 'her heartily; for she seems to be one of the best-na'tured and honestest of human creatures.' 'And so,' answered Nightingale, 'according to your doctrine, 'one must not amuse one's self by any common gal'antries with women, for fear they should fall in

Digitized by Google

'love with us.' 'Indeed, Jack,' said Jones, 'you 'wilfully misunderstand me; I do not fancy women 'are so apt to fall in love; but you have gone far 'beyond common gallantries.'—'What, do you sup- 'pose,' says Nightingale, 'that we have been a-bed 'together?' 'No, upon my honour,' answered Jones very seriously, 'I do not suppose so ill of you; nay, 'I will go farther, I do not imagine you have laid 'a regular premeditated scheme for the destruction 'of the quiet of a poor little creature, or have even 'foreseen the consequence; for I am sure thou art a 'very good-natured fellow; and such a one can ne- 'ver be guilty of a cruelty of that kind; but at the 'same time you have pleased your own vanity, with- 'out considering that this poor girl was made a sa- 'crifice to it; and, while you have had no design 'but of amusing an idle hour, you have actually 'given her reason to flatter herself, that you had the 'most serious designs in her favour. Prithee, Jack, 'answer me honestly: to what have tended all those 'elegant and luscious descriptions of happiness ari- 'sing from violent and mutual fondness; all those 'warm professions of tenderness, and generous disin- 'terested love? Did you imagine she would not apply 'them? Or, speak ingenuously, did you not intend 'she should?' 'Upon my soul, Tom,' cries Nightin- gale, 'I did not think this was in thee. Thou wilt 'make an admirable parson.—So, I suppose, you 'would not go to bed to Nancy now, if she would 'let you?'—'No,' cries Jones, 'may I be d—n'd if 'I would.' 'Tom, Tom,' answered Nightingale, 'last night; remember last night,

'—When ev'ry eye was clos'd, and the pale moon,
'And silent stars shone conscious of the theft.'

'Look'e, Mr Nightingale,' said Jones, 'I am 'no canting hypocrite, nor do I pretend to the gift 'of chastity, more than my neighbours. I have been 'guilty with women, I own it; but am not conscious 'that I have ever injured any.—Nor would I, to pro- 'cure pleasure to myself, be knowingly the cause of 'misery to any human being.'

'Well,

Digitized by Google

'Well, well,' said Nightingale, 'I believe you, 'and I am convinced you acquit me of any such 'thing.'

'I do, from my heart,' answered Jones, 'of having debauched the girl, but not from having gained 'her affections.'

'If I have,' said Nightingale, 'I am sorry for it; 'but time and absence will soon wear off such impressions. It is a receipt I must take myself; for, 'to confess the truth to you,—I never liked any girl 'half so much in my whole life; but I must let you 'into the whole secret, Tom. My father hath provided a match for me with a woman I never saw; 'and she is now coming to town, in order for me to 'make my addresses to her.'

At these words Jones burst into a loud fit of laughter; when Nightingale cried,—'Nay, prithee don't 'turn me into ridicule. The devil take me if I am 'not half-mad about this matter! my poor Nancy! 'Oh Jones, Jones, I wish I had a fortune in my own 'possession.'

'I heartily wish you had,' cries Jones; 'for, if this 'be the case, I sincerely pity you both; but surely 'you don't intend to go away without taking your 'leave of her?'

'I would not,' answered Nightingale, 'undergo the 'pain of taking leave for ten thousand pound; be'sides, I am convinced, instead of answering any good 'purpose, it would only serve to inflame my poor 'Nancy the more. I beg therefore you would not 'mention a word of it to day, and in the evening, 'or to-morrow morning, I intend to depart.'

Jones promised he would not, and said, upon reflection he thought as he had determined and was obliged to leave her, he took the most prudent method. He then told Nightingale, he should be very glad to lodge in the same house with him; and it was accordingly agreed between them, that Nightingale should procure him either the ground floor, or the two pair of stairs; for the young gentleman himself was to occupy that which was between them.

This

Digitized by Google

This Nightingale, of whom we shall be presently obliged to say a little more, was in the ordinary transactions of life a man of strict honour, and, what is more rare among young gentlemen of the town, one of strict honesty too; yet in the affairs of love he was somewhat loose in his morals; not that he was even here as void of principle as gentlemen sometimes are and oftener affect to be: but it is certain he had been guilty of some indefensible treachery to women, and had in a certain mystery, called Making love, practised many deceits, which if he had used in trade, he would have been counted the greatest villain upon earth.

But as the world, I know not well for what reason, agree to see this treachery in a better light, he was so far from being ashamed of his iniquities of this kind, that he gloried in them, and would often boast of his skill in gaining of women, and his triumphs over their hearts, for which he had before this time received some rebukes from Jones, who always expressed great bitterness against any misbehaviour to the fair part of the species, who, if considered, he said, as they ought to be, in the light of the dearest friends, were to be cultivated, honoured, and caressed with the utmost love and tenderness; but, if regarded as enemies, were a conquest of which a man ought rather to be ashamed than to value himself upon it.

CHAP. V.

A short account of the history of Mrs Miller.

JONES this day ate a pretty good dinner for a sick man, that is to say, the larger half of a shoulder of mutton. In the afternoon he received an invitation from Mrs Miller to drink tea; for that good woman having learnt, either by means of Partridge, or by some other means natural or supernatural, that he had a connection with Mr Allworthy, could not endure the thoughts of parting with him in an angry manner.

Jones accepted the invitation; and no sooner was the tea-kettle removed, and the girls sent out of the room,

Digitized by Google

room, than the widow, without much preface, began as follows: 'Well, there are very surprising things 'happen in this world; but certainly it is a wonderful 'business, that I should have a relation of Mr All-'worthy in my house, and never know any thing of 'the matter. Alas! Sir, you little imagine what a 'friend that best of gentlemen hath been to me and 'mine. Yes, Sir, I am not ashamed to own it; it is 'owing to his goodness, that I did not long since perish 'for want, and leave my poor little wretches, two des-'titute, helpless, friendless orphans, to the care or 'rather to the cruelty of the world.

'You must know, Sir, though I am now reduced 'to get my living by letting lodgings, I was born 'and bred a gentlewoman. My father was an officer 'of the army, and died in a considerable rank: but 'he lived up to his pay; and as that expired with 'him, his family, at his death, became beggars. We 'were three sisters. One of us had the good luck to 'die soon after of the small-pox: a lady was so kind 'as to take the second, out of charity, as she said, to 'wait upon her. The mother of this lady had been 'a servant to my grandmother; and having inherited 'a vast fortune from her father, which he had got 'by pawnbroking, was married to a gentleman of 'great estate and fashion. She used my sister so bar-'barously, often upbraiding her with her birth and po-'verty, calling her in derision a gentlewoman, that I 'believe the at length broke the heart of the poor girl. 'In short, she likewise died within a twelvemonth after 'my father. Fortune thought proper to provide better 'for me, and within a month from his decease I was 'married to a clergyman, who had been my lover 'a long time before, and who had been very ill-used 'by my father on that account: for though my poor 'father could not give any of us a shilling, yet he bred 'us up as delicately, considered us, and would have 'us consider ourselves, as highly as if we had been 'the richest heiresses. But my dear husband forgot all 'this usage, and the moment we were become father-'less he immediately renewed his addresses to me so 'warmly, that I, who always liked, and now more

'than

Digitized by Google

'than ever eſteemed him, ſoon complied. Five years 'did I live in a ſtate of perfect happineſs with that beſt 'of men, 'till at laſt—Oh! cruel, cruel fortune, that 'ever ſeparated us, that deprived me of the kindeſt 'of huſbands, and my poor girls of the tendereſt 'parent.—O my poor girls! you never knew the 'bleſſing which ye loſt—I am aſhamed, Mr Jones, 'of this womaniſh weakneſs; but I ſhall never men-'tion him without tears.'—'I ought rather, Ma-'dam,' ſaid Jones, 'to be aſhamed that I do not ac-'company you.'—'Well, Sir,' continued ſhe, 'I was 'now left a ſecond time in a much worſe condition 'than before; beſides the terrible affliction I was to en-'counter, I had now two children to provide for; 'and was, if poſſible, more pennyleſs than ever, 'when that great, that good, that glorious man, Mr 'Allworthy, who had ſome little acquaintance with 'my huſband, accidentally heard of my diſtreſs, and 'immediately writ this letter to me. Here, Sir,—— 'here it is; I put it into my pocket to ſhew it you. 'This is the letter, Sir; I muſt and will read it to 'you.

"MADAM,

"I Heartily condole with you on your late grievous "loſs, which your own good ſenſe, and the ex-"cellent leſſons you muſt have learnt from the wor-"thieſt of men, will better enable you to bear, than "any advice which I am capable of giving. Nor "have I any doubt that you, whom I have heard to be "the tendereſt of mothers, will ſuffer any immoderate "indulgence of grief to prevent you from diſcharging "your duty to thoſe poor infants, who now alone "ſtand in need of your tenderneſs.

"However, as you muſt be ſuppoſed at preſent "to be incapable of much worldly conſideration, "you will pardon my having ordered a perſon to "wait on you, and to pay you twenty guineas, "which I beg you will accept 'till I have the plea-"ſure of ſeeing you, and believe me to be, Ma-"dam, &c."

'This

Digitized by Google

'This letter, Sir, I received within a fortnight after 'the irreparable loſs I have mentioned, and within a 'fortnight afterwards, Mr Allworthy,—the bleſſed 'Mr Allworthy, came to pay me a viſit, when he 'placed me in the houſe where you now ſee me, gave 'me a large ſum of money to furniſh it, and ſettled 'an annuity of 50l. a year upon me, which I have 'conſtantly received ever ſince. Judge then, Mr 'Jones, in what regard I muſt hold a benefactor, to 'whom I owe the preſervation of my life, and of 'thoſe dear children, for whoſe ſake alone my life is 'valuable.——Do not, therefore, think me impertinent, Mr Jones, (ſince I muſt eſteem one for whom 'I know Mr Allworthy hath ſo much value) if I 'beg you not to converſe with theſe wicked women. 'You are a young gentleman, and do not know half 'their artful wiles. Do not be angry with me, Sir, 'for what I ſaid upon account of my houſe; you 'muſt be ſenſible it would be the ruin of my poor 'dear girls. Beſides, Sir, you cannot but be acquainted, that Mr Allworthy himſelf would never 'forgive my conniving at ſuch matters, and particularly with you.'

'Upon my word, Madam,' ſaid Jones, 'you need 'make no farther apology; nor do I in the leaſt take 'any thing ill you have ſaid: but give me leave, as 'no one can have more value than myſelf for Mr 'Allworthy, to deliver you from one miſtake, which 'perhaps, would not be altogether for his honour: I 'do aſſure you, I am no relation of his.'

'Alas! Sir,' anſwered ſhe, 'I know you are not. 'I know very well who you are; for Mr Allworthy 'hath told me all: but I do aſſure you, had you been 'twenty times his ſon, he could not have expreſſed 'more regard for you, than he hath often expreſſed in 'my preſence. You need not be aſhamed, Sir, of what 'you are; I promiſe you no good perſon will eſteem 'you the leſs on that account. No, Mr Jones; the 'words, "diſhonourable birth," are nonſenſe, as my 'dear, dear huſband uſed to ſay, unleſs the word, "diſhonourable" be applied to the parents; for the chil-

'children can derive no real diſhonour from an act 'of which they are entirely innocent.'

Here Jones heaved a deep ſigh, and then ſaid, 'Since I perceive, Madam, you really do know me, 'and Mr Allworthy hath thought proper to men- 'tion my name to you; and ſince you have been ſo 'explicit with me as to your own affairs, I will ac- 'quaint you with ſome more circumſtances concern- 'ing myſelf.' And theſe Mrs Miller having expreſſed great deſire and curioſity to hear, he began and related to her his whole hiſtory, without once mentioning the name of Sophia.

There is a kind of ſympathy in honeſt minds, by means of which they give an eaſy credit to each other. Mrs Miller believed all which Jones told her to be true, and expreſſed much pity and concern for him. She was beginning to comment on the ſtory, but Jones interrupted her; for as the hour of aſſignation now drew nigh, he began to ſtipulate for a ſecond interview with the lady that evening, which he promiſed ſhould be the laſt at her houſe; ſwearing, at the ſame time, that ſhe was one of great diſtinction, and that nothing but what was entirely innocent was to paſs between them; and I do firmly believe he intended to keep his word.

Mrs Miller was at length prevailed on, and Jones departed to his chamber, where he ſat alone till twelve o'clock, but no lady Bellaſton appeared.

As we have ſaid that this lady had a great affection for Jones, and as it muſt have appeared that ſhe really had ſo, the reader may perhaps wonder at the firſt failure of her appointment, as ſhe apprehended him to be confined by ſickneſs, a ſeaſon when friendſhip ſeems moſt to require ſuch viſits. This behaviour, therefore, in the lady, may, by ſome, be condemned as unnatural; but that is not our fault; for our buſineſs is only to record truth.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VI.

Containing a scene which we doubt not will affect all our readers.

MR Jones closed not his eyes during all the former part of the night; not owing to any uneasiness which he conceived at being disappointed by lady Bellaston; nor was Sophia herself, though most of his waking hours were justly to be charged to her account, the present cause of dispelling his slumbers. In fact, poor Jones was one of the best-natured fellows alive, and had all that weakness which is called compassion, and which distinguishes this imperfect character from that noble firmness of mind, which rolls a man, as it were, within himself, and, like a polished bowl, enables him to run through the world, without being once stopped by the calamities which happen to others. He could not help, therefore, compassionating the situation of poor Nancy, whose love for Mr Nightingale seemed to him so apparent that he was astonished at the blindness of her mother, who had more than once the preceding evening remarked to him the great change in the temper of her daughter, 'who from being,' she said, 'one of the liveliest, merriest girls in the world, 'was, on a sudden, become all gloom and melan'choly.'

Sleep, however, at length got the better of all resistance; and now, as if he had already been a deity as the ancients imagined, and an offended one too, he seemed to enjoy his dear-bought conquest.—To speak simply, and without any metaphor, Mr Jones slept till eleven the next morning, and would perhaps have continued in the same quiet situation much longer, had not a violent uproar awakened him.

Partridge was now summoned, who, being asked what was the matter, answered, 'That there was a 'dreadful hurricane below stairs; that Miss Nancy 'was in fits; and that the other sister, and the mother 'were both crying and lamenting over her.' Jones expressed much concern at this news, which Partridge

Digitized by Google

endeavoured to relieve, by saying with a smile, 'he 'fancied the young lady was in no danger of death; 'for that Susan (which was the name of the maid) 'had given him to understand, it was nothing more 'than a common affair. In short,' said he, 'Miss 'Nancy hath had a mind to be as wise as her mother, 'that's all; she was a little hungry it seems, and so 'sat down to dinner before grace was said; and so 'there is a child coming for the foundling-hospital.' 'Prithee leave thy stupid jesting,' cries Jones, 'Is 'the misery of these poor wretches a subject of mirth! 'Go immediately to Mrs Miller, and tell her, I beg 'leave ---Stay, you will make some blunder; I will 'go myself; for she desired me to breakfast with her.' He then rose, and dressed himself as fast as he could; and while he was dressing, Partridge, notwithstanding many severe rebukes, could not avoid throwing forth certain pieces of brutality, commonly called jests, on this occasion. Jones was no sooner dressed, than he walked down stairs, and knocking at the door, was presently admitted by the maid into the outward parlour, which was as empty of company as it was of any apparatus for eating. Mrs Miller was in the inner room with her daughter, whence the maid presently brought a message to Mr Jones, 'that her mistress 'hoped he would excuse the disappointment, but an 'accident had happened, which made it impossible 'for her to have the pleasure of his company at break-'fast that day; and begged his pardon for not send-'ing him up notice sooner.' 'Jones desired she would 'give herself no trouble about any thing so trifling as 'his disappointment; that he was heartily sorry for 'the occasion; and that if he could be of any service 'to her, she might command him.'

He had scarce spoke these words, when Mrs Miller, who heard them all, suddenly threw open the door, and coming out to him, in a flood of tears, said, 'O Mr Jones, you are certainly one of the best 'young men alive. I give you a thousand thanks 'for your kind offer of your service! but, alas! Sir, 'it is out of your power to preserve my poor girl.—

'O

'O my child, my child! she is undone, she is ruined 'for ever!' 'I hope, Madam,' said Jones, 'no vil- 'lain,'----'O Mr Jones,' said she, 'that villain who 'yesterday left my lodgings, hath betrayed my poor 'girl; hath destroyed her.----I know you are a man 'of honour. You have a good --a noble heart, Mr 'Jones. The actions to which I have been myself a 'witness, could proceed from no other. I will tell 'you all; nay, indeed, it is impossible, after what 'hath happened, to keep it a secret. That Nightingale, 'that barbarous villain hath undone my daughter. 'She is---she is----oh! Mr Jones, my girl is with 'child by him; and in that condition he hath deser- 'ted her. Here! here, Sir, is his cruel letter: read 'it, Mr Jones, and tell me if such another monster 'lives.'

The letter was as follows,

"Dear Nancy,

"AS I found it impossible to mention to you "what, I am afraid, will be no less shocking "to you, than it is to me, I have taken this method "to inform you, that my father insists upon my im- "mediately paying my addresses to a young lady of "fortune, whom he hath provided for my---I need "not write the detested word. Your own good under- "standing will make you sensible, how entirely I am "obliged to an obedience, by which I shall be for ever "excluded from your dear arms. The fondness of "your mother may encourage you to trust her with "the unhappy consequence of our love, which may "be easily kept a secret from the world, and for which, "I will take care to provide, as I will for you. I wish "you may feel less on this account than I have suf- "fered: but summon all your fortitude to your "assistance, and forgive and forget the man, whom "nothing but the prospect of certain ruin could have "forced to write this letter. I bid you forget me, I "mean only as a lover; but the best of friends you "shall ever find in

"Your faithful, though unhappy,

"J. N."

Digitized by Google

When Jones had read this letter, they both ſtood ſilent during a minute, looking at each other; at laſt he began thus: 'I cannot expreſs, Madam, how 'much I am ſhocked at what I have read; yet let me 'beg you, in one particular, to take the writer's ad- 'vice. Conſider the reputation of your daughter.' ——'It is gone, it is loſt, Mr Jones,' cried ſhe, 'as well as her innocence. She received the letter 'in a room full of company, and immediately ſwoon- 'ing away upon opening it, the contents were known 'to every one preſent. But the loſs of her repu- 'tation, bad as it is, is not the worſt; I ſhall loſe 'my child; ſhe hath attempted twice to deſtroy her- 'ſelf already: and though ſhe hath been hitherto pre- 'vented, vows ſhe will not out live it, nor could I 'myſelf out-live any accident of that nature. What 'then will become of my little Betſy, a helpleſs in- 'fant orphan? And the poor little wretch will, I be- 'lieve, break her heart at the miſeries with which 'ſhe ſees her ſiſter and myſelf diſtracted, while ſhe 'is ignorant of the cauſe,—O 'tis the moſt ſenſible, 'and beſt natured little thing. The barbarous cruel '——hath deſtroyed us all. O my poor children! 'Is this the reward of all my cares? Is this the fruit 'of all my proſpects? Have I ſo chearfully under- 'gone all the labours and duties of a mother? Have 'I been ſo tender of their infancy, ſo careful of their 'education? Have I been toiling ſo many years, 'denying myſelf even the conveniencies of life, to 'provide ſome little ſuſtenance for them, to loſe one 'or both in ſuch a manner?' 'Indeed, Madam,' ſaid Jones, with tears in his eyes, 'I pity you from 'my ſoul.'——'O Mr Jones,' anſwered ſhe, 'even 'you, though I know the goodneſs of your heart, 'can have no idea of what I feel. The beſt, the 'kindeſt, and moſt dutiful of children! O my poor 'Nancy, the darling of my ſoul! the delight of my 'eyes; the pride of my heart: too much, indeed, 'my pride; for to thoſe fooliſh, ambitious hopes, 'ariſing from her beauty, I owe her ruin. Alas! I 'ſaw with pleaſure the liking which this young man 'had for her. I thought it an honourable affection;

'and

Digitized by Google

'and flattered my fooliſh vanity with the thoughts of 'ſeeing her married to one ſo much her ſuperior. 'And a thouſand times in my preſence, nay, often 'in yours, he hath endeavoured to ſooth and encou- 'rage theſe hopes by the moſt generous expreſſions 'of diſintereſted love, which he hath always directed 'to my poor girl, and which I, as well as ſhe, be- 'lieved to be real. Could I have believed that theſe 'were only ſnares laid to betray the innocence of my 'child, and for the ruin of us all?'—At theſe words little Betſy came running into the room, crying, 'Dear Mamma, for heaven's ſake come to my ſiſter; 'for ſhe is in another fit, and my couſin can't hold 'her.' Mrs Miller immediately obeyed the ſum- mons; but firſt ordered Betſy to ſtay with Mr Jones, and begged him to entertain her a few minutes, ſaying, in the moſt pathetic voice, 'Good heaven! 'let me preſerve one of my children at leaſt.'

Jones, in compliance with this requeſt, did all he could to comfort the little girl, though he was, in reality, himſelf very highly affected with Mrs Miller's ſtory. He told her, 'her ſiſter would be ſoon very 'well again; that by taking on in that manner, ſhe 'would not only make her ſiſter worſe, but make her 'mother ill too.' 'Indeed, Sir,' ſays ſhe, 'I would 'not do any thing to hurt them for the world. I 'would rather burſt my heart than they ſhould ſee me 'cry.——But my poor ſiſter can't ſee me cry.——I 'am afraid ſhe will never be able to ſee me cry any 'more. Indeed, I can't part with her; indeed I 'can't—And then poor Mamma too, what will be- 'come of her?—She ſays ſhe will die too, and leave 'me: but I am reſolved I won't be left behind.' 'And are you not afraid to die, my little Betſy?' ſaid Jones. 'Yes,' anſwered ſhe, 'I was always afraid to die; 'becauſe I muſt have left my Mamma, and my ſiſter; 'but I am not afraid to go any where with thoſe I love.'

Jones was ſo pleaſed with this anſwer, that he eagerly kiſſed the child; and ſoon after Mrs Miller returned, ſaying, 'She thanked Heaven, Nancy was 'now come to herſelf. And now, Betſy,' ſays ſhe, 'you may go in; for your ſiſter is better, and longs

Digitized by Google

'to see you.' She then turned to Jones, and began to renew her apologies for having disappointed him of his breakfast.

'I hope, Madam,' said Jones, 'I shall have a 'more exquisite repast than any you could have pro- 'vided for me. This, I assure you, will be the case, 'if I can do any service to this little family of love. 'But whatever success may attend my endeavours, I 'am resolved to attempt it. I am very much de- 'ceived in Mr Nightingale, if, notwithstanding 'what hath happened, he hath not much goodness 'of heart at the bottom, as well as a very violent affec- 'tion for your daughter. If this be the case, I think 'the picture which I shall lay before him, will affect 'him. Endeavour, Madam, to comfort yourself and 'Miss Nancy, as well as you can. I will go instantly in- 'quest of Mr Nightingale; and I hope to bring you 'good news.'

Mrs Miller fell upon her knees, and invoked all the blessings of heaven upon Mr Jones, to which she afterwards added the most passionate expressions of gratitude. He then departed to find Mr Nightingale, and the good woman returned to comfort her daughter, who was somewhat cheered at what her mother told her; and both joined in resounding the praises of Mr Jones.

CHAP. VII.

The interview between Mr Jones and Mr Nightingale.

THE good or evil we confer on others, very often, I believe, recoils on ourselves. For as men of a benign disposition enjoy their own acts of beneficence, equally with those to whom they are done, so there are scarce any natures so entirely diabolical, as to be capable of doing injuries, without paying themselves some pangs, for the ruin which they bring on their fellow-creatures.

Mr Nightingale, at least, was not such a person. On the contrary, Jones found him in his new lodgings, sitting melancholy by the fire, and silently lamenting the unhappy situation in which he had placed poor Nancy.

Digitized by Google

Nancy. He no ſooner ſaw his friend appear, than he aroſe haſtily to meet him, and after much congratulation ſaid, 'Nothing could be more opportune than 'this kind viſit; for I was never more in the ſpleen in 'my life.'

'I am ſorry,' anſwered Jones, 'that I bring news 'very unlikely to relieve you; nay, what I am con-'vinced muſt, of all other, ſhock you the moſt. How-'ever, it is neceſſary you ſhould know it. Without 'further preface then, I come to you, Mr Nightingale, 'from a worthy family, which you have involved in 'miſery and ruin.' Mr Nightingale changed colour at theſe words; but Jones, without regarding it, proceeded in the livelieſt manner to paint the tragical ſtory, with which the reader was acquainted in the laſt chapter.

Nightingale never once interrupted the narration, though he diſcovered violent emotions at many parts of it. But when it was concluded, after fetching a deep ſigh, he ſaid, 'What you tell me, my friend, 'affects me in the tendereſt manner. Sure there never 'was ſo curſed an accident as the poor girl's betray-'ing my letter. Her reputation might otherwiſe have 'been ſafe, and the affair might have remained a 'profound ſecret; and then the girl might have gone 'off never the worſe; for many ſuch things happen 'in this town; and, if the huſband ſhould ſuſpect a 'little when it is too late, it will be his wiſer conduct 'to conceal his ſuſpicion both from his wife and the 'world'

'Indeed, my friend,' anſwered Jones, 'this could 'not have been the caſe with your poor Nancy. You 'have ſo entirely gained her affection, that it is the 'loſs of you, and not of her reputation, which afflicts 'her, and will end in the deſtruction of her and her 'family.' 'Nay, for that matter, I promiſe you,' cries Nightingale, 'ſhe hath my affections ſo abſolutely, 'that my wife, whoever ſhe is to be, will have very 'little ſhare in them.' 'And is it poſſible then,' ſaid Jones, 'you can think of deſerting her?' 'Why, 'what can I do?' anſwered the other. 'Aſk Miſs 'Nancy,' replied Jones warmly. 'In the condition

'to

Digitized by Google

'to which you have reduced her, I sincerely think she 'ought to determine what reparation you shall make 'her. Her interest alone, and not yours, ought to be 'your sole consideration. But, if you ask me what 'you shall do, what can you do less,' cries Jones, 'than fulfil the expectations of her family and her 'own? Nay, I sincerely tell you, they were mine too, 'ever since I first saw you together. You will pardon 'me, if I presume on the friendship you have favoured 'me with, moved as I am with compassion for those 'poor creatures. But your own heart will best sug-'gest to you, whether you have never intended, by 'your conduct, to persuade the mother, as well as the 'daughter, into an opinion, that you designed ho-'nourably; and if so, though there may have been 'no direct promise of marriage in the case, I will leave 'to your own good understanding, how far you are 'bound to proceed.'

'Nay, I must not only confess what you have 'hinted,' said Nightingale; 'but I am afraid, even 'that very promise you mention I have given.' 'And 'can you, after owning that,' said Jones, 'hesitate a 'moment?' Consider, my friend,' answered the other, 'I know you are a man of honour, and would ad-'vise no one to act contrary to its rules; if there 'were no other objection, can I, after this publication 'of her disgrace, think of such an alliance with 'honour?' 'Undoubtedly,' replied Jones, 'and the 'very best and truest honour, which is goodness, re-'quires it of you. As you mention a scruple of this 'kind, you will give me leave to examine it. Can 'you with honour be guilty of having, under false 'pretences, deceived a young woman and her family, 'and of having, by these means, treacherously robbed 'her of her innocence? Can you with honour be 'the knowing, the wilful occasion, nay, the artful 'contriver of the ruin of a human being? Can you 'with honour destroy the fame, the peace, nay pro-'bably both the life and soul too of this creature? 'Can honour bear the thought, that this creature is a 'tender, helpless, defenceless, young woman? a 'young woman who loves, who doats on you, who

'dies

Digitized by Google

'dies for you; who hath placed the utmoſt confi
'dence in your promiſes; and to that confidence
'hath ſacrificed every thing which is dear to her?
'Can honour ſupport ſuch contemplations as theſe a
'moment?'

'Common ſenſe indeed,' ſaid Nightingale, 'war-
'rants all you ſay; but yet you well know the opi-
'nion of the world is ſo contrary to it, that if I was
'to marry a whore, though my own, I ſhould be
'aſhamed of ever ſhewing my face again.'

'Fie upon it, Mr Nightingale,' ſaid Jones, 'do
'not call her by ſo ungenerous a name; when you
'promiſed to marry her, ſhe became your wife; and
'ſhe hath ſinned more againſt prudence than virtue.
'And what is this world, which you would be aſhamed
'to face, but the vile, the fooliſh, and the profligate?
'Forgive me, if I ſay ſuch a ſhame muſt proceed from
'falſe modeſty, which always attends falſe honour
'as its ſhadow---But I am well aſſured there is not a
'man of real ſenſe and goodneſs in the world, who
'would not honour and applaud the action. But,
'admit no other would, would not your own heart,
'my friend, applaud it? And do not the warm,
'rapturous ſenſations which we feel from the con-
'ſciouſneſs of an honeſt, noble, generous benevo-
'lent action, convey more delight to the mind, than
'the undeſerved praiſe of millions? Set the alterna-
'tive fairly before your eyes. On the one ſide, ſee
'this poor, unhappy, tender, believing girl, in the
'arms of her wretched mother, breathing her laſt.
'Hear her breaking her heart in agonies, ſighing out
'your name; and lamenting, rather than accuſing,
'the cruelty which weighs her down to deſtruction.
'Paint to your imagination the circumſtances of her
'fond, deſpairing parent, driven to madneſs, or per-
'haps to death, by the loſs of her lovely daughter.
'View the poor, helpleſs, orphan-infant; and, when
'your mind hath dwelt a moment only on ſuch ideas,
'conſider yourſelf as the cauſe of all the ruin of this
'poor, little, worthy, defenceleſs family. On the
'other ſide, conſider yourſelf as relieving them from
'their temporary ſufferings. Think with what joy,

'with

Digitized by Google

'with what tranſports, that lovely creature will fly to 'your arms. See her blood returning to her pale 'cheeks, her fire to her languid eyes, and raptures to 'her tortured breaſt. Conſider the exultations of her 'mother, the happineſs of all. Think of this little 'family made, by one act of yours, completely happy. 'Think of this alternative; and ſure I am miſtaken 'in my friend, if it requires any long deliberation, 'whether he will ſink theſe wretches down for ever, 'or, by one generous, noble reſolution, raiſe them 'all from the brink of miſery and deſpair to the higheſt 'pitch of human happineſs. Add to this but one con-'ſideration more; the conſideration that it is your 'duty ſo to do—That the miſery from which you will 'relieve theſe poor people, is the miſery which you 'yourſelf have wilfully brought upon them.'

'O my dear friend,' cries Nigtingale, 'I wanted 'not your eloquence to rouſe me. I pity poor Nancy 'from my ſoul, and would willingly give any thing 'in my power, that no familiarities had ever paſſed 'between us. Nay, believe me, I had many ſtrug-'gles with my paſſion, before I could prevail with 'myſelf to write that cruel letter, which hath cauſed 'all the miſery in that unhappy family. If I had no 'inclinations to conſult but my own, I would marry 'her to-morrow morning: I would, by Heaven; but 'you will eaſily imagine how impoſſible it would be 'to prevail on my father to conſent to ſuch a match; 'beſides, he hath provided another for me; and to-'morrow, by his expreſs command, I am to wait on 'the lady.'

'I have not the honour to know your father,' ſaid Jones; 'but ſuppoſe he could be perſuaded, would 'you yourſelf conſent to the only means of preſerving 'theſe poor people?' 'As eagerly as I would purſue 'my happineſs,' anſwered Nightingale; 'for I never 'ſhall find it in any other woman.—O my dear friend, 'could you imagine what I have felt within theſe 'twelve hours for my poor girl, I am convinced ſhe 'would not engroſs all your pity. Paſſion leads me 'only to her; and, if I had any fooliſh ſcruples of ho-'nour, you have fully ſatisfied them: Could my fa-

'ther

'ther be induced to comply with my desires, nothing 'would be wanting to complete my own happiness, 'or that of my Nancy.'

'Then I am resolved to undertake it,' said Jones. 'You must not be angry with me, in whatever light 'it may be necessary to set this affair, which, you 'may depend on it, could not otherwise be long hid 'from him; for things of this nature make a quick 'progress, when once they get abroad, as this unhappily hath already. Besides, should any fatal accident follow, as, upon my soul, I am afraid will, 'unless immediately prevented, the public would ring 'of your name in a manner, which, if your father 'hath common humanity, must offend him. If you 'will therefore tell me, where I may find the old gentleman, I will not lose a moment in the business; 'which, while I pursue, you cannot do a more generous action than by paying a visit to the poor girl. 'You will find I have not exaggerated in the account 'I have given of the wretchedness of the family.'

Nightingale immediately consented to the proposal; and now having acquainted Jones with his father's lodging, and the coffee-house where he would most probably find him, he hesitated a moment, and then said, 'My dear Tom, you are going to undertake an impossibility. If you knew my father, you 'would never think of obtaining his consent——Stay, 'there is one way——Suppose you told him I was 'already married, it might be easier to reconcile him 'to the fact after it was done; and, upon my honour, I am so affected with what you have said, 'and I love my Nancy so passionately, I almost wish 'it was done, whatever might be the consequence.'

Jones greatly approved the hint, and promised to pursue it. They then separated, Nightingale to visit his Nancy, and Jones in quest of the old gentleman.

CHAP.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VIII.

What passed between Jones and old Mr Nightingale; with the arrival of a person not yet mentioned in this history.

NOTWITHSTANDING the sentiment of the Roman satirist, which denies the divinity of fortune, and the opinion of Seneca to the same purpose, Cicero, who was I believe a wiser man than either of them, expressly holds the contrary; and certain it is, there are some incidents in life so very strange and unaccountable, that it seems to require more than human skill and foresight in producing them.

Of this kind was what now happened to Jones, who found Mr Nightingale the elder in so critical a minute, that Fortune, if she was really worthy all the worship she received at Rome, could not have contrived such another. In short, the old gentleman and the father of the young lady whom he intended for his son, had been hard at it for many hours; and the latter was just now gone, and had left the former delighted with the thoughts, that he had succeeded in a long contention which had been between the two fathers of the future bride and bridegroom; in which both endeavoured to over-reach the other, and, as it not rarely happens in such cases, both had retreated fully satisfied of having obtained the victory.

This gentleman whom Mr Jones now visited, was what they call a man of the world; that is to say, a man who directs his conduct in this world as one who, being fully persuaded there is no other, is resolved to make the most of this. In his early years he had been bred to trade; but, having acquired a very good fortune, he had lately declined his business, or, to speak more properly, had changed it from dealing in goods to dealing only in money, of which he had always a plentiful fund at command, and of which he knew very well how to make a very plentiful advantage, sometimes of the necessities of private men, and sometimes of those of the public. He had indeed conversed so

Digitized by Google

entirely with money, that it may be almoſt doubted whether he imagined there was any other thing really exiſting in the world: this at leaſt may be certainly averred, that he firmly believed nothing elſe to have any real value.

The reader will, I fancy, allow, that Fortune could not have culled out a more improper perſon for Mr Jones to attack with any probability of ſucceſs; nor could the whimſical lady have directed this attack at a more unſeaſonable time.

As money then was always uppermoſt in this gentleman's thoughts, ſo, the moment he ſaw a ſtranger within his doors, it immediately occurred to his imagination, that ſuch a ſtranger was either come to bring him money, or to fetch it from him. And, according as one or other of theſe thoughts prevailed, he conceived a favourable or unfavourable idea of the perſon who approached him.

Unluckily for Jones, the latter of theſe was the aſcendant at preſent; for, as a young gentleman had viſited him the day before with a bill from his ſon for a play-debt, he apprehended, at the firſt ſight of Jones, that he was come on ſuch another errand. Jones therefore had no ſooner told him, that he was come on his ſon's account, than the old gentleman, being confirmed in his ſuſpicion, burſt forth into an exclamation, 'that he would loſe his labour.' 'Is it then 'poſſible, Sir,' anſwered Jones, 'that you can gueſs 'my buſineſs?' 'If I do gueſs it,' replied the other, 'I repeat again to you, you will loſe your labour. 'What? I ſuppoſe, you are one of thoſe ſparks who 'lead my ſon into all thoſe ſcenes of riot and de-'bauchery, which will be his deſtruction; but I ſhall 'pay no more of his bills, I promiſe you. I expect he 'will quit all ſuch company for the future. If I had 'imagined otherwiſe, I ſhould not have provided a 'wife for him; for I would be inſtrumental in the 'ruin of nobody.' 'How, Sir,' ſaid Jones, 'and was 'this lady of your providing?' 'Pray, Sir,' anſwered the old gentleman, 'how comes it to be any 'concern of yours?'——'Nay, dear Sir,' replied Jones, 'be not offended that I intereſt myſelf in what

Digitized by Google

'regards your ſon's happineſs, for whom I have ſo 'great an honour and value. It was upon that very 'account I came to wait upon you. I can't expreſs 'the ſatisfaction you have given me by what you 'ſay; for I do aſſure you, your ſon is a perſon for 'whom I have the higheſt honour.——Nay, Sir, it 'is not eaſy to expreſs the eſteem I have for you, who 'could be ſo generous, ſo good, ſo kind, ſo indul-'gent, to provide ſuch a match for your ſon; a wo-'man, who, I dare ſwear, will make him one of the 'happieſt men upon earth.'

There is ſcarce any thing which ſo happily intro-duces men to our good liking, as having conceived ſome alarm at their firſt appearance: when once thoſe apprehenſions begin to vaniſh, we ſoon forget the fears which they occaſioned, and look on ourſelves as indebted for our preſent eaſe, to thoſe very perſons who at firſt raiſed our fears.'

Thus it happened to Nightingale, who no ſooner found that Jones had no demand on him, as he ſuſpect-ed, than he began to be pleaſed with his preſence. 'Pray, good Sir,' ſaid he, 'be pleaſed to ſit down. 'I do not remember to have ever had the pleaſure of 'ſeeing you before; but, if you are a friend of my 'ſon, and have any thing to ſay concerning this 'young lady, I ſhall be glad to hear you. As to her 'making him happy, it will be his own fault if ſhe 'doth not. I have diſcharged my duty, in taking 'care of the main article. She will bring him a for-'tune capable of making any reaſonable, prudent, 'ſober man, happy.' 'Undoubtedly,' cries Jones; 'for ſhe is in herſelf a fortune; ſo beautiful, ſo gen-'teel, ſo ſweet-tempered, and ſo well educated; ſhe 'is indeed a moſt accompliſhed young lady, ſings 'admirably well, and hath a moſt delicate hand at 'the harpſicord.' 'I did not know any of theſe 'matters,' anſwered the old gentleman, 'for I never 'ſaw the lady; but I do not like her the worſe for 'what you tell me; and I am the better pleaſed with 'her father for not laying any ſtreſs on theſe qualifi-'cations in our bargain. I ſhall always think it a 'proof of his underſtanding. A ſilly fellow would

'have

Digitized by Google

'have brought in these articles as an addition to her 'fortune; but to give him his due, he never mention-'ed any such matter; though to be sure they are no 'disparagements to a woman.' 'I do assure you, 'Sir,' cries Jones, 'she hath them all in the most 'eminent degree: for my part, I own I was afraid 'you might have been a little backward, a little less 'inclined to the match; for your son told me, you 'had never seen the lady; therefore I came, Sir, in 'that case, to intreat you, to conjure you, as you 'value the happiness of your son, not to be averse to 'his match with a woman who hath not only all the 'good qualities I have mentioned, but many more.' 'If that was your business, Sir,' said the old gentle-man, 'we are both obliged to you; and you may be 'perfectly easy; for I give you my word, I was very 'well satisfied with her fortune.' 'Sir,' answered Jones, 'I honour you every moment more and more. 'To be so easily satisfied, so very moderate on that 'account, is a proof of the soundness of your under-'standing, as well as the nobleness of your mind.'— 'Not so very moderate, young gentleman, not so very 'moderate,' answered the father.——'Still more and 'more noble,' replied Jones, 'and give me leave to 'add, sensible: for sure it is little less than madness 'to consider money as the sole foundation of happi-'ness. Such a woman as this, with her little, her 'nothing of a fortune.'——'I find,' cries the old gentleman, 'you have a pretty just opinion of mo-'ney, my friend, or else you are better acquainted 'with the person of the lady, than with her circum-'stances. Why pray, what fortune do you imagine 'this lady to have?' 'What fortune?' cries Jones; 'why, too contemptible a one to be named for your 'son.' 'Well, well, well,' said the other, 'perhaps 'he might have done better.'—'That I deny,' said Jones; 'for she is one of the best of women.' 'Ay, 'ay, but in point of fortune I mean,' answered the other.—'And yet, as to that now, how much do you 'imagine your friend is to have?' 'How much,' cries Jones, 'how much!-- --Why, at the utmost, 'perhaps L. 200.' 'Do you mean to banter me,

Digitized by Google

'young gentleman?' said the father, a little angry.---'No, upon my soul,' answered Jones, 'I am in 'earnest; nay, I believe I have gone to the utmost 'farthing. If I do the lady an injury, I ask her par-'don.' 'Indeed you do,' cries the father. 'I am 'certain she hath fifty times that sum, and she shall 'produce fifty to that, before I consent that she shall 'marry my son.' 'Nay,' said Jones, 'it is too late 'to talk of consent now.——'If she had not fifty 'farthings, your son is married.' 'My son married!' answered the old gentleman with surprise. 'Nay,' said Jones, 'I thought you was unacquainted with it.' 'My son married to Miss Harris!' answered he again. 'To Miss Harris!' said Jones; 'No, Sir, to Miss 'Nancy Miller, the daughter of Mrs Miller, at whose 'house he lodged; a young lady, who, though her 'mother is reduced to let lodgings'——'Are you 'bantering, or are you in earnest?' cries the father with a most solemn voice. 'Indeed, Sir,' answered Jones, 'I scorn the character of a banterer. I came 'to you in most serious earnest, imagining, as I find 'true, that your son had never dared acquaint you 'with a match so much inferior to him in point of for-'tune, though the reputation of the lady will suffer it 'no longer to remain a secret.'

While the father stood like one struck suddenly dumb at this news, a gentleman came into the room, and saluted him by the name of brother.

But though these two were in consanguinity so nearly related, they were in their dispositions almost the opposites to each other. The brother, who now arrived, had likewise been bred to trade, in which he no sooner saw himself worth L. 6000, than he purchased a small estate with the greatest part of it, and retired into the country, where he married the daughter of an unbeneficed clergyman, a young lady, who, though she had neither beauty nor fortune, had recommended herself to his choice entirely by her good humour, of which she possessed a very large share.

With this woman he had, during twenty-five years, lived a life more resembling the model which certain poets

Digitized by Google

poets ascribe to the golden age, than any of those patterns which are furnished by the present times. By her he had four children; but none of them arrived at maturity, except only one daughter, whom, in vulgar language, he and his wife had spoiled; that is, had educated with the utmost tenderness and fondness, which she returned to such a degree, that she had actually refused a very extraordinary match with a gentleman a little turned of forty, because she could not bring herself to part with her parents.

The young lady, whom Mr Nightingale had intended for his son, was a near neighbour of his brother, and an acquaintance of his niece; and in reality it was upon the account of his projected match, that he was now come to town; not indeed to forward, but to dissuade his brother from a purpose which he conceived would inevitably ruin his nephew; for he foresaw no other event from a union with Miss Harris, notwithstanding the largeness of her fortune, as neither her person nor mind seemed to him to promise any kind of matrimonial felicity; for she was very tall, very thin, very ugly, very affected, very silly, and very ill-natured.

His brother, therefore, no sooner mentioned the marriage of his nephew with Miss Miller, than he expressed the utmost satisfaction; and, when the father had very bitterly reviled his son, and pronounced sentence of beggary upon him, the uncle began in the following manner.

'If you was a little cooler, brother, I would ask 'you whether you love your son for his sake, or for 'your own. You would answer, I suppose, and so I 'suppose you think, for his sake; and doubtless it is 'his happiness which you intended in the marriage 'you proposed for him.

'Now, brother, to prescribe rules of happiness to 'others hath always appeared to me very absurd, 'and to insist on doing this, very tyrannical. It is a 'vulgar error I know; but it is nevertheless an error. 'And, if this be absurd in other things, it is mostly 'so in the affair of marriage, the happiness of which

Digitized by Google

'depends entirely on the affection which subsists be-
'tween the parties.

'I have therefore always thought it unreasonable
'in parents to desire to chuse for their children on
'this occasion, since to force affection is an impossible
'attempt; nay so much doth love abhor force, that
'I know not whether through an unfortunate, but
'ncurable perverseness in our natures, it may not be
'even impatient of persuasion.

'It is however true that, though a parent will
'not, I think, wisely prescribe, he ought to be con-
'sulted on this occasion, and in strictness perhaps
'should at least have a negative voice. My nephew
'therefore, I own, in marrying without asking your
'advice, hath been guilty of a fault. But honestly
'speaking, brother, have you not a little promoted
'this fault? Have not your frequent declarations on
'this subject given him a moral certainty of your re-
'fusal, where there was any deficiency in point of
'fortune? nay, doth not your present anger arise
'solely from that deficiency? And, if he hath failed
'in his duty here, did you not as much exceed that
'authority, when you absolutely bargained with him
'for a woman without his knowledge, whom you
'yourself never saw, and whom, if you had seen and
'known as well as I, it must have been madness in
'you to have ever thought of bringing her into your
'family.

'Still I own my nephew in a fault; but surely it is
'not an unpardonable fault. He hath acted, indeed,
'without your consent, in a matter in which he ought
'to have asked it; but it is in a matter in which his
'interest is principally concerned; you yourself must
'and will acknowledge, that you consulted his in-
'terest only; and, if he unfortunately differed from
'you, and hath been mistaken in his notion of hap-
'piness, will you, brother, if you love your son,
'carry him still wider from the point? will you in-
'crease the ill-consequences of his simple choice?
'will you endeavour to make an event certain misery
'to him, which may accidententally prove so? in a
'word, brother, because he hath put it out of your

'power

Digitized by Google

'power to make his circumſtances as affluent as you 'would, will you diſtreſs them as much as you can?'

By the force of the true catholic faith, St Antony won upon the fiſhes. Orpheus and Amphion went a little farther, and by the charms of muſic enchanted things merely inamimate. Wonderful both! but neither hiſtory nor fable have ever yet ventured to record an inſtance of any one, who by force of argument and reaſon hath triumphed over habitual avarice.

Mr Nightingale, the father, inſtead of attempting to anſwer his brother, contented himſelf with only obſerving, that they had always differed in their ſentiments concerning the education of their children. 'I wiſh,' ſaid he, 'brother, you would have confined 'your care to your own daughter, and never have 'troubled yourſelf with my ſon, who hath, I believe, 'as little profited by your precepts, as by your exam-'ple:' For young Nightingale was his uncle's godſon, and had lived more with him than with his father: ſo that the uncle had often declared, he loved his nephew almoſt equally with his own child.

Jones fell into raptures with this good gentleman; and, when after much perſuaſion they found the father grew ſtill more and more irritated inſtead of appeaſed, Jones conducted the uncle to his nephew at the houſe of Mr Miller.

CHAP. IX.

Containing ſtrange matters.

AT his return to his lodgings, Jones found the ſituation of affairs greatly altered from what they had been in at his departure. The mother, the two daughters, and young Mr Nightingale, were now ſat down to ſupper together, when the uncle was, at his own deſire, introduced without any ceremony into the company, to all of whom he was well known; for he had ſeveral times viſited his nephew at that houſe.

The old gentleman immediately walked up to Miſs Nancy, ſaluted and wiſhed her joy, as he did afterwards the nephew and the other ſiſter; and laſty, he paid the proper compliments to his nephew, with the ſame good humour and courteſy, as if his nephew had married

Digitized by Google

married his equal or ſuperior in fortune, with all the previous requiſites firſt performed.

Miſs Nancy and her ſuppoſed huſband both turned pale, and looked rather fooliſh than otherwiſe upon the occaſion; but Mrs Miller took the firſt opportunity of withdrawing; and having ſent for Jones into the dining-room, ſhe threw herſelf at his feet, and in a moſt paſſionate flood of tears called him her good angel, and the preſerver of her poor little family, with many other reſpectful and endearing appellations, and made him every acknowledgment which the higheſt benefit can extract from the moſt grateful heart.

After the firſt guſt of her paſſion was a little over, which ſhe declared, if ſhe had not vented, would have burſt her, ſhe proceeded to inform Mr Jones, that all matters were ſettled between Mr Nightingale and her daughter, and that they were to be married the next morning: at which Mr Jones having expreſſed much pleaſure, the poor woman fell again into a fit of joy and thankſgiving, which he at length with difficulty ſilenced, and prevailed on her to return with him back to the company, whom they found in the ſame good humour in which they had left them.

This little ſociety now paſſed two or three very agreeable hours together, in which the uncle, who was a very great lover of his bottle, had ſo well plyed his nephew, that this latter, though not drunk, began to be ſomewhat fluſtered; and now Mr Nightingale, taking the old gentleman with him up ſtairs into the apartment he had lately occupied, unboſomed himſelf as follows:

'As you have been always the beſt and kindeſt of 'uncles to me, and as you have ſhewn ſuch unparal-'lelled goodneſs in forgiving this match, which to 'be ſure may be thought a little improvident; I 'ſhould never forgive myſelf if I attempted to de-'ceive you in any thing.' He then confeſſed the truth, and opened the whole affair.

'How, Jack!' ſaid the old gentleman, 'and are 'you really then not married to this young woman?' 'No, upon my honour,' anſwered Nightingale, 'I 'have told you the ſimple truth.' 'My dear boy,' cries the uncle, kiſſing him, 'I am heartily glad to 'hear

Digitized by Google

'hear it. I never was better pleaſed in my life. If 'you had been married, I ſhould have aſſiſted you, 'as much as was in my power, to have made the 'beſt of a bad matter; but there is a great difference 'between conſidering a thing which is already done 'and irrecoverable, and that which is yet to do. 'Let your reaſon have fair play, Jack, and you will 'ſee this match in ſo fooliſh and prepoſterous a light, 'that there will be no need of any diſſuaſive argu-'ments.' 'How, Sir!' replies young Nightingale, 'is there this difference between having already done 'an act, and being in honour engaged to do it?' 'Pugh,' ſaid the uncle, 'honour is a creature of the 'world's making, and the world hath the power of 'a Creator over it, and may govern and direct it as 'they pleaſe. Now you well know how trivial theſe 'breaches of contract are thought; even the groſſeſt 'make but the wonder and converſation of a day. 'Is there a man who afterwards will be more back-'ward in giving you his ſiſter or daughter? or is 'there any ſiſter or daughter who would be more 'backward to receive you? Honour is not concerned 'in theſe engagements.' 'Pardon me, dear Sir,' cries Nightingale; 'I can never think ſo; and not 'only honour, but conſcience and humanity are con-'cerned. I am well ſatisfied, that, was I now to diſ-'appoint the young creature, her death would be 'the conſequence, and I ſhould look upon myſelf as 'her murderer, nay, as her murderer by the cruelleſt 'of all methods, by breaking her heart.' 'Break 'her heart, indeed! no, no, Jack,' cried the uncle, 'the hearts of women are not ſo ſoon broke; they 'are tough, boy, they are tough.' 'But, Sir,' anſwered Nightingale, 'my own affections are engaged, 'and I never could be happy with any other woman. 'How often have I heard you ſay, that children 'ſhould be always ſuffered to chuſe for themſelves, 'and that you would let my couſin Harriet do ſo!' 'Why ay,' replied the old gentleman, 'ſo I would 'have them; but then I would have them chuſe 'wiſely.—Indeed, Jack, you muſt, and ſhall leave 'this girl.'——'Indeed, uncle,' cries the other, 'I

'muſt

'must and will have her.' 'You will, young gentleman?' said the uncle; 'I did not expect such a 'word from you. I should not wonder if you had 'used such language to your father, who hath always 'treated you like a dog, and kept you at the distance 'which a tyrant preserves over his subjects; but I, 'who have lived with you upon an equal footing, 'might surely expect better usage: but I know how 'to account for it all! it is all owing to your pre'posterous education, in which I have had too little 'share. There is my daughter now, whom I have 'brought up as my friend, never doth any thing 'without my advice, nor ever refuses to take it when 'I give it her.' 'You have never yet given her ad'vice in an affair of this kind,' said Nightingale, 'for I am greatly mistaken in my cousin, if she would 'be very ready to obey even your most positive com'mands in abandoning her inclinations.' 'Don't abuse 'my girl,' answered the old gentleman with some emotion; 'don't abuse my Harriet. I have brought 'her up to have no inclinations contrary to my own. 'By suffering her to do whatever she pleases, I have 'inured her to a habit of being pleased to do what'ever I like.' 'Pardon me, Sir,' said Nightingale, 'I have not the least design to reflect on my cousin, 'for whom I have the greatest esteem; and indeed 'I am convinced you will never put her to so severe 'a trial, or lay such hard commands on her as you 'would do on me.—'But, dear Sir, let us return to 'the company; for they will begin to be uneasy at 'our long absence. I must beg one favour of my 'dear uncle, which is that he would not say any thing 'to shock the poor girl or her mother.' 'O you need 'not fear me,' answered he, 'I understand myself 'too well to affront women; so I will readily grant 'you that favour: and in return I must expect ano'ther of you.' 'There are but few of your com'mands, Sir,' said Nightingale, 'which I shall not 'very cheerfully obey.' 'Nay, Sir, I ask nothing,' said the uncle, 'but the honour of your company 'home to my lodging, that I may reason the case 'a little more fully with you: for I would, if possible

'have

Digitized by Google

'have the satisfaction of preserving my family, notwithstanding the headstrong folly of my brother, who, in his own opinion, is the wisest man in the world.'

Nightingale, who well knew his uncle to be as headstrong as his father, submitted to attend him home, and then they both returned back into the room, where the old gentleman promised to carry himself with the same decorum which he had before maintained.

CHAP. X.

A short chapter which concludes the book.

THE long absence of the uncle and nephew had occasioned some disquiet in the minds of all whom they had left behind them; and the more, as during the preceding dialogue, the uncle had more than once elevated his voice, so as to be heard down stairs: which, though they could not distinguish what he said, had caused some evil foreboding in Nancy and her mother, and indeed even in Jones himself.

When the good company therefore again assembled, there was a visible alteration in all their faces; and the good humour which at their last meeting universally shone forth in every countenance, was now changed into a much less agreeable aspect. It was a change indeed common enough to the weather in this climate from sunshine to clouds, from June to December.

This alteration was not however greatly remarked by any present; for as they were all now endeavouring to conceal their own thoughts, and to act a part, they became all too busily engaged in the scene to be spectators of it. Thus neither the uncle nor nephew saw any symptoms of suspicion in the mother or daughter: nor did the mother or daughter remark the overacted complaisance of the old man, nor the counterfeit satisfaction which grinned in the features of the young one.

Something like this, I believe, frequently happens, where the whole attention of two friends being engaged in the part which each is to act, in order to impose on the other, neither sees nor suspects the art

Digitized by Google

practiſed againſt himſelf; and thus the thruſt of both (to borrow no improper metaphor on the occaſion) alike takes place.

From the ſame reaſon it is no unuſual thing for both parties to be over-reached in a bargain, tho' the one muſt be always the greater loſer; as was he who ſold a blind horſe, and received a bad note in payment.

Our company in about half an hour broke up, and the uncle carried off his nephew; but not before the latter had aſſured Miſs Nancy, in a whiſper, that he would attend her early in the morning, and fulfil all his engagements.

Jones, who was the leaſt concerned in this ſcene, ſaw the moſt. He did indeed ſuſpect the very fact; for beſides obſerving the great alteration in the behaviour of the uncle, the diſtance he aſſumed, and his over-ſtrained civility to Miſs Nancy; the carrying off a bridegroom from his bride at that time of night, was ſo extraordinary a proceeding, that it could be accounted for, only by imagining that young Nightingale had revealed the whole truth, which the apparent openneſs of his temper, and his being fluſtered with liquor, made too probable.

While he was reaſoning with himſelf whether he ſhould acquaint theſe poor people with his ſuſpicion, the maid of the houſe informed him, that a gentlewoman deſired to ſpeak to him.——He went immediately out, and taking the candle from the maid, uſhered his viſitant up ſtairs, who in the perſon of Mrs Honour, acquainted him with ſuch dreadful news concerning his Sophia, that he immediately loſt all conſideration for every other perſon; and his whole ſtock of compaſſion was entirely ſwallowed up in reflections on his own miſery, and on that of his unfortunate angel.

What this dreadful matter was, the reader will be informed, after we have firſt related the many preceding ſteps which produced it, and thoſe will be the ſubject of the following book.

END OF THE EIGHTH VOLUME.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

05 E 439.
Vol. 8.

Digitized by Google